

Cornell University
Library

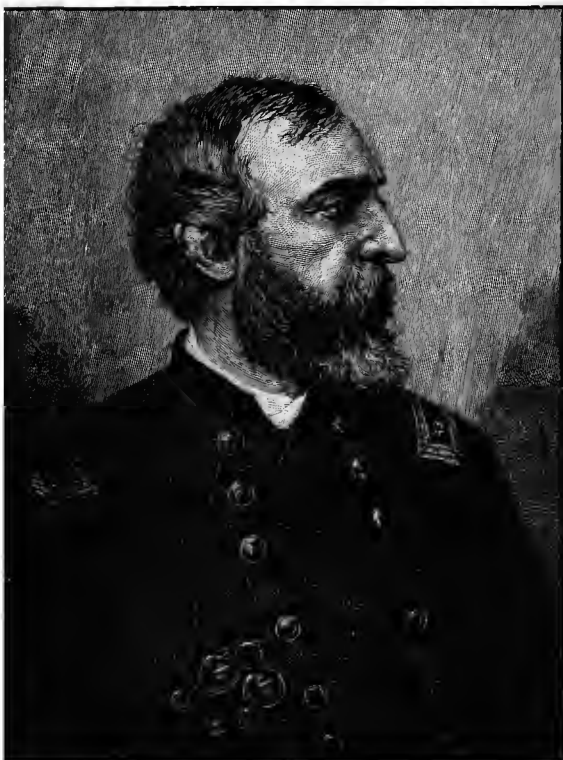
The original of this book is in
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in
the United States on the use of the text.

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 092 906 746



MAJOR-GENERAL GEORGE GORDON MEADE, U. S. A.,
AUGUST 18, 1864.

SLAVERY AND FOUR YEARS OF WAR

A POLITICAL HISTORY OF SLAVERY
IN THE UNITED STATES

TOGETHER WITH A NARRATIVE OF THE CAMPAIGNS
AND BATTLES OF THE CIVIL WAR IN WHICH
THE AUTHOR TOOK PART: 1861-1865

BY

JOSEPH WARREN KEIFER

BREVET MAJOR-GENERAL OF VOLUNTEERS; EX-SPEAKER OF THE HOUSE OF
REPRESENTATIVES, U. S. A.; AND MAJOR-GENERAL OF
VOLUNTEERS, SPANISH WAR

ILLUSTRATED

VOLUME II.

1863-1865

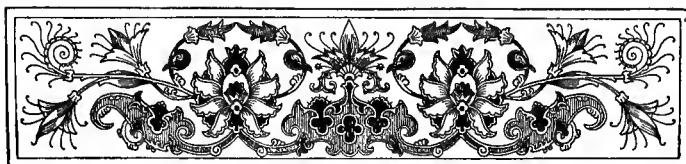
G. P. Putnam's Sons
New York and London
The Knickerbocker Press

1900



COPYRIGHT, 1900
BY
JOSEPH WARREN KEIFER

The Knickerbocker Press, New York



CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

	PAGE
GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON ANTIETAM, FREDERICKSBURG, AND CHANCELLORSVILLE—BATTLES AT WINCHESTER UNDER GENERAL MILROY—HIS DEFEAT AND RETREAT TO HAR- PER'S FERRY—WITH INCIDENTS	22

CHAPTER II

INVASION OF PENNSYLVANIA—CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG—LEE'S RETREAT ACROSS THE POTOMAC, AND LOSSES ON BOTH SIDES	22
---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----

CHAPTER III

NEW YORK RIOTS, 1863—PURSUIT OF LEE'S ARMY TO THE RAPPAHANNOCK—ACTION OF WAPPING HEIGHTS, AND SKIRMISHES—WESTERN TROOPS SENT TO NEW YORK TO ENFORCE THE DRAFT—THEIR RETURN—INCIDENTS, ETC.	36
-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----

CHAPTER IV

ADVANCE OF LEE'S ARMY, OCTOBER, 1863, AND RETREAT OF ARMY OF THE POTOMAC TO CENTREVILLE—BATTLE OF BRISTOE STATION—ADVANCE OF THE UNION ARMY, NOVEMBER, 1863—ASSAULT AND CAPTURE OF RAPPA- HANNOCK STATION, AND FORCING THE FORDS—AFFAIR NEAR BRANDY STATION, AND RETREAT OF CONFEDERATE ARMY BEHIND THE RAPIDAN—INCIDENTS, ETC.	48
-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----

CHAPTER V

	PAGE
MINE RUN CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF ORANGE GROVE, NOVEMBER, 1863—WINTER CANTONMENT (1863-4) OF ARMY OF THE POTOMAC AT CULPEPPER COURT- <small>E</small> 3, AND ITS REORGANIZATION—GRANT ASSIGNED TO COMMAND THE UNION ARMIES, AND PREPARATION FOR AGGRESSIVE WAR	58

CHAPTER VI

PLANS OF CAMPAIGNS, UNION AND CONFEDERATE — CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF THE WILDERNESS, MAY, 1864 — AUTHOR WOUNDED, AND PERSONAL MATTERS—MOVEMENTS OF THE ARMY TO THE JAMES RIVER, WITH MENTION OF BATTLES OF SPOTSYLVANIA, COLD HARBOR, AND OTHER ENGAGEMENTS, AND STATEMENT OF LOSSES AND CAPTURES . . .	74
-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----

CHAPTER VII

CAMPAIGN SOUTH OF JAMES RIVER AND PETERSBURG—HUNTER'S RAID—BATTLE OF MONOCACY—EARLY'S ADVANCE ON WASHINGTON (1864)—SHERIDAN'S MOVEMENTS IN SHENANDOAH VALLEY, AND OTHER EVENTS . . .	94
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----

CHAPTER VIII

PERSONAL MENTION OF GENERALS SHERIDAN, WRIGHT, AND RICKETTS, AND MRS. RICKETTS; ALSO GENERALS CROOK AND HAYES—BATTLE OF OPEQUON, UNDER SHERIDAN, SEPTEMBER, 1864, AND INCIDENTS . . .	104
---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER IX

BATTLE OF FISHER'S HILL — PURSUIT OF EARLY — DEVASTATION OF THE SHENANDOAH VALLEY (1864) — CAVALRY BATTLE AT TOM'S BROOK, AND MINOR EVENTS . . .	118
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER X

BATTLE OF CEDAR CREEK, OCTOBER 19, 1864, WITH COMMENTS THEREON—ALSO PERSONAL MENTION AND INCIDENTS	128
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

Contents

v

CHAPTER XI

	PAGE
PEACE NEGOTIATIONS—LEE'S SUGGESTION TO JEFFERSON DAVIS, 1862—FERNANDO WOOD'S CORRESPONDENCE WITH MR. LINCOLN, 1862—MR. STEPHENS AT FORTRESS MONROE, 1863—HORACE GREELEY, NIAGARA FALLS CONFERENCE, 1864—JACQUESS-GILMORE'S VISITS TO RICHMOND, 1863-4—F. P. BLAIR, SEN., CONFERENCES WITH MR. DAVIS, 1865—HAMPTON ROADS CONFERENCE, MR. LINCOLN AND SEWARD AND STEPHENS AND OTHERS, 1865—ORD-LONGSTREET, LEE AND GRANT, CORRESPONDENCE, 1865; AND LEW WALLACE AND GENERAL SLAUGHTER, POINT ISABEL CONFERENCE, 1865	158

CHAPTER XII

SIEGE OF RICHMOND AND PETERSBURG—CAPTURE AND RECAPTURE OF FORT STEDMAN, AND CAPTURE OF PART OF ENEMY'S FIRST LINE IN FRONT OF PETERSBURG BY KEIFER'S BRIGADE, MARCH 25, 1865—BATTLE OF FIVE FORKS, APRIL 1ST—ASSAULT AND TAKING OF CONFEDERATE WORKS ON THE UNION LEFT, APRIL 2D—SURRENDER OF RICHMOND AND PETERSBURG, APRIL 3D—PRESIDENT LINCOLN'S VISIT TO PETERSBURG AND RICHMOND, AND HIS DEATH	184
---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XIII

BATTLE OF SAILOR'S CREEK, APRIL 6TH—CAPITULATION OF GENERAL ROBERT E. LEE'S ARMY AT APPOMATTOX COURT-HOUSE, APRIL 9, 1865—SURRENDER OF OTHER CONFEDERATE ARMIES, AND END OF THE WAR OF THE REBELLION	201
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

APPENDICES

A

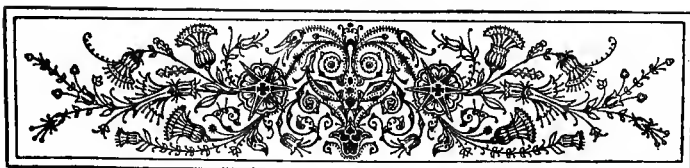
GENERAL KEIFER

Ancestry and Life before the Civil War	235
Public Services in Civil Life	255
Service in Spanish War	286

Contents

<i>B</i>	
Mention of Officers of the 110th Ohio Volunteer Infantry .	PAGE 300
<i>C</i>	
Farewell Order of General Keifer in Civil War	302
Casualties in Keifer's Brigade	303
<i>D</i>	
Correspondence between Generals Wright and Keifer Re- lating to Battle of Sailor's Creek	304
<i>E</i>	
Letter of General Keifer to General Corbin on Cuba	307
<i>F</i>	
List of Officers who Served on General Keifer's Staff in Spanish War	313
<i>G</i>	
Farewell Order of General Keifer in Spanish War	315





ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
MAJOR-GENERAL GEORGE GORDON MEADE, U.S.A., AUGUST 18, 1864	6
<i>Frontispiece</i>	
BRIGADIER-GENERAL WESLEY MERRITT	6
[From a photograph taken 1864.]	
MAJOR-GENERAL ROBERT C. SCHENCK	6
[From a photograph taken 1863.]	
MAJOR-GENERAL FRANK WHEATON	12
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	
BREVET BRIGADIER-GENERAL J. WARREN KEIFER	12
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	
MAJOR-GENERAL WILLIAM H. FRENCH	22
[From a photograph taken 1863.]	
MAP OF ORANGE GROVE BATTLE-FIELD, MINE RUN, VA.	60
[November 27, 1863.]	
BREVET BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN W. HORN, SIXTH MARYLAND VOLUNTEERS	64
[From a photograph taken 1864.]	
BREVET BRIGADIER-GENERAL M. R. McCLENNAN, 138TH PENN- SYLVANIA VOLUNTEERS	64
[From a photograph taken 1864.]	
BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOSEPH B. CARR	70
[From a photograph taken since the war.]	
COLONEL JAMES W. SNYDER, NINTH NEW YORK HEAVY AR- TILLERY	70
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	

	PAGE
MAJOR WM. S. M ^C ELWAIN, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS . . .	84
[From a photograph taken 1863.]	
BREVET LIEUTENANT-COLONEL AARON SPANGLER, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS	84
[From a photograph taken 1863.]	
MAJOR-GENERAL HORATIO G. WRIGHT	90
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	
MAJOR-GENERAL JAMES B. RICKETTS	100
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	
FANNY RICKETTS	100
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	
CAPTAIN WM. A. HATHAWAY, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS . .	102
[From a photograph taken 1863.]	
BREVET MAJOR JONATHAN T. RORER, 138TH PENNSYLVANIA VOLUNTEERS	102
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	
GENERAL PHILIP H. SHERIDAN, U.S.A.	104
[From a photograph taken 1885.]	
BATTLE-FIELD OF OPEQUON, VA.	108
[September 19, 1864. From the official map, 1873.]	
BREVET MAJOR-GENERAL RUTHERFORD B. HAYES	114
[From a photograph taken from a painting.]	
BREVET COLONEL MOSES M. GRANGER, 122D OHIO VOLUNTEERS.	116
[From a photograph taken 1864.]	
LIEUTENANT-COLONEL AARON W. EBRIGHT, 126TH OHIO VOL- UNTEERS	116
[From a photograph taken 1864.]	
BATTLE-FIELD OF FISHER'S HILL, VA.	118
[September, 1864. From the official map.]	
MAJOR-GENERAL GEORGE CROOK, U.S.A.	122
[From a photograph taken 1888.]	
MAJOR-GENERAL GEO. W. GETTY	128
[From a photograph taken 1864.]	

Illustrations

ix

	PAGE
BRIGADIER-GENERAL WM. H. SEWARD	128
[From a photograph taken 1864.]	
MAP OF CEDAR CREEK BATTLE-FIELD, VA.	132
[October 19, 1864.]	
CAPTAIN J. C. ULLERY, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS	136
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	
BREVET COLONEL OTHO H. BINKLEY, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.	136
[From a photograph taken 1863.]	
PETERSBURG, VA., FORTIFICATIONS, 1865	186
BREVET COLONEL CLIFTON K. PRENTISS, SIXTH MARYLAND VOLUNTEERS	192
[From a photograph taken 1865.]	
LIEUTENANT-COLONEL WM. N. FOSTER, 110TH OHIO VOLUN- TEERS	192
[From a photograph taken 1863.]	
JOHN W. WARRINGTON, PRIVATE, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS	200
[From a photograph taken 1899.]	
JOHN B. ELAM, PRIVATE, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS	200
[From a photograph taken 1899.]	
BREVET MAJOR-GENERAL J. WARREN KEIFER AND STAFF, 1865, . THIRD DIVISION, SIXTH ARMY CORPS	208
J. WARREN KEIFER, MAJOR-GENERAL OF VOLUNTEERS	286
[From a photograph taken 1898.]	
PRESIDENT McKINLEY AND MAJOR-GENERALS KEIFER, SHAFTER, LAWTON, AND WHEELER	292
[From a photograph taken on ship-deck at Savannah, Ga., De- cember 17, 1898.]	





SLAVERY AND FOUR YEARS OF WAR

CHAPTER I

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON ANTIETAM, FREDERICKSBURG,
AND CHANCELLORSVILLE—BATTLES AT WINCHESTER
UNDER GENERAL MILROY—HIS DEFEAT AND RETREAT
TO HARPER'S FERRY—WITH INCIDENTS

THE Confederate Army, under Lee, invaded Maryland in 1862, and after the drawn battle of Antietam, September 17th, it retired through the Shenandoah Valley and the mountain gaps behind the Rappahannock.

McClellan had failed to take Richmond, and although his army had fought hard battles on the Chickahominy and at Malvern Hill, it won no victories that bore fruits save in lists of dead and wounded, and his army, on being withdrawn from the James in August, 1862, did not effectively sustain General John Pope at the Second Bull Run. On being given command of the combined Union forces at and about Washington, McClellan again had a large and splendidly equipped army under him. He at first exhibited some energy in moving it into Maryland after Lee, but by his extreme caution and delays suffered Harper's Ferry to be taken (September 15, 1862), with 10,000 men and an immense supply of arms and stores, and finally, when fortune smiled on his army at Antietam, he allowed it to lay quietly on its arms a whole day and long

enough to enable Lee to retreat across the Potomac, where he was permitted to leisurely withdraw, practically unmolested, southward. The critical student of the battle of Antietam will learn of much desperate fighting on both sides, with no clearly defined general plan of conducting the battle on either side. As Lee fought on the defensive, he could content himself with conforming the movements of his forces to those of the Union Army. Stonewall Jackson, after maintaining a short, spirited battle against Hooker's corps, withdrew his corps from the engagement at seven o'clock in the morning and did not return to the field until 4 P.M.¹

Generally the Union Army was fought by divisions, and seldom more than two were engaged at the same time, often only one. In this way some of the divisions, for want of proper supports, were cut to pieces, and others were not engaged at all. Acting on interior lines, Lee was enabled to concentrate against the Union attacks and finally to repulse them. Notwithstanding this mode of conducting the battle, the Confederate Army was roughly handled and lost heavily.

General Ambrose E. Burnside late in the day succeeded in crossing Antietam Creek at the Stone Bridge and planting himself well on the Confederate right flank. McClellan also had, at night, many fresh troops ready and eager for the next day's battle. A considerable part of his army had not been engaged, and reinforcements came. The two armies confronted each other all day on the 18th, being partly engaged in burying the dead, as though a truce existed, and at night Lee withdrew his army into Virginia.²

Indecisive as this battle was, it is ever to be memorable as, on its issue, President Lincoln kept a promise to "himself and his Maker."³ On September 22, 1862, five days later, he issued a preliminary proclamation announcing his purpose to promulgate, January 1, 1863, a war measure, declaring free the slaves in all States or parts of States remaining at that

¹ *Manassas to Appomattox* (Longstreet), pp. 242, 257, 401.

² *Ibid.*, 263.

³ *Abraham Lincoln* (Nicolay and Hay), vol. vi., p. 159.

time in rebellion. He had long before the battle of Antietam contemplated taking this action, and hence had prepared this proclamation, and promised himself to issue it on the Union Army winning a victory. The driving of Lee's army out of Maryland, and thus relieving Washington from further menace, was accepted by him as a fulfilment of the self-imposed condition.

McClellan was relieved of the command of the Army of the Potomac while at Orleans, Virginia, November 7, 1862, and Burnside became his successor. McClellan never again held any command.

Burnside moved the army to Falmouth, Virginia, opposite Fredericksburg, on the Rappahannock. Though only urged to prepare for the offensive, he precipitated an attack on the Confederate Army, then strongly intrenched on the heights of Fredericksburg. He suffered a disastrous repulse (December 14, 1862), and next day withdrew his army across the Rappahannock to his camps.

Burnside was relieved of the command of the Army of the Potomac January 25, 1863, and Major-General Joseph Hooker succeeded him.

The battle of Chancellorsville was fought, May 1 to 5, 1863, in the Wilderness country, south of the Rapidan, and resulted in the defeat of the Union Army and its falling back to its former position at Falmouth.

The defeats at Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville led to a general belief that another invasion of the North would be made by Lee's army. Such an invasion involved Milroy's command at Winchester, then in the Middle Department, commanded by Major-General Robert C. Schenck, whose headquarters were at Baltimore.

This much in retrospect seems necessary to give a better understanding of the events soon to be mentioned.

Soon after Chancellorsville, the Confederate forces in the upper Shenandoah Valley became more active, and frequent indecisive conflicts between them and our scouting parties took place. Our regular scouts, who generally travelled by night in

Confederate dress, brought in rumors almost every day of an intended attack on Winchester by troops from Lee's army. In May I was given special charge of these scouts. So uniform were their reports as to the proposed attacks that I gave credence to them, and advised Milroy that unless he was soon to be largely reinforced it would be well to retire from his exposed position. He refused to believe that anything more than a cavalry raid into the Valley or against him would be made, and he felt strong enough to defeat it. He argued that Lee would not dare to detach any part of his infantry force from the front of the Army of the Potomac. But in addition to the reports referred to, I learned as early as the 1st of June, through correspondence secretly brought within our lines from an officer of Lee's army to which I gained access, that Lee contemplated a grand movement North, and that his army would reach Winchester on June 10, 1863. The Secessionists of Winchester generally believed we would be attacked on that day. I gave this information to Milroy, but he still persisted in believing the whole story was gotten up to cause him to disgracefully abandon the Valley.¹

The 10th of June came, and the Confederate Army failed to appear. This confirmed Milroy in his disbelief in a contemplated attack with a strong force, and my credulity was ridiculed. As early, however, as June 8th, Milroy wired Schenck at Baltimore that he had information that Lee had mounted an infantry division to join Stuart's cavalry at Culpepper; that the cavalry force there was "probably more than twice 12,000," and that there was "doubtless a mighty raid on foot."² Colonel Donn Piatt, Schenck's chief of staff, visited and inspected the post at Winchester on the 10th and 11th, and when he reached Martinsburg, Va., on his return on the 11th, he dispatched Milroy to immediately take steps to remove his command to Harper's Ferry, leaving at Winchester

¹ In letters, dated in May, 1863, to Col. Wm. S. Furay (then a correspondent (Y. S.) of the *Cincinnati Gazette* with Rosecrans' army in Tennessee), I detailed the general plan of Lee's advance northward, and gave the date when the movement would commence.

² *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part III., p. 36.

only a lookout which could readily fall back to Harper's Ferry.¹ This order was sent in the light of what Piatt deemed the proper construction of a dispatch of that date from Halleck to Schenck, and from the latter to him. Milroy at once wired Schenck of the receipt of the Piatt dispatch, saying:

"I have sufficient force to hold the place safely, but if any force is withdrawn the balance will be captured in twenty-four hours. All should go, or none."

This brought, June 12th, a dispatch from Schenck to Milroy in this language:

"Lt.-Col. Piatt has . . . misunderstood me, and somewhat exceeded his instructions. You will make all the required preparations for withdrawing, but hold your position in the meantime."

On the 12th Milroy reported skirmishes with Confederate cavalry on the Front Royal and Strasburg roads, adding:

"I am perfectly certain of my ability to hold this place. Nothing but cavalry appears yet. Let them come."

As late as the 13th, Halleck telegraphed Schenck, in answer to an inquiry, that he had no reliable information as to rebel infantry being in the Valley, and the same day Schenck wired his chief of staff at Harper's Ferry to "Instruct General Milroy to use great caution, risking nothing unnecessarily, and be prepared for falling back in good order if overmatched."

Milroy advised Schenck of fighting at Winchester on the 13th, and from General Kelly, on the same day, Schenck learned for the first time that General Lee was on his way to drive Milroy out of Winchester. Schenck at once *attempted* to telegraph Milroy to "fall back, fighting, if necessary, and to keep the road to Harper's Ferry."

Halleck wired Schenck on the 14th: "It is reported that

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., p. 125. Piatt, June 11th, wired Schenck from Winchester, after inspecting the place, that Milroy "can whip anything the rebels can fetch here."—*Ibid.*, p. 161.

Longstreet and Ewell's corps have passed through Culpepper to Sperryville, towards the Valley.'"¹

This was the first intimation that came from Halleck or Hooker that Lee's army contemplated moving in the direction of the Valley, or that there was any apprehension that it might escape the vigilance of the Army of the Potomac, supposed to be confronting it or at least watching its movements. Another dispatch came on the 14th to General Schenck as follows:

"Get Milroy from Winchester to Harper's Ferry if possible. He will be 'gobbled up' if he remains, if he is not already past salvation.

"A. LINCOLN,
"President United States.""

It remains to narrate what did take place at Winchester, and then, in the full light of the facts, to decide upon whom censure or credit should fall.

When, on the 14th, Halleck announced that Longstreet and Ewell's corps "have passed through Culpepper to Sperryville towards the Valley," we had been fighting Ewell's corps, or parts of it, for two days at Winchester, three days' march from Culpepper, and other portions of Lee's army had reached the Valley and Martinsburg. The report that Winchester was to have been attacked on June 10th was true, but the advance of the Union cavalry south of the Rappahannock, and its battle on the 9th at Brandy Station, north of Culpepper Court House (Lee's then headquarters), so disorganized the Confederate cavalry as to cause a delay in the movement of Ewell's corps into the Valley, then proceeding *via* Front Royal.

On the night of the 12th of June my scouts found it impossible to advance more than four or five miles on the Front Royal, Strasburg, and Cedar Creek roads before encountering Confederate cavalry pickets. This indicated, as was the fact, that close behind them were heavy bodies of infantry which it was desired to closely mask. At midnight I had an interview

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., pp. 130-7, 159-81.

² *Ibid.*, p. 167 (186).



BRIGADIER-GENERAL WESLEY MERRITT.

(From a photograph, 1864.)



MAJOR-GENERAL ROBERT C. SCHENCK.

(From a photograph, 1863.)

at my own solicitation with Milroy at his headquarters, when the whole subject of our situation was discussed. I was not advised of the orders or dispatches he had received, nor of his dispatches to Schenck expressing confidence in his ability to hold Winchester. Milroy persisted in the notion that only cavalry were before him, and he was anxious to fight them and especially averse to retreating under circumstances that might subject him to the charge of cowardice. He also sincerely desired to hold the Valley and protect the Union residents. He reminded me fiercely that I had believed in the attack coming on the 10th, and it had turned out I was mistaken. I could make no answer to this save to suggest that the cavalry battle at Brandy Station had operated to postpone the attack.

During my acquaintance with Milroy he had evinced confidence in and friendship for me; now he manifested much annoyance over my persistence in urging him to order a retreat at once, and finally he dismissed me rather summarily.¹

Early the next morning I received an order to report with my regiment near Union Mills on the Strasburg pike, and to move upon the Cedar Creek road, located west of and extending, in general, parallel with the Strasburg pike. It was soon ascertained that the enemy had massed a heavy force upon that road about three miles south of Winchester. A section of Carlin's battery under Lieutenant Theaker reported to me, and with it my regiment moved about a mile southward, keeping well on the ridge between the pike and the Cedar Creek road. The enemy kept under cover, and not having orders to bring on an engagement I retired the troops to the junction of the two roads. About 2 P.M. I was informed that Milroy desired me to make a strong reconnoissance and develop the strength and position of the enemy. To strengthen my forces,

¹ A few days before this event I peremptorily ordered all officers' wives and citizens visiting in my command to go North, but the ladies held an indignation meeting and waited on General Milroy, with the request that he countermand my order, which he did, at the same time saying something about my being too apprehensive of danger. I had the pleasure of meeting and greeting these same ladies in Washington, July 5th, on their arrival from Winchester *via* Staunton, Richmond, *Castle-Thunder*, the James and Potomac Rivers.

the 12th Pennsylvania Cavalry, Lieutenant-Colonel Moss, and a squadron of the 13th Pennsylvania Cavalry, were assigned to me. I moved forward promptly with the 12th on the left on the plain, the infantry and artillery in the centre covering the Strasburg pike, and the squadron on the ridge to my right, which extended parallel with the pike. We proceeded in this order about a mile, when my skirmishers became closely engaged with those of the enemy. It was soon apparent to me that the enemy extended along a wide front, his advance being only a thin cover. But as my orders were to develop the enemy, I brought my whole command into action, drove in his advance line and with the artillery shelled the woods behind this line. We suffered some loss, but pressed forward until the enemy fell back to a woods on the left of Kearnstown. My artillery opened with canister, and for a few moments our front seemed to be cleared. But my flankers now reported the enemy turning my right with at least a brigade of infantry. I therefore withdrew slowly and in good order, embracing every possible opportunity to halt and open fire. Reinforcements were reported on the way. I directed that they should, on their arrival, be posted on the high ground to the right of the pike in front of the bridge at Union (or Barton's) Mills to cover our retreat, which must be made with the artillery and infantry over this bridge.

Colonel Moss, not believing he could cross the tail-race with its embankments and the stream below the Mills, commenced moving his cavalry towards the bridge. I turned him back with imperative orders to cover the left flank as long as necessary or possible, then find a crossing below the Mills. Unfortunately, when the artillery reached the bridge in readiness to cross, it was found occupied by the 123d Ohio, Colonel W. T. Wilson commanding, marching by the flank to my relief under the guidance of Captain W. L. Shaw, a staff officer of General Elliott. This regiment was directed, as soon as it cleared the bridge, to deploy to the right, advance upon the high ground and engage the enemy then pressing forward in great numbers. Before Colonel Wilson could get his regiment

into battle-line it was under a destructive fire and lost heavily. Nevertheless, though the regiment was a comparatively new one, it soon successfully engaged the enemy, and drove back his advance. A more gallant fight, under all the circumstances, was never made. It enabled me to safely take the artillery over the bridge, and to withdraw to a new position from which we could cover the bridge with our artillery and easily repulse the enemy. Colonels Wilson and Moss were each withdrawn in good order, the former above and the latter below the bridge. Gordon's brigade of Early's division, in an attempt to cross the bridge, was driven back with considerable loss, and night came to end this opening battle at Winchester. A Confederate prisoner was taken to General Milroy (who, with General Elliott, joined me at nightfall), who frankly said he was of Hays' Louisiana brigade, Early's division, Ewell's corps; that Ewell was on the field commanding in person. Milroy until then was unwilling to believe that troops other than cavalry were in his front.

Besides Early's division of Ewell's corps, we fought Maryland troops which had long been operating in the upper Valley, consisting of a battalion of infantry (Colonel Herbert), a battalion of cavalry (Major W. W. Goldsborough), and a battery of artillery.¹ I was not forced to order a retreat until the object of the advance had been fully attained, and then only when Hays' Louisiana brigade appeared on my right flank, and the cavalry there were broken and driven back. General John B. Gordon² (since Senator from Georgia), who confronted me with five infantry regiments, reports of this battle:

"About 4 o'clock in the afternoon I deployed a line of skirmishers, and moved forward to the attack, holding two regiments in

¹ *War Records*, Early's Rep., vol. xxvii., Part II., p. 460.

² His son, Major Hugh H. Gordon, served efficiently on my staff in Florida, Georgia, and Cuba (Spanish War), as did Captain J. E. B. Stewart, son of the great Confederate cavalry General; also Major John Gary Evans (ex-Governor South Carolina), and others closely related to distinguished Confederate officers. See Appendix F.

reserve. After advancing several hundred yards, I found it necessary to bring into line these two regiments on the right and on the left. The enemy's skirmishers retreated on his battle-line, a portion of which occupied a strong position behind a stone wall, but from which he was driven. A battery which I had hoped to capture was rapidly withdrawn. In this charge my brigade lost seventy-five men, including some efficient officers."¹

The total loss of the enemy in this engagement must have been at least as many more. The Union loss, of all arms, was not more than one hundred. It was now obvious Milroy's command could not hold Winchester. I assumed a retreat would be undertaken in the night, but in a brief interview with Milroy at the close of the battle he said nothing on the subject, and the reproof of the night before warned me to make no further suggestions to him with respect to his duty in this emergency.

General Elliott, my immediate superior, informed me, as I rode late at night through Winchester to my camp on the heights northwest of the city, that he thought it was too late to retreat on Harper's Ferry. I suggested that the Romney, Pughtown, and Apple-Pie Ridge, or Back Creek roads were open, and that we could safely retire over one or more of them. He said he would call Milroy's attention to my suggestion and recommend these lines of retreat, but if he did the suggestion was not favorably considered. At daybreak on the 14th of June I received a written order to take the 110th Ohio Regiment, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel W. N. Foster, one company of the 116th Ohio Infantry, commanded by Captain Arkenoe, and L Company of the 5th Regular Battery, six guns, commanded by Lieutenant Wallace F. Randolph, and occupy an open, isolated earthwork located three fourths of a mile west of the fortifications on the heights between the Romney and Pughtown roads, but in sight of the main works. This earthwork was barely sufficient for one regiment. The troops assigned me were soon in position, and quiet reigned in my front. The enemy appeared to be inactive. Milroy advised

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., p. 491.

me that the Pughtown and Romney roads were picketed and patrolled by cavalry, and I was not, therefore, charged with the duty of watching them. About 3 P.M. I rode to the main fort, and directed my horse to be unsaddled and fed while I sought an interview with Milroy. I found him in high spirits. He complimented me on the strong fight I put up the previous day, and declared his belief that the enemy were only trying to scare him out of the Valley. He referred to the quiet of the day as evidence that they had no purpose to assail him in his works. He said the cavalry had just reported no enemy in my front on any of the roads.

About 4 P.M. I started leisurely to get my horse to return to the earthwork, when, from the face of Round Mountain, about one mile to the southwest of my command, not less than twenty guns opened fire on it. I dismounted a passing wagon-master, and on his horse in less than five minutes reached the foot of the hill on which the earthwork was situated, and then, hastening on foot through a storm of shot and exploding shell, I was soon in it. Lieutenant Randolph with his six rifle guns replied to the enemy as long as possible, but his battery was soon largely disabled, the horses mostly killed, and most of the ammunition chests exploded. Two of his guns only could be kept in position for the anticipated assault. About 6 P.M., under cover of the cannonade, and protected by some timber and the nature of the ground, Hays' Louisiana brigade of five regiments, supported by Smith and Hoke's brigades, advanced to the assault. My men stood well to their work, and the two guns fired canister into the enemy. Many Confederate officers and men were seen to fall, and the head of the column wavered, but there were no trenches or abattis to obstruct the enemy's advance. There was stubborn fighting over the low breastworks, and some fighting inside of them, but not until our exposed flanks were attacked did I order a retreat. The battery was lost, but most of the command reached the main fortification safely, though exposed to the fire of the enemy for most of the distance. Captain Arkenoe was killed, and Lieutenant Paris Horney of the 110th Ohio was captured.

Our loss in killed, wounded, and captured was small. General Milroy, from an observation-stand on a flag-staff at the main fort, witnessed this affair. In his report of it he says:

"The enemy opened upon me with at least four full batteries, some of his guns being of his longest range, under cover of which fire he precipitated a column at least *ten thousand* strong upon the outer work held by Colonel Keifer, which, after a stubborn resistance, he carried."¹

General Early, in his report, says twenty guns under Colonel Jones opened fire on this position. General Hays reports his loss, 14 killed, 78 wounded, 13 missing.

Part of the guns left in the earthworks we had abandoned, and the artillery of Colonel Jones now opened on our fortifications. An artillery duel ensued which was maintained until after dark. No other hard fighting occurred on this day, only some slight skirmishing took place with Gordon's brigade south and with portions of Johnson's division east of Winchester.

The most notable event of the day was the opening fire of a score of artillery pieces in broad daylight from a quarter where no enemy was known to be. Captain Morgan (13th Pennsylvania Cavalry), who was charged with the duty of patrolling the Romney and Pughtown roads, was censured for failing to discover and report the presence of the enemy. In a large sense this censure was unjust. His report, made about 2 P.M., that no enemy was found on these roads or near them, was doubtless then true, yet an hour later Early with three of his brigades reached them about one mile in front of the earthwork occupied by me. At that time Captain Morgan had finished his reconnoissance and returned to camp. There was, however, a lack of vigilance on the part of somebody; possibly General Milroy was not altogether blameless.

As has already been stated, I was not charged with the duty of ascertaining the movements of the enemy; on the contrary, I had been informed that pickets and scouts covered my front. It is the only instance, perhaps, in the war of such a surprise.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., p. 46.



MAJOR GENERAL FRANK WHEATON.

(From a photograph, 1865.)



BREVET BRIGADIER-GENERAL J. WARREN KEIFER.

(From a photograph, 1865.)

The situation of Milroy's command was now critical. He had about 7000 men able for duty, more troops than could be used in the forts or be protected by them. Colonel A. T. McReynolds, of the 1st New York Cavalry, who commanded Milroy's Third Brigade at Berryville, some ten miles eastward of us, was attacked on the 13th, and, pursuant to orders, retired, reaching Winchester at 9 P.M. It was certainly known on the 14th that Ewell had at least 20,000 men of all arms, and it was clear that while we might stand an assault, our artillery ammunition would soon be exhausted, and the surrender of the entire command, if it remained, become inevitable. About 11 A.M. I was present in the principal fort at what was called a council of war, but my opinion was not asked or expressed as to the propriety of undertaking to escape. I ventured, however, to suggest that if a surrender were contemplated, I could take my infantry command out that night, with perhaps others, by the Back Creek or Apple-Pie Ridge road without encountering the enemy, and could safely reach Pennsylvania by keeping well to the west of Martinsburg. It was decided about midnight, however, to spike the guns, abandon all wagons, and all sick and wounded and stores of all kinds, and evacuate Winchester. The teamsters, artillerymen, and camp followers were to ride and lead the horses and mules, following closely the armed troops, who were to move at 1 A.M. on the Martinsburg road. If the enemy were encountered, we were to attack him and, if possible, cut through. The movement did not commence until 2 P.M., and the night was dark. The great body of horses and mules, being ridden by undisciplined men and unused to riders, fell into great confusion as they crowded on the pike close on the heels of the infantry. The mules brayed a chorus seldom heard, and as if prompted by a malicious desire to notify the enemy of our departure. My regiment was in the advance on the turnpike. Milroy did not accompany the head of the column. Elliott was, however, with it a portion of the time. When we had proceeded about three miles the familiar *chuck* of the hubs of artillery wheels was heard to the eastward, and it soon became apparent the

enemy was moving towards the pike, intending to strike it on our front. Some of our troops were then moving on a line parallel with the pike, eastward of it. When the head of the column had proceeded about four miles, and as it approached Stephenson's Depot (located a short distance east of the Martinsburg pike), firing in a desultory way commenced on my right and soon extended along a line obliquely towards our front. The column was moved by the flank to the left, at right angles with the road, my regiment being followed by the 122d Ohio Regiment. A line of battle was formed with these regiments in the darkness, and skirmishers thrown forward. The line advanced northward, feeling for the enemy, but it was soon halted, and the troops were again moved by the flank. My regiment, being on the left, again took the advance, keeping about one hundred yards westward of the pike. I had been informed that the whole army was to follow and share our fate. When about five miles from Winchester, and when the head of the column was about west of the Depot named, some straggling shots notified us that the enemy were on the pike near us. I halted and faced the men in line of battle towards the pike, and, though still dark, a personal investigation revealed the fact that the Confederates were in confusion, and the commands they were giving indicated also that they were greatly excited. I found Elliott some distance in the rear, and obtained his consent to charge them. Colonel Wm. H. Ball, with the 122d Ohio, was requested to support me on the right. My command charged rapidly across the road without firing. It fortunately struck the enemy's flank. We took a few prisoners and drove the enemy's right through the woods for about two hundred yards and upon his approaching artillery. Our line then halted and opened fire into the enemy's ranks, causing great confusion and killing and wounding large numbers. A battery now opened on us, but this we soon silenced by killing or driving away its gunners. The enemy retreated for protection to a railroad cut,¹ and the woods were

¹ General Johnson's Report (Confederate), *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., p. 501.

cleared in my front, but my right was unprotected, and at this juncture a considerable force of infantry and two pieces of artillery threatened that flank. I withdrew a short distance, changed direction to the right, and again advanced. Colonel Ball came up gallantly with his regiment on my right, and in twenty minutes our front was cleared, the enemy's guns silenced, the gunners shot down or driven away, and the artillery horses killed. We were only prevented from taking possession of the guns by the appearance of another and larger body of the enemy on our right. Daylight was now approaching. Without waiting the enemy's fire, I ordered both regiments withdrawn, which was effected in good order, to the west of the pike. The enemy at once reoccupied the woods in our front in superior force, but obviously without a good battle-line. Again I ordered the two regiments to a charge, which was splendidly responded to, although a promised attack in our support was not made. Elliott I did not see or receive any order from after the battle began. Milroy was trying to maintain the fight nearer Winchester, to the east of the pike, and he gave no order that reached me.

After a conflict in which the two lines were engaged in places not twenty feet apart, the enemy gave way, and our line advanced to his artillery, shooting and driving the gunners from their pieces and completely silencing them, the Confederates taking refuge again in the railroad cut. I could learn nothing of the progress of the fight at other points, and could hear no firing, save occasional shots in the direction of Winchester. I concluded the object of the attack was accomplished so far as possible, and that the non-combatants had had time to escape. It was now day-dawn, and we could not hope to further surprise the enemy or long operate on his flank. About 5 A.M., therefore, I ordered the whole line withdrawn from the woods, and resumed the march northward along the Martinsburg road. I was soon joined by Generals Milroy and Elliott and by members of their staffs, but with few men. Milroy had personally led a charge with the 87th Pennsylvania and had a horse shot under him, but there was

no concert of action in the conduct of the battle. Colonel Wm. G. Ely and a part of the brigade he commanded were captured between Stephenson's Depot and Winchester, having done little fighting, and a portion of McReynolds' brigade shared the same fate.

The cavalry became panic-stricken and, commingling with the mules and horses on which teamsters and others were mounted, all in great disorder took wildly to the hills and mountains to the northwest, followed by infantry in somewhat better order; the mules brayed, the horses neighed, the teamsters and riders indulged in much vigorous profanity, but the most of the retreating mass reached Bloody Run, Pennsylvania, marching *via* Sir John's Run, Hancock, and Bath. Citizens on Apple-Pie Ridge who witnessed the wild scene describe it as a veritable bedlam.¹

Captain Z. Baird, of Milroy's staff, who joined me while engaged in the night fight in the woods, but who was under the erroneous impression Elliott had ordered the attack, in his testimony before the Milroy Court of Inquiry, gives this account of the engagement:

"General Elliott ordered Colonel Keifer with the 110th Ohio to proceed into the woods. The order was promptly obeyed. As soon as the regiment reached the woods, a severe firing of musketry occurred. General Elliott remarked to me that the enemy must be there in force, and that the 110th should be immediately supported by the 122d Ohio. I volunteered to deliver the order to Colonel Ball of the 122d Ohio, and to guide him to the woods, so as to place him on the right flank of the 110th Ohio, and to avoid shooting our own men by mistake. The 122d Ohio arrived on the right flank of the 110th in tolerably good order, and immediately commenced firing. Both regiments then advanced, and drove the enemy out of the woods. There were indications of a surprise to the enemy by

¹ An orderly who attempted to carry on horseback a valise containing valuable papers, etc., of mine, threw it away in a field as he rode into the mountains. A Quakeress, Miss Mary Lupton, witnessed the act from her home, and found the valise and returned it to me with all its contents, after the battle of Opequon, Sept. 19, 1864.

the suddenness of their attack. They took one of their caissons or passed it. We could look into their camp and see that their artillery horses were ungovernable. We were so close that we could hear the orders given by their officers in endeavoring to restore order. The fire of the enemy, though rapid, went over us, both of small arms and artillery. As we progressed, we saw evidences from the wounded and slain of the enemy that our fire had been efficient. After this contest had lasted perhaps an hour Colonel Keifer requested me to return to the rear and learn what dispositions were going on on the right to sustain Colonel Ball and himself. I complied with his order. When I arrived at the rear, I noticed the 87th Pennsylvania, the 18th Connecticut, and the 123d Ohio advancing on the right in line of battle, under the immediate command of Colonel Ely of the 18th Connecticut. General Milroy was also present, but dismounted, his horse being, as I supposed, disabled. He was engaged in changing horses. Without reporting to General Milroy, as I now recollect, I returned with all possible expedition to Colonel Keifer, to notify him of the support which he was about to have on the right. I supposed at the time that from the effect of the fire of the 110th and 122d Ohio, that when Colonel Ely with his force attacked on the right we would rout them. I met, however, the 110th and 122d Ohio falling back. The officers were so busy in preserving order that I could not communicate with them. After we had fallen back to the Martinsburg road, I saw Generals Milroy and Elliott. I was informed by the former that the retreat was again in progress.”¹

Colonel Wm. H. Ball (122d Ohio), in his official report speaks of this fight thus:

“I was ordered to follow the 110th Ohio Volunteer Infantry, which had been moved off the field some time before, and was out of sight. The regiments being so separated, I did not engage the enemy as soon as the 110th. I formed on the right of the 110th Ohio Volunteer Infantry, and the two regiments advanced within the skirt of the woods and engaged the enemy, who occupied the woods with infantry and artillery. After a sharp action, the line was advanced at least 100 yards and to within twenty paces of the enemy's artillery, where a terrible fire was maintained for fifteen or twenty

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., p. 136.

minutes by both parties. The artillery was driven back over 100 yards, and for a time silenced by the fire of our rifles. By order of Colonel Keifer the two regiments then retreated beyond the range of the enemy's infantry, reformed, and again advanced within the woods, and, after a sharp engagement, retreated, by order of Colonel Keifer, the enemy then moving on our flank."

The contemplated attack by Colonel Ely and others was not made.

We marched *via* Smithfield (Wizzard's Clip), Charlestown, and Halltown, and reached Harper's Ferry about 3 P.M., having marched thirty-five miles and fought two hours on the way.

Berryville, held by McReynolds' brigade of Milroy's command, was taken by Rhodes' division of five brigades on the 13th of June; Bunker Hill, on the direct road to Martinsburg from Winchester, was occupied by the enemy early the morning of the 14th; and Martinsburg was taken (all by the same division) the evening of that day. General Daniel Tyler and Colonel B. F. Smith (126th Ohio), with a small command of infantry and cavalry and one battery, made a gallant stand for a few hours, to enable their baggage and supply trains, escorted by a small number of cavalry, to escape *via* Williamsport. A portion of the battery was captured, but Tyler and Smith's troops retreated on Shepherdstown, thence to Harper's Ferry.

We pursued, in the retreat from Stephenson's Depot, the only possible route then open to us to Harper's Ferry. About 2000 men of all arms reached Harper's Ferry with us, and others straggled in later. But much the larger part of Milroy's command escaped with the animals to Pennsylvania; 2700 soldiers assembled at Bloody Run alone. The losses in captured, including the sick and wounded left in hospital, and the wounded left on the field, were about 3000. The losses in my command, considering the desperate nature of the fighting, were small, and but few of my officers and soldiers, fit for duty and not wounded in battle, were captured. Lieutenants T.

J. Weakley and C. M. Gross, through neglect of the officer of the day, were left on picket near Winchester, with 60 men of the 110th Ohio, and, consequently captured. The surgeons, with their assistants, were left at hospital and on the field in charge of the sick and wounded. Chaplain McCabe remained to assist in the care of the wounded left on the battle-field. The enemy's loss in killed and wounded much exceeded the Union loss on each of the three days' fighting. I was bruised by a spent ball on the 13th, and slightly wounded by a musket ball fired by a soldier not ten feet from me near the close of the fight at the earthwork on the 14th, and my horse was shot under me in the night engagement at Stephenson's Depot. We fought the best of the troops of Lee's army. General Edward Johnson's division of Ewell's corps, in the night engagement, consisted of Stewart, Nicholl, and Walker's (Stonewall) brigades. Johnson was censured for not having reached and covered the Martinsburg road earlier in the night of the 14th of June. He reported his command in a critical situation for a time after our attack upon it; that "two sets of cannoniers (13 out of 16) were killed or disabled."¹

The war furnishes no parallel to the fighting at Winchester, and there is no other instance of the war where a comparatively small force, after being practically surrounded by a greatly superior one, cut its way out.

Johnson's division was so roughly handled on the morning of the 15th that it did not pursue us, nor was it ordered to march again until some time the next day. The plan of Lee was for Ewell's corps to push forward rapidly into Pennsylvania. His delay at Winchester postponed Lee's giving the order to Ewell "to take Harrisburg" until June 21st.² The loss of three or more days at Winchester most likely saved Pennsylvania's capital from capture.

The disaster to the Union arms at Winchester was, by General Halleck, charged upon General Milroy, and General Schenck was ordered by Halleck to place Milroy in arrest. In August, 1863, a Court of Inquiry convened at Washington to

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., pp. 501-2.

² *Ibid.*, p. 443.

investigate and report upon Milroy's conduct and the evacuation of Winchester. Schenck's action in relation to the matter was also drawn in question. The court was in session twenty-seven days, heard many witnesses, including Generals Schenck and Milroy, and had before it a mass of orders and dispatches.¹ I was a known friend of Milroy, hence was not called against him, and he did not have me summoned because I had differed so radically with him as to the necessity of evacuating Winchester. The testimony, while doing me ample justice, did not disclose much of the information communicated by me to Milroy, nor my views with respect to the judgment displayed by him in a great emergency. Milroy and his friends maintained, with much force, that his holding Winchester for about three days delayed, for that time or longer, Lee's advance into Pennsylvania, and thus saved Harrisburg from capture, and gave the Army of the Potomac time to reach Gettysburg, and there force Lee to concentrate his army and fight an unsuccessful battle. The Court of Inquiry made no formal report, but Judge-Advocate-General Holt reviewed the testimony, and reached conclusions generally exonerating Milroy from the charge of disobedience of orders and misconduct during the evacuation, but reflecting somewhat on Schenck for not positively ordering the place evacuated. President Lincoln made a characteristic indorsement on this record, not unfavorable to either Schenck or Milroy, concluding with this paragraph:

"Serious blame is not necessarily due to any serious disaster, and I cannot say that in this case any of the officers are deserving of serious blame. No court-martial is deemed necessary or proper in this case."²

Halleck did not, however, cease in his hostility to Milroy, and not until in the last months of the war did the "Gray Eagle" have another command in the field. He was a rashly-brave and patriotic man, and his whole heart was in the Union cause. In battle he risked his own person unnecessarily and

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., pp. 88-197.

² *Ibid.*, p. 197.

without exercising a proper supervision over his entire command. He died at Olympia, Washington, March 29, 1890, when seventy-five years of age. The colored people of America should erect a monument to his memory. He was their friend when to be so drew upon him much adverse criticism.





CHAPTER II

INVASION OF PENNSYLVANIA—CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG—LEE'S RETREAT ACROSS THE POTOMAC, AND LOSSES IN BOTH ARMIES

AT Harper's Ferry, June 16th, I was assigned to command a brigade under General W. H. French, a regular officer. General Joseph Hooker, in command of the Army of the Potomac, June 25th, ordered French to be ready to march at a moment's notice. French took position on Maryland Heights, where, June 27th, Hooker visited him and gave him orders to prepare to evacuate both the Heights and Harper's Ferry. French had under him there about 10,000 effective men. Halleck, on being notified of Hooker's purpose to evacuate these places and to unite French's command with the Army of the Potomac for the impending battle, countermanded Hooker's order; thereupon the latter, by telegram from Sandy Hook, requested to be relieved from the command of that army. His request being persisted in, he was, on June 28th, relieved, and Major-General George G. Meade was, by the President, assigned to succeed him. Meade, also feeling in need of reinforcements, on the same day asked permission to order French, with his forces, to join him. Halleck, though placing French under Meade's command, did not consent to this. French, however, with all his troops (save my brigade), under orders from Washington, abandoned Harper's Ferry and Maryland Heights, and became a corps of observation to operate in the vicinity of Frederick, Maryland, in the rear of the Army of the Potomac.



MAJOR-GENERAL WILLIAM H. FRENCH.

(From a photograph taken 1863.)

And though no enemy was threatening, nor likely to do so soon, I was ordered to dismantle the fortified heights, load the guns and stores on Chesapeake and Ohio canal boats, and escort them to Washington, repairing the canal and locks on the way. This work was done thoroughly, and we arrived with a fleet of twenty-six boats in Washington shortly after midnight, July 4, 1863. It was my first visit to that city.

Under orders from Halleck, I started on the 6th, by rail, to reoccupy Harper's Ferry, but was stopped by Meade at Frederick, and there again reported to French. French had been assigned to command the Third Army Corps (to succeed General Daniel E. Sickles, wounded at Gettysburg), and his late command became the Third Division of that corps, under Elliott; my brigade, consisting of the 110th and 122d Ohio, 6th Maryland, and 138th Pennsylvania Infantry regiments, became the Second Brigade of this division. This brigade (with, later, three regiments added) was not broken up during the war, and was generally known as "*Keifer's Brigade*."

It is not my purpose to attempt to write the full story of the battle of Gettysburg, the greatest, measured by the results, of the many great battles of the war. Gettysburg marks the high tide of the Rebellion. From it dates the certain downfall of the Confederacy, though nearly two years of war followed, and more blood was spilled after Lee sullenly commenced his retreat from the heights of Gettysburg than before.

About this stage of the war, President Lincoln took an active interest in the movement of the armies, although he generally refrained from absolutely directing them in the field. It was not unusual for army commanders to appeal to him for opinions as to military movements, and he was free in making suggestions, volunteering to take the responsibility if they were adopted and his plans miscarried. Hooker, in an elaborate dispatch (June 5th) relating to the anticipated movements of Lee's army from the Rappahannock to the northward, said:

"I am of opinion that it is my duty to pitch into his rear, although in so doing the head of his column may reach Warrenton before I can return."

The President, answering, said :

"I have but one idea which I think worth suggesting to you, and that is, in case you find Lee coming to the north of the Rappahannock, I would by no means cross to the south of it. If he should leave a rear force at Fredericksburg, tempting you to fall upon it, it would fight in intrenchments and have you at disadvantage, and so, man for man, worst you at that point, while his main force would in some way be getting the advantage of you northward. In one word, I would not take any risk of being entangled upon the river, *like an ox jumped half over the fence and liable to be torn by dogs front and rear, without a fair chance to gore one way or kick the other.*"¹

The President, answering another dispatch from Hooker, June 10th, said :

"I think Lee's army, and not Richmond, is your objective point. If he comes towards the upper Potomac, follow him on his flank and on his inside track, shortening your lines while he lengthens his. Fight him, too, when opportunity offers. If he stays where he is, *fret him and fret him.*"²

When deeply concerned about the fate of Winchester (June 14th), this dispatch was sent :

"MAJOR GENERAL HOOKER :

"So far as we can make out here, the enemy have Milroy surrounded at Winchester and Tyler at Martinsburg. If they could hold out a few days, could you help them? *If the head of Lee's army is at Martinsburg, and the tail of it on the plank road between Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, the animal must be very slim somewhere. Could you not break him?*"

"A. LINCOLN."²

Hooker did not cross the river and attack the rear of Lee's army, nor did he "*fret*" Lee's army, nor "*break*" it, however "*slim*" "*the animal*" must have been, and hence Milroy was sacrificed, and the rich towns, cities, and districts of Maryland and Pennsylvania were overrun by a hungry and

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part I., pp. 30-1.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 35, 39.

devastating foe; but Gettysburg came; the Union hosts there being successfully led by another commander—Meade!

George Gordon Meade came to the command of the Army of the Potomac under the most trying circumstances. The situation of that army and the country was critical. He had been distinguished as a brigade, division, and corps commander under McClellan, Burnside, and Hooker; in brief, he had won laurels on many fields, especially at Fredericksburg, where he broke through the enemy's right and reached his reserves, yet he never had held an independent command. He was of Revolutionary stock (Pennsylvania), though born in Cadiz, Spain, December 31, 1815, where his parents then resided, his father being a merchant and shipowner there. He was graduated at West Point; was a modest, truthful, industrious, studious man, with the instincts of a soldier. He was wounded at New Market, or Glendale, in the Peninsula campaign (1862). He was commanding in person, and ambitious to succeed, prudent, but obstinate, and when aroused showed a fierce temper; yet he was, in general, just. On the third day after he assumed command of the army its advance corps opened the battle of Gettysburg. What great soldier ever before took an army and moved it into battle against a formidable adversary in so short a time? It must also be remembered that the troops composing his army were not used to material success. They had never been led to a decisive victory. Some of them had been defeated at Bull Run; some of them on the Peninsula; some of them at the Second Bull Run; some of them were in the drawn battle of Antietam; some of them had suffered repulse at Fredericksburg and defeat at Chancellorsville, and the army in general had experienced more of defeat than success, although composed of officers and soldiers equal to the best ever called to battle. When Meade assumed command, Lee's army was, in the main, far up the Cumberland Valley, and pressing on; Ewell had orders to take Harrisburg, and was then, with most of his corps, at Carlisle, Pennsylvania. York and Wrightsville, Pa., were taken on the 28th by Gordon of Early's division. On the 29th Ewell ordered

his engineer, with Jenkins' cavalry, to reconnoitre the defences of Harrisburg, and he was starting for that place himself on the same day when Lee recalled him and his corps to join the main army at Cashtown, or Gettysburg.¹

Longstreet's corps marched from Fredericksburg, June 3d, *via* Culpepper Court-House, thence up the Rappahannock and along the eastern slope of the Blue Ridge; on the 19th occupied Ashby's and Snicker's Gaps, leading to the Valley; on the 23d marched *via* Martinsburg and Williamsport into Maryland, reaching Chambersburg on the 27th; thence marched on the 30th to Greenwood, and the next day to Marsh Creek, four miles from Gettysburg, Pickett's division and Hood's brigade being left, respectively, at Chambersburg and New Guilford.²

A. P. Hill's corps did not leave Fredericksburg until the 14th of June, just after Hooker put the Army of the Potomac in motion to the northward. Hill marched into the Valley and joined Longstreet at Berryville, and from there preceded him to Chambersburg, and by one day to Cashtown and Gettysburg.³

General J. E. B. Stuart, in command of the Confederate cavalry, crossed the upper Rappahannock, June 16th, and moved east of the Blue Ridge on Longstreet's right flank, leaving only a small body of cavalry on the Rappahannock, in observation, with instructions to follow on the right flank of Hill's corps. Severe cavalry engagements took place at Aldie, the 17th, and at Middleburg, Uppeville, and Snicker's Gap, without decisive results, both sides claiming victories. On the 24th Stuart, with the main body of his cavalry, succeeded in eluding the Union cavalry and Hooker's army (then feeling its way north), and passed east of Centreville, thence *via* Fairfax Court-House and Dranesville, and crossed, June 27th, the Potomac at Rowser's Ford, and captured a large supply train between Washington and Rockville. Stuart's cavalry caused some damage in the rear and east of the Army of the Potomac,

¹ Ewell's Report, *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., p. 443.

² Longstreet's Report, *Ibid.*, 358.

³ Lee's Report, *Ibid.*, 317.

but, on the whole, this bold movement contributed little, if any, towards success in Lee's campaign. Stuart's advance reached the Confederate left *via* Dover and Carlisle, Pennsylvania, late on the afternoon of the second day of the battle, his troopers and horses in a somewhat exhausted condition. The consensus of opinion among military critics was then, and since is, that Lee committed a great strategic error in authorizing his main cavalry force to be separated from close contact with the right of his moving army. General Lee seems to have come to this conclusion himself, as frequently, in his official reports of the campaign, he deplors the absence of his cavalry and his consequent inability to obtain reliable information of the movements of the Army of the Potomac.¹ Longstreet severely criticises Stuart's raid, and attributes to the absence of the cavalry, in large part, the failure of the Gettysburg campaign.² Cavalry, under an energetic commander, are the *eyes and ears* of a large army, especially when it is on an active campaign against a vigilant enemy.

Having with some particularity traced the main bodies composing Lee's army, as to time and routes, to the vicinity of Gettysburg, it remains to briefly follow the Army of the Potomac to the same place. While some of its corps moved earlier, the headquarters of that army did not leave Falmouth until the 14th of June, when it was established at Dumfries; on the next day at Fairfax Station, on the 18th at Fairfax Court-House, on the 26th at Poolesville, Maryland, and the next day at Frederick, Maryland, where Meade succeeded Hooker. Before the Army of the Potomac left Falmouth a division of the Sixth Corps had been thrown across the river to observe the enemy, but it did not attack him, and was withdrawn on the 13th.

Meade found his army, mainly, in the vicinity of Frederick, though some of his corps had passed northward and others were moving up by converging lines, the Sixth Corps having just arrived at Poolesville from Virginia. June 29th, Meade

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., pp. 316, 321-2.

² *Manassas to Appomattox*, pp. 342-3, 351-9, 362.

moved his headquarters from Frederick to Middleburg, the next day to Taneytown, Maryland, about fifteen miles south of Gettysburg.

The movements of the Army of the Potomac were such as to cover Washington and Baltimore, and at the same time bring, as soon as possible, the invading army to battle.

The First, Eleventh, and Third Corps, under Major-General John F. Reynolds, were in the advance on Gettysburg on July 1st, the First Corps leading, and preceded only by General John Buford's division of cavalry. Lee was then rapidly concentrating his army at Gettysburg. Reynolds found Buford fiercely engaging infantry of Hill's corps as they were debouching through the mountains on the Cashtown road. He promptly moved the First Corps to Buford's support, and it soon became hotly engaged. The Eleventh Corps, commanded by General Oliver O. Howard, was ordered to hasten to join in the battle. Howard arrived about 11.30 A.M., just as Reynolds fell mortally wounded, and the command on the field devolved on Howard. He pushed forward two divisions of the Eleventh to the support of the First Corps, then engaged on Seminary Hill, northeast of Gettysburg, and posted a third division on Cemetery Ridge, south of the town. The battle continued with great fierceness on the Cashtown road. For a time the Union success was considerable, and the Confederates were forced back, and numerous prisoners, including General Archer, were captured; but reinforcements from Cashtown and the unexpected arrival, at 1.30 P.M., over the York and Harrisburg roads, of Ewell's corps on Howard's right left him outnumbered and outflanked. He maintained the unequal contest until about 4 P.M., then ordered a withdrawal to Cemetery Ridge, which was accomplished with considerable loss, chiefly in prisoners taken in the streets of Gettysburg. Meade, learning of Reynolds' death, dispatched General W. S. Hancock to represent him on the field. Hancock arrived in time to aid Howard in posting the troops advantageously on the Ridge, where they handsomely repulsed an attack on the right flank. Slocum and Sickles' corps arrived about 7 P.M., and were

posted on the right and left, respectively, of those in position. Hancock reported to Meade the position held was a strong one, and advised that the army be concentrated there for battle. At 10 P.M. Meade left Taneytown and reached the battle-field at 1 A.M. of the 2d of July, having, on the reports received, decided to stand and deliver general battle there.¹ The Second and Fifth Corps and the rest of the Third arrived early on the 2d. The Second and Third Corps went into position on the Union left on a continuation of the ridge towards Little Round Top Mountain. The Fifth was held in reserve until the arrival of the Sixth at 2 P.M., when it was moved to the extreme left, the Sixth taking its place in reserve owing to the exhaustion of its troops, they having just accomplished a thirty-two mile march from 9 P.M. of the day previous. The Third, under Sickles, was moved by him to a peach orchard about one half mile in advance, and out of line with the corps on its right and left. Here it received the shock of battle, precipitated about 3 P.M. by Longstreet's corps from the Confederate right. The Second and Fifth Corps were hastened to cover the flanks of the Third. The battle raged furiously for some hours and until night put an end to it. The Third was forced, after a desperate conflict, to retire on its proper line. Sickles was severely wounded, losing a leg. The Fifth, after a most heroic conflict, succeeded in gaining and holding Round Top (big) Mountain, the key to the position on the Union left, as were Cemetery Hill and Culp's Hill, on its right. Longstreet, at nightfall, after suffering great loss, was forced to retire, having gained no substantial advantage. The Sixth and part of the First Corps, having been ordered to the left, participated in this battle and aided in Longstreet's repulse. Geary's division of the Twelfth, moving from the extreme right, had also reinforced the left. It was this withdrawal from the right which enabled Ewell's corps to capture and occupy a part of the Union line in the vicinity of Culp's Hill. An assault was made about 8 P.M. on the Eleventh Corps at Cemetery Hill, where the enemy

¹ Meade's Report, *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part I., p. 115.

penetrated to a battery, over which a *melee* took place, the Confederates, after a hand-to-hand fight, being driven from the hill and forced to retreat. Thus the second day's fighting at Gettysburg ended, neither side having gained any decisive advantage. Most of the Union Army had been, however, more or less engaged, while Longstreet's corps (save Pickett's division), and only portions of Ewell's corps of the Confederate Army, had been seriously in battle. There had been some spirited artillery duels, but these rarely contribute materially to important results.

The third day opened, at early dawn, by Geary's division (returned from the left) attacking, and after a lively battle retaking its former position on the right. A spirited contest also raged on the right at Culp's Hill and along Rock Creek all the morning, in which Wheaton's brigade of the Sixth Corps participated. With this exception, quiet reigned along the lines of the two great armies during the forenoon of the 3d.

Lee, flushed with some appearance of success on the first and second days, and over-confident of the fighting qualities of his splendid army, born of its defeats of the Army of the Potomac on the Rappahannock, decided to deliver offensive battle, though far from his natural base. Orders were accordingly given to Longstreet to mass a column of not less than 15,000 men for an assault, under cover of artillery, on the Union left centre, to be supported by simultaneous real or pretended attacks by other portions of the Confederate Army.

Longstreet did not believe in the success of the attack, and hence offered many objections to it, and predicted its failure. He advised swinging the Confederate Army by its right around the Union left, and thus compel Meade to withdraw from his naturally strong position.¹ Lee would not listen to his great Lieutenant. Pickett's division of three brigades was assigned to the right of the column, and it became the division of direction. Kemper's division of four brigades from Hill's corps was formed on the left of Pickett, and Wilcox's brigade of Hill's corps was placed in echelon in support on Pickett's

¹ *Manassas to Appomattox*, pp. 386-7.

right, and the brigades of Scales and Lane of Hill's corps, under Trimble, were to move in support of Kemper's left. The whole column of ten brigades, composed of forty-six regiments, numbered about 20,000 men.

Generals Pendleton and Alexander, chiefs of artillery of the Army of Northern Virginia and of Longstreet's corps, respectively, massed 150 guns on a ridge extending generally parallel to the left of the Union Army and about one mile therefrom, and so as to be able to pour a converging fire on its left centre.¹ While this preparation for decisive battle went on in the Confederate lines, the Union Army stood at bay, in readiness for the battle-storm foreboded by the long lull and the active preparations observed in its front. At 1 P.M. Longstreet's batteries opened, and the superior guns of the Union Army, though not in position in such great number, promptly responded. This terrific duel lasted about two hours. Meade, recognizing the futility of his artillery fire, and in anticipation of the assault soon to come, ordered a large portion of his artillery withdrawn under cover, to give the guns time to cool and to be resupplied with ammunition. This led the enemy to believe that he had silenced them effectually, and the assaulting column went forward.² The Union artillery, with fresh batteries added, was again quickly put in position for its real work. The close massed column of assault, well led, gallantly moved to the charge down the slope and across the open ground, directed against a portion of the Union line partially on Cemetery Ridge. The supporting Confederate batteries now almost ceased firing. As the assaulting column went forward the Union guns turned on it, cutting gaps in it at each discharge. These were generally closed from the supports, but when the head of the column got well up to, and in one place into, the Union breastworks, the fire of the Union infantry became irresistible. Longstreet ordered the divisions of McLaws and Hood, holding his line on the right of the assaulting column, to advance to battle. Union forces moved

¹ Pendleton's Report, *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., p. 352.

² *Manassas to Appomattox*, p. 392.

out and attacked Pickett's supporting brigade on the right. Under the fierce fire of infantry and artillery the head of the great Confederate column fast melted away. Generals Garnet, Pender, Semmes, Armistead, and Barksdale were killed, Generals Kemper, Trimble, Pettigrew, and many other officers fell wounded, and many Confederate colors were shot down. The Confederates who penetrated the Union line were killed or captured. When success was demonstrated to be impossible, Pickett ordered a retreat, and such of his men as were not cut off by the fire that continued to sweep the field escaped to cover behind the batteries, leaving the broad track of the assaulting column strewn with dead, dying, and wounded. The great battle was now substantially ended. Meade did not draw out his army and pursue the broken Confederates, as their leaders expected him to do. Lee, while personally aiding in restoring the lines of his shattered troops, recognized the fearful consequences of Pickett's assault, and magnanimously said to an officer, "*It is all my fault.*"

Generals Hancock and Gibbon and many important Union officers were wounded. This, together with other causes, prevented Meade from assuming the offensive. Two-thirds of the Confederate Army had not been engaged actively in this last struggle, and the day was too far spent for Meade to make the combinations indispensable to the success of an immediate attack.

Longstreet withdrew McLaws and Hood from their advance position. Kilpatrick moved his cavalry division to attack the Confederate right, and Farnsworth's cavalry brigade made a gallant charge upon the rear of Longstreet's infantry, riding over detachments until the dashing leader lost his life and his command was cut to pieces by the terrific fire of the enemy's artillery and infantry. A great fight also ensued on the Union right near Rock Creek, between the Confederate cavalry under Stuart and the main body of the Union cavalry under General Alfred Pleasanton, in which our cavalry held the field and drove back Stuart from an attempt to penetrate behind the Union right. The infantry corps of the two armies were not

again engaged at Gettysburg. Lee drew in his left to compact his army, holding his cavalry still on his left.

At nightfall, July 4th, Lee, having previously sent in advance his trains and ambulances filled with sick and wounded, commenced a retreat by the Fairfield and Emmittsburg roads through Hagerstown to the Potomac at Williamsport and Falling Waters, his cavalry covering his rear. The Sixth Corps and our cavalry followed in close pursuit on the morning of the 5th, but the main body of the Army of the Potomac marched on the Confederate flank, directed on Middletown, Maryland. French (left at Frederick) had pushed a column to Williamsport and Falling Waters, and destroyed a pontoon bridge and captured its guard and a wagon train. Buford's cavalry was sent by Meade to Williamsport, where it encountered Lee's advance, destroyed trains, and made many captures of guns and prisoners. Recent heavy rains had swollen the Potomac so that it could not be forded. Most of the Confederate sick and wounded were, with great effort, ferried over the swollen river in improvised boats, but not without several days' delay. Lee's army reached the Potomac on the 11th, having suffered considerable loss during its retreat in prisoners, arms, and trains. It took up a strong position, covering Williamsport and Falling Waters, and intrenched.

The Union Army, after reaching Middletown and being reinforced by French's command and somewhat reorganized, deployed on the 11th for battle, and on the 12th moved close up to the front of the Confederate Army. Orders were issued looking to an attack on the morning of the 13th, but the day was spent in reconnoissances and further preparations. On the following morning the enemy had succeeded in crossing the river, and only a rear-guard was taken.

Great disappointment was felt that Meade did not again force Lee to battle north of the Potomac. Certain it is that Lee's army was deficient in ammunition for all arms, and rations were scarce. Lee, in dispatches to Jefferson Davis, dated July 7th, 8th, and 10th, showed great apprehension

as to the result of a battle if attacked in his then situation.¹

Meade's army was also greatly impeded by circumstances beyond human control. When, on the 13th of July, a general attack was contemplated, rain fell in torrents, and the cultivated fields were so soft as to render the movement of artillery and troops almost impossible. The wheels of the gun-carriages sunk so deep in the soft earth as to forbid the guns being fired safely. Meade was urged, by dispatches from Halleck, and by one from President Lincoln, to attack Lee before he crossed the Potomac.² Meade was fully alive to the importance of doing this, but he displayed some timidity peculiar to his nature, and sought to have all the conditions in his favor before risking another battle. His combinations were made with too much precision for the time he had to do it in.

A less cautious commander might, during the first few days, have assailed Lee precipitately on his front or flank, or both simultaneously, relying on his not being able to concentrate his army to resist it. But after Lee had concentrated his forces and intrenched in a well selected position, covering Williamsport and Falling Waters, the result of an attack would have been doubtful, yet, in the light of what was later known, one should have been made. Meade, however, had done well under the circumstances at Gettysburg, and a two-weeks'-old independent commander, not yet accustomed to fighting a large army in aggressive battle, is entitled to considerate judgment.

The revised lists of losses in the battle and campaign of Gettysburg in the Army of the Potomac show 246 officers and 2909 enlisted men killed, 1145 officers and 13,384 enlisted men wounded, total 17,684; also 183 officers and 5182 enlisted men captured, grand total 23,049. The First and Eleventh Corps lost, chiefly on the first day, in captured, 3527.³

The imperfect lists of losses in the Army of Northern Virginia do not show the number of killed and wounded officers

¹ *WarRecords*, vol. xxvii., Part II., pp. 299-302.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 82-3.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 187.

separately from enlisted men, and from some of the commands no reports are found, yet, so far as made, they show 2592 killed and 12,709 wounded, total 15,301, and 5150 captured, grand total 20,451.¹ The records of prisoners of war in the Adjutant-General's Office, U.S.A., give the names of 12,227 wounded and unwounded Confederates captured at Gettysburg, July 1st to 5th, inclusive.¹

When the Gettysburg campaign ended I was fairly in the Army of the Potomac, destined to be with it and of it and to share its fortunes for two years and to the end of the war.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part II., 346.





CHAPTER III

NEW YORK RIOTS, 1863—PURSUIT OF LEE'S ARMY TO THE RAPPAHANNOCK—ACTION OF WAPPING HEIGHTS, AND SKIRMISHES—WESTERN TROOPS SENT TO NEW YORK TO ENFORCE THE DRAFT—THEIR RETURN—INCIDENTS, ETC.

DURING the Gettysburg campaign the organized militia of New York City and the volunteer and regular troops stationed there were sent to Pennsylvania to aid in repelling the invading army, thus leaving that city without its usual protection.

Horatio Seymour, Governor of the State of New York in 1863, was not, at all times, in harmony with President Lincoln and the War Department with respect to the conduct of the war, the necessity for raising troops, and the means by which they were obtained. His opposition to the draft was well understood, and gave encouragement to a turbulent population in New York City who were opposed to the war, and, consequently, to all radical measures to fill the city's quota. The poor believed they had a just ground of complaint. A clause in the Enrollment Act of Congress allowed a drafted man to be discharged upon the payment of three hundred dollars commutation. This gave the wealthier people a right the poor were not able to avail themselves of.

The city of New York had responded loyally with men and money in support of the Union at the breaking out of the war, but as the struggle progressed and the burdens of the city increased and many calls for men came, there occurred

some reaction in public sentiment, especially among the masses, who imagined they were the greatest sufferers. Her Mayor, Fernando Wood, prior to the war (January 6, 1861), in a Message to her Common Council, denominated the Union as only a "confederacy" of which New York was the "Empire City"; and said further that dissolution of the Union was inevitable; that it was absolutely impossible to keep the States "together longer than they deemed themselves fairly treated"; that the Union could "not be preserved by coercion or held together by force"; that with the "aggrieved brethren of the slave States" the city had preserved "friendly relations and a common sympathy," and had not "participated in a warfare upon their constitutional rights or their domestic institutions," and, "therefore, New York has a right to expect, and should endeavor to preserve, a continuance of uninterrupted intercourse with every section." He denounced other parts of New York State as a "foreign power" seeking to legislate for the city's government; claimed that "much, no doubt," could "be said in favor of the justice and policy of a separation," and that the Pacific States and Western States as well as the Southern States would each soon set up an independent Republic. But Mayor Wood, not content with all this disunion nonsense, said further:

"Why should not New York City, instead of supporting by her contributions in revenue two thirds of the expenses of the United States, become also equally independent? As a *free city*, with but nominal duty on imports, her local government could be supported without taxation upon her people. Thus we could live free from taxes, and have cheap goods nearly duty free. In this she would have the whole and united support of the Southern States, as well as all the other States to whose interests and rights under the Constitution she has always been true; and when disunion has become a fixed and certain fact, why may not New York disrupt the bonds which bind her to a venal and corrupt master—to a people and party that have plundered her revenues, taken away the power of self-government and destroyed the Confederacy of which she was the proud Empire City? Amid the gloom which the present and

prospective condition of things must cast over the country, New York, as a Free City, may shed the only light and hope of a future reconstruction of our once blessed Confederacy.”¹

This most audacious communication ante-dated all Ordinances of Secession save that of South Carolina, and preceded President Lincoln's inauguration by about two months. The proposed secession of New York City involved disrupting the bonds which bound her to the State as well as the nation, and could not therefore possess even the shadow of excuse of separate sovereignty, such as was claimed for a State.

The dangerous doctrine of this Message and the suggestions for making New York a *free city*, and other like political teachings, bore fruit, and had much to do with building up a public sentiment which culminated in resistance to the draft and the monstrous, bloody, and destructive riots that ensued in New York City.

The significance of the defeat of the Confederate Army at Gettysburg and the capture of Vicksburg on the 4th of July, 1863, were not well understood in New York when, on Saturday, July 11, 1863, pursuant to instructions, Provost-Marshal Jenkins commenced the initial work on the corner of 46th Street and Third Avenue, by drawing from the wheel the names of those who must respond to the call of the Government or pay the commutation money.

The first day passed without any open violence, and with even some good-humored pleasantry on the part of the great crowd assembled. The draft was conducted openly and fairly, and the names of the conscripts were publicly announced and published by the press of Sunday morning. It appeared that the names of many men, too poor to pay the commutation, had been drawn from the wheel, and these would therefore have to go to the army in person regardless of inclination or ability to provide for their families in their absence. Others not drawn were apprehensive that their fate would be the same. On Sunday, therefore, in secret places, inhabitants of

¹ *Hist. of Rebellion* (McPherson), p. 42.

the district where the draft had commenced, met, and resolved to resist it even to bloodshed. The absence of the organized militia and other regular and volunteer soldiers was, by the leaders of the movement, widely proclaimed, to encourage the belief that resistance would be successful. The police, though efficient, were not much feared, as they would have to be widely scattered over the city to protect persons and property. In the promotion of the scheme of resistance to Federal authority, organized parties went early Monday morning to yard, factory, and shop, and compelled men to abandon their labor and join the procession wending its way to the corner of Third Avenue and 46th Street.

Captain Jenkins and his assistants, not apprehending any danger, recommenced the draft in the presence of a great multitude, many of whom had crowded into his office, and a few names had been called and registered when a paving-stone was hurled through a window, shivering the glass into a thousand pieces, knocking over some quiet observers in the room and startling the officials. This was the initial act of the celebrated New York riots. A second and a third stone now crashed through the broken window at the fated officers and reporters, and with frantic yells the crowd developed into a mob, and, breaking down the doors, rushed into the room, smashed the desks, tables, and furniture, and destroyed whatever could be found. The wheel alone was carried upstairs and eventually saved. The Marshal escaped alive, but his deputy, Lieutenant Vanderpoel, was horribly beaten and taken home for dead. The building wherein the office was located was fired, and the hydrants were taken possession of by the mob to prevent the Fire Department from extinguishing the flames, and in two hours an entire block was burned down. Police Superintendent Kennedy was assailed by the rioters and left for dead. The most exaggerated rumors of the success of the mob spread throughout the city, and other anti-conscript bands were rapidly formed, especially in its southern parts.

While General Sanford of the State Militia, Mayor Opdyke of the city, and General John E. Wool were hastily consulting,

and, in the absence of any military force adequate to suppress the already formidable riot, were trying to devise means for its suppression, the mob, joined by numerous gangs of thieves and thugs, grew to the size of a great army, and feeling possessed of an irresistible power, moved rapidly about the apparently doomed city, engaging in murder, pillage, and arson. Neither person nor property was regarded. Peaceful citizens were openly seized, maltreated, and robbed wherever found. Those who tried to resist were often dragged mercilessly about the streets, stamped upon, and left for dead. A brown-stone block on Lexington Avenue was destroyed. An armed detachment of marines, some fifty strong, was sent to quell the riot. At the corner of 43d Street these marines attempted to disperse the mob by firing on it with blank cartridges, but they were rushed upon with such fierce fury that they were broken and overpowered, their guns were taken from them, several of them killed, and all terribly beaten. A squad of the police attempted to arrest some of the leaders at this point, but it was defeated, badly beaten, and one of its number killed. Elated with these triumphs, and excited by the blood already spilled, the passion of the mob knew no bounds, and it proposed an immediate onslaught upon the principal streets, hotels, and public buildings. The city was filled with consternation; all business ceased, public conveyances stopped running, and terror seized the public authorities as well as the peaceful citizens.

The negroes seemed to be the first object of the mob's animosity; public places where they were employed were seized, and the colored servants there employed were maltreated, and in some instances killed. The Colored Half-Orphan Asylum, on Fifth Avenue, near 43d Street, the home for about 800 colored children, was visited, its attendants and inmates maltreated, the interior of the building sacked, and in spite of the personal efforts of Chief Decker, it was fired and burned. Robbery was freely indulged in, and many women who were of the rioters carried off booty.

The armory on Second Avenue, in which some arms and

munitions were stored, although guarded by a squad of men, was soon taken possession of, its contents seized, and the building burned. This was not accomplished until at least five of the mob were killed and many more wounded by the police. In the lower part of the city the assaults of the rioters were mainly upon unoffending colored men.

At least one dozen were brutally murdered, while many more were beaten, and others driven into hiding or from the city. One colored man was caught, kicked, and mauled until life seemed extinct, and then his body was suspended from a tree and a fire kindled beneath it, the heat of which restored him to consciousness.

A demonstration was made against the *Tribune* newspaper office. The great mob from the vicinity of 46th Street reached the park near this office about five o'clock in the evening, and some of its leaders, breaking down the doors, rushed into the building and commenced destroying its contents, and preparing to burn it. A determined charge of the police, however, drove them out, and the building was saved.

The police, though heroic in their efforts to protect the city, were only partially successful. The draft was suspended. The building on Broadway near 28th Street, in part occupied as an office by Provost-Marshal Marrierre, was fired, and the entire block burned. The Bull's Head Hotel on 44th Street was likewise burned to the ground because its proprietor declined to furnish liquor to the mob. The residences of Provost-Marshal Jenkins and Postmaster Wakeman and two brown-stone dwellings on Lexington Avenue were also destroyed by fire, and several members of the police and marines were stoned to death, and others fatally injured.

The Board of Aldermen met and adopted a resolution instructing a committee to report a plan whereby an appropriation could be made to pay the commutation (\$300) of such of the poorest citizens as might be conscripted. General Wool, who commanded the Department, issued a call to the discharged returned soldiers to tender their services to the Mayor for the defence of the city. This call met with some response on the

following morning, and General Harvey Brown assumed command of the troops in the city. The second day (14th) the riot was even more malignant than on the first. The mob had complete control of the city and spread terror wherever it moved.

Governor Horatio Seymour now reached the city, and promptly issued a proclamation, commanding the rioters to disperse to their homes under penalty of his using all power necessary to restore peace and order. The riot continuing, he, on the same day, issued another proclamation, declaring the city in a state of insurrection, and giving notice that all persons resisting any force called out to quell the insurrection would be liable to the penalties prescribed by law. These proclamations, however, had little effect. The second day was attended with still further atrocities upon negroes. The mob in its brutality regarded neither age, infirmity, nor sex. Whenever and wherever a colored population was found, death was their inexorable fate. Whole neighborhoods inhabited by them were burned out.

On several occasions the small military force collected on the second day met and turned back the rioters by firing ball cartridges. Lieutenant Wood, in command of 150 regular troops from Fort Lafayette, in dispersing about 2000 men assembled in the vicinity of Grand and Pitt Streets, was obliged to fire bullets into them, killing about a score, and wounding many, two children among the number. This mob was dispersed. Citizens organized to defend themselves and the city.

Governor Seymour spoke to an immense gathering from the City Hall steps, and counselled obedience to law and the constituted authorities. He read a letter to show that he was trying to have the draft suspended, and announced that he had information that it was postponed in the city of New York. This announcement did something to allay the excitement and to prevent a spread of the riot.

Colonel O'Brien, with a detachment of troops, was ordered to disperse a mob in Third Avenue. He was successful in turning it back, but sprained his ankle during the excitement,

and stopped in a drug store on 32d Street, while his command passed on. A body of rioters discovering him, surrounded the store and threatened its destruction. He stepped out, and was at once struck senseless, and the crowd fell upon his prostrate form, beating, stamping, and mutilating it. For hours his body was dragged up and down the pavement in the most inhuman manner, after which it was carried to the front of his residence, where, with shouts and jeers, the same treatment was repeated.

The absent militia were hurried home from Pennsylvania, and by the 15th the riot had so far spent itself that many of its leaders had fallen or were taken prisoners, and the mob was broken into fragments and more easily coped with. Mayor Opdyke, in announcing that the riot was substantially at an end, advised voluntary associations to be maintained to assure good order, and thereafter business was cautiously resumed.

Archbishop John Hughes caused to be posted about the city, on the 16th, a card inviting men "called in many of the papers rioters" to assemble the next day to hear a speech from him. At the appointed hour about 5000 persons met in front of his residence, when the Archbishop, clad in his purple robes and other insignia of his high sacerdotal function, spoke to them from his balcony. He appealed to their patriotism, and counselled obedience to law as a tenet of the Catholic faith. He told them "no government can stand or protect itself unless it protects its citizens." He appealed to them to go to their homes and thereafter do no unlawful act of violence. This assembly dispersed peaceably, and the great riot was ended.

But the draft had been suspended for the time, and Governor Seymour had given some assurance it would not again be resumed in the city. The municipal authorities had passed a bill to pay the \$300 commutation, or substitute money, to drafted men of the poorer classes.

The total killed and wounded during the riots is unknown. Governor Seymour, in a Message, said the "number of killed and wounded is estimated by the police to be at least one

thousand." The rioters, as usual, suffered the most. Claims against the city for damages for property destroyed were presented, aggregating \$2,500,000, and the city paid claimants about \$1,500,000.

This brief summary of the great New York riot is given to explain movements of troops soon to be mentioned. But in order to afford the reader a fuller conception of the opposition encountered by Federal officers in the enforcement of the conscript laws, it should be said in this connection that draft riots, on a small scale, took place in Boston, Mass.; Troy, N.Y.; Portsmouth, N. H., and in Holmes County, Ohio, and at other places.

We left the Army of the Potomac in Maryland, at the close of the arduous Gettysburg campaign, watching the Army of Northern Virginia, just escaped across the Potomac.

Harper's Ferry had been reoccupied by Union troops as early as July 6, 1863. Meade moved his army to that place, and promptly crossing the Potomac and the Shenandoah River near its mouth, took possession of the gaps of the Blue Ridge, and marched southward along its eastern slope. Passing through Upperville and Piedmont towards Manassas Gap and Front Royal, he threatened Lee's line of retreat to his old position behind the Rapidan, and thus compelled the Confederate Army to evacuate the Shenandoah Valley somewhat precipitately.

At Wapping Heights, near Manassas Gap, on the 23d of July, a somewhat lively action took place between portions of the two armies in which my troops were engaged and suffered a small loss. The enemy were driven back, and one corps of Lee's army was forced to retreat *via* routes higher up the valley. There were lively skirmishes between the 14th of July and August 1st, at Halltown, Shepherdstown, Snicker's Gap, Berry's Ferry, Ashby's Gap, Chester Gap, Battle Mountain, Kelly's Ford, and Brandy Station, but each and all of these were without material results. By the 26th of July the Army of the Potomac arrived in the vicinity of Warrenton, Virginia, and occupied the north bank of the Rappahannock, while the

Army of Northern Virginia took position behind the Rapidan, covering its fords. Both of these great armies were now allowed by their commanders to remain quiet to recuperate. Occasional collisions occurred between picket posts and scouting detachments, but none worthy of special notice.

It having been determined by the War Department to enforce the draft in New York and Brooklyn, and a recurrence of the riots being again imminent, orders were issued to send veteran troops to New York harbor for such disposition and service as the exigencies might require. Western troops were mainly selected, and, with a view to sending me upon this service, I was ordered on the 14th of August to Alexandria with the 110th and 122d Ohio, the former in command of Lieutenant-Colonel Foster and the latter in that of Colonel Wm. H. Ball. On the 16th I embarked these regiments and the 3d Michigan on a transport ship at Alexandria, with instructions from Halleck to report on my arrival in New York Harbor to General E. R. S. Canby.¹ On reaching our destination, my troops, with others from the Army of the Potomac, were distributed throughout both cities. My own headquarters were for a short time on Governor's Island, then more permanently at Carroll Park, Brooklyn.

The threatened riots and the incipient movements to again prevent the draft were easily averted, as it was evident that no unlawful assemblage of persons would be tolerated by the authorities when backed by veteran soldiers. This service proved to be a great picnic for the men. Officers and soldiers were received warmly everywhere in the cities, and socially feasted and flattered. It was evident, however, that the good people had not yet recovered from the terrors of the recent riots, and they manifested a painful apprehension that a recurrence of these would take place. The draft, however, went on peacefully, and when all danger seemed past the troops were ordered to return to their proper corps in the Army of the Potomac.

At a public breakfast given to the soldiers of the 110th Ohio

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part II., pp. 46, 54.

in Carroll Park, Brooklyn, a very aged man appeared with a morning paper, and asked and was granted permission to read President Lincoln's memorable and characteristic letter of August 26, 1863, addressed to Hon. James C. Conkling, of Illinois, in response to an invitation to attend a mass-meeting at Springfield, "of unconditional Union men." This letter answered many objections urged against the President on account of the conduct of the war, his Emancipation Proclamation, and his purpose to enlist colored men as soldiers. For perspicuity, terseness, plainness, and conclusiveness of argument this letter stands among the best of all President Lincoln's writings. It came at an opportune time, and it did much to silence the caviler, to satisfy the doubter, and to reconcile honest people who sincerely desired the complete restoration of the Union. Its effect was especially salutary and satisfying to the soldiers in the field, who, somehow, felt that the burden of maintaining the Union rested unequally upon them.

Addressing those who were dissatisfied with him, and desired *peace*, he said:

"You desire peace, and you blame me that we do not have it. But how can we attain it? There are but three conceivable ways: First, to suppress the rebellion by force of arms. This I am trying to do. Are you for it? If you are, so far we are agreed. If you are not for it, a second way is to give up the Union. I am against this. Are you for it? If you are, you should say so plainly. If you are not for force, nor yet for *dissolution*, there only remains some imaginable *compromise*. I do not believe that any compromise embracing a maintenance of the Union is now possible."

To those who opposed the Emancipation Proclamation, and desired its revocation, he said:

"You say it is unconstitutional. I think differently. I think the Constitution invests its Commander-in-Chief with the law of war in time of war. The most that can be said, if so much, is, that slaves are property. Is there, has there ever been, any question that by the laws of war, property, both of enemies and friends, may be taken when needed?"

And further :

“ But the Proclamation, as law, either is valid or is not valid. If it is not valid it needs no retraction. If it is valid it cannot be retracted, any more than the dead can be brought to life.”

And still further :

“ You say that you will not fight to free negroes. Some of them seem willing to fight for you ; but no matter. Fight you, then, exclusively to save the Union. I issued the Proclamation on purpose to aid you in saving the Union. . . . I thought that whatever negroes can be got to do as soldiers leaves just so much less for white soldiers to do in saving the Union.

“ The signs look better. The Father of Waters again goes unvexed to the sea. Thanks to the great Northwest for it ; nor yet wholly to them. Three hundred miles up they met New England, Empire, Keystone, and Jersey, hewing their way right and left. The sunny South, too, in more colors than one, also lent a helping hand. On the spot, their part of the history was jotted down in black and white. The job was a great national one, and let none be slighted who bore an honorable part in it. And while those who have cleared the great river may well be proud, even that is not all. It is hard to say that anything has been more bravely and well done than at Antietam, Murfreesboro, Gettysburg, and on fields of less note. Nor must Uncle Sam's web feet be forgotten. At all the watery margins they have been present, not only on the deep sea, the broad bay, and the rapid river, but also up the narrow, muddy bayou, and wherever the ground was a little damp they have been and made their tracks. Thanks to all.”

During my stay in New York my wife visited me, and accompanied me with the troops to Alexandria.

On the 6th of September the Ohio troops of my command took ship, and when landed at Alexandria, Virginia, marched to Fox's Ford on the Rappahannock, and on the 14th rejoined the Third Corps, having been absent one month.

The next day the whole army moved across the river and encamped around Culpepper Court-House.



CHAPTER IV

ADVANCE OF LEE'S ARMY, OCTOBER, 1863, AND RETREAT OF ARMY OF THE POTOMAC TO CENTREVILLE—BATTLE OF BRISTOE STATION—ADVANCE OF THE UNION ARMY, NOVEMBER, 1863—ASSAULT AND CAPTURE OF RAPPAHANNOCK STATION, AND FORCING THE FORDS—AFFAIR NEAR BRANDY STATION AND RETREAT OF CONFEDERATE ARMY BEHIND THE RAPIDAN—INCIDENTS, ETC.

EVENTS occurred elsewhere that affected the aspect of affairs in Virginia.

General Rosecrans, early in September, commenced to move the Army of the Cumberland across the Tennessee River into Georgia, his objective being Chattanooga. Burnside about the same time began a movement towards Knoxville, and on the way recaptured Cumberland Gap. The Confederate authorities, fearing Bragg was in danger, decided to send large reinforcements to his army, and, on September 9, 1863, Longstreet, with two divisions of his corps and a complement of artillery, was dispatched by rail from Lee to reinforce Bragg. The sanguinary battle of Chickamauga was fought on the 19th and 20th of September. It resulted in Rosecrans and his army gaining possession of Chattanooga, and Bragg and his army being left in possession of the battlefield. Rosecrans held Chattanooga in little less than a state of siege; his communications were in danger of being effectively cut off, and to aid his imperilled forces the Eleventh and Twelfth Corps of the Army of the Potomac were, on September 24th, ordered west, in command of General Joseph Hooker.

The loss of these corps reduced the relative strength of Meade's army to Lee's materially below what it was before Longstreet's two divisions were detached from the latter's army.

Elliott was relieved of the command of the Third Division, Third Corps of the Army of the Potomac, October 3, 1863, and ordered to report to Rosecrans. General Joseph B. Carr (Troy, N. Y.) succeeded him. Carr was a charming man socially, of fine appearance, amiable and lovable, but not strong as a soldier. He was understood to be a favorite of the President, who appointed him Brigadier-General September 7, 1862; the Senate, however, failing to confirm him, the President reappointed him in March, 1863, with rank from date of first appointment, thus giving him high rank in spite of the Senate. He was finally confirmed, on a third appointment in 1864, through some compromise, after a sharp controversy between the President and the Senate, but with junior rank, and then ordered to Butler's army.¹

For a time active operations were not contemplated by Meade. But Lee, about the 9th of October, crossed the Rappahannock and commenced a movement around Meade's right, threatening his rear. This compelled Meade to retire across the Rappahannock, and by the 14th to Centreville and Union Mills, near the first Bull Run battle-field.

On the 13th, while my brigade, with a New York battery temporarily attached to it, was holding "Three Mile Station," near Warrenton, and skirmishing with the enemy, ballot-boxes were opened, and a *regular* election was held for the Ohio troops, both the boxes and ballots being carried to the voters along the battle-line so they might vote without breaking it.²

The Third Corps encamped at night at Greenwich. The next morning I was ordered with my brigade and Captain McKnight's battery (N. Y.) to cover, as a rear-guard, the retreat of the Third Corps to Manassas Heights *via* Bristoe Station. My orders were to avoid anything like a general engagement,

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part II., p. 34.

² This was in the famous Brough-Vallandigham Ohio election for Governor.
VOL. II.—4.

but to beat back the advancing enemy whenever possible, prevent captures, and baffle him in his endeavors to delay or reach the main column. The successful conduct of a rear-guard of a retreating army, when pursued by an energetic foe, requires not only bravery but skill and tact. After the main body of my corps had left camp on its march towards Bristoe, and soon after daylight, the head of Lieutenant-General A. P. Hill's corps appeared from the direction of Warrenton. I displayed my troops with as much show of strength as possible, and with a few shots from the battery forced the enemy to halt his head of column and form line of battle. I thereupon retired my command quickly, and resumed the march until the enemy again pushed forward by the flank too near for my safety, when, in a chosen position, my troops were again speedily brought into line and a fire opened, which necessarily compelled him to halt and again make disposition for battle. This movement was frequently repeated. At each such halt the enemy necessarily consumed much time, thus giving the main body of the corps ample opportunity to proceed leisurely towards its destination. The weak or broken-down men of the rear-guard were not required to halt and fight, but were allowed to make such speed as they could. The day was almost spent when a courier reached me from French with the information that the corps had passed Bristoe Station, and was on the north side of Broad Run. Having now no further responsibility than for the safety of my own command, I moved more rapidly, and by 4 P.M. I had safely passed Bristoe Station to the high ground north of Broad Run, from whence I could, from a distance of less than a mile, see Bristoe, and, for a considerable distance, the line of railroad running, in general direction, north and south. The Third Corps had moved on out of sight towards the heights at Manassas. My command was much wearied, and I halted it for a short rest, but I soon ordered it forward where it took position in obedience to an order of General Meade to cover a blind road over which he feared the enemy might march to seize the heights.

General A. P. Hill, in his report of the day, says:

"From this point (Greenwich) to Bristoe we followed close upon the rear of the Third Corps, picking up about 150 [?] stragglers. Upon reaching the hills this side of Broad Run, and overlooking the plain on the north side, the Third Corps was discovered resting, a portion of it just commencing the march toward Mannassas. I determined that no time must be lost, and hurried up Heth's division, forming it in line of battle along the crest of the hills and parallel to Broad Run. Poague's battalion was brought to the front and directed to open on the enemy. They were evidently taken by surprise, and retired in the utmost confusion [?]. Seeing this, General Heth was directed to advance his line until he reached the run, and then to move by the left flank, cross at the ford, and press the enemy. This order was being promptly obeyed, when I perceived the enemy's skirmishers making their appearance on this side of Broad Run, and on the right and rear of Heth's division. Word was sent to General Cooke, commanding the right brigade of Heth's division, to look out for his right flank, and he promptly changed front of one of his regiments and drove the enemy back. . . . In the meantime I sent back to General Anderson to send McIntosh's battalion to the front, and to take two brigades to the position threatened and protect the right flank of Heth. . . . The three brigades advanced in beautiful order and quite steadily. Cooke's brigade, upon reaching the crest of the hill in their front, came within full view of the enemy's line of battle behind the railroad embankment (the Second Corps), and of whose presence I was unaware."¹

Hill was unexpectedly caught in a fatal trap. He was mistaken about seeing any considerable portion of the Third Corps north of Broad Run, or as to any of it being taken by surprise and retiring in confusion. But for my halting my command to rest he would have seen little of it. We had baffled the head of his column all day, and had passed beyond danger for the time, and, according to his report, we had killed and wounded many more than we had lost. The stragglers he reported captured could not have been of my command, as it left no men behind.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 426.

The fortuitous circumstance of Warren arriving at Bristoe with the head of the Second Corps moving on a road paralleling the railroad, just at the moment Hill was deploying his forces for an attack on the Third Corps, led to a serious and bloody battle. When the rear-guard of the Third Corps passed Bristoe Station, no part of the Second was in sight. I saw no part of it until after Hill commenced arraying his troops on the crest of the hills south of Broad Run. Seeing a battle was on, and my own command too far on its way and too much exhausted to be recalled in time to participate in it, I dismounted from a tired horse and, with a single staff officer, ate a lunch from my orderly's haversack¹ and watched the progress of the engagement. It is a rare occurrence that any person has an opportunity to quietly witness the whole of a considerable battle. From my position I could see between the lines of the opposing forces; I could note the manœuvres of each separate organization; and I could almost anticipate to a certainty the result of the attacks and counter attacks. It was at first plainly evident that each commander knew little of what he had to meet. Lieutenant-General Hill's formation, as described by him in his report, was arranged with reference to a supposed force north of Broad Run, and was consequently very faulty. Warren had no notice of the presence of an enemy until Hill ran unexpectedly into his line of march. Hill seemed to be eager for a fight with the Third Corps, then far beyond his reach, and found one with the Second Corps, which was quietly marching to a concentration near Centreville. General Warren's command was strung out upon the road, and he had no order of battle. Hill, with two divisions, and others soon to arrive, was better prepared, though his formation was bad, to meet the Second Corps. Warren wisely used the slightly raised railroad bed for a breastwork, and promptly opened the battle without giving the enemy time for a change of position or for new formations. The battle was at first with musketry, but artillery soon arrived on both sides and opened fire at short range. Warren, in his

¹ This lunch consisted of a box of sardines and "hardtack."

report, after describing the preliminary movements of his command for position, says:

"A more inspiring scene could not be imagined. The enemy's line of battle boldly moving forward, one part of our own steadily awaiting it, and another moving against it at double-quick, while the artillery was taking up a position at a gallop and going into action. . . . Under our fire the repulse of the enemy soon became assured, and Arnold's battery arrived in time to help increase his demoralization and reach the fugitives.

The enemy was gallantly led, as the wounding of three of his general officers in this attack shows, and even in retiring many retired but sullenly. An advance of a thin line along our front secured 450 prisoners, two stand of colors, and five field pieces."¹

The battle was of short duration, but owing to the exposed position of the Confederates their losses were great, and out of proportion to short engagements generally. General Warren and his officers justly won honors for meeting the emergency so handsomely.

Hill's command was so signally defeated that the Second Corps remained in possession of the field until 9 P.M., when it pursued its march unmolested to a junction with the main army. Hill reported his loss, killed, wounded, and missing, at 1378,² but it was claimed on good authority to have been much larger. The loss in the Second Corps at Bristoe is not given separately, but its total losses in two engagements of the day, including Bristoe, were 546.³

Hill's conduct was criticised, and his report bears, of dates in November, 1863, the following indorsements:

"General Hill explains how, in his haste to attack the Third Army Corps of the enemy, he overlooked the presence of the Second, which was the cause of the disaster that ensued.

"R. E. LEE, General."

"The disaster at Bristoe Station seems due to a gallant but over-hasty pressing on of the enemy.

"J. A. SEDDON, Secretary of War."

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 242.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 250, 428.

"There was a want of vigilance, by reason of which it appears the Third Army Corps of the enemy got a position, giving great advantage to them.

"J. D." (Davis)¹

The last two indorsements do not show that Seddon and Davis clearly comprehended the real situation.

Lee by continued flank movements indicated a purpose to force the Union Army back into its intrenchments at Alexandria, but this plan was abandoned after the disaster at Bristoe. Soon the Confederates commenced falling back towards the Rappahannock, destroying the railroad track and bridges, and Lee finally put his army into camp on the Botts plantation, near Brandy Station. He built winter quarters there, keeping possession of the fords of the Rappahannock, and strongly fortifying north of the river at Rappahannock Station.

The Union Army commenced a cautious forward movement on the 19th of October, keeping close to the Orange and Alexandria Railroad. On the 21st I encamped on the battlefield of Bristoe, and we finished the burial of the dead. On the 26th, about 9 P.M., an order came advising me that General John Buford's cavalry division was threatened and in peril near Catlett's Station, and directing me to go to his relief. My brigade, with a battery attached, reached him about midnight, and under his direction formed line of battle, my left resting on the railroad, the cavalry on the flanks. He had been attacked at dark by what seemed to be an overwhelming force of infantry and cavalry, but he had stubbornly held his ground. Buford was an accomplished soldier and a hard fighter. He it was who opened the battle of Gettysburg on Seminary Hill.

When the best possible dispositions had been made for the expected attack of the morning, he invited me to an excuse for a headquarters, consisting of a tattered tent-fly. The night was dark and rainy, and everybody was wet and uncomfortable. The bronzed old soldier, from some hidden recess, had an orderly produce a bottle of whisky, the corkage of which

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 428.

was perfect, and, in the absence of a corkscrew, presented a problem. He said, "All right, you hold the candle." He held the bottle in his left hand, and with his sword in the right struck the neck of it so skilfully as to cut it off smoothly. The problem was solved. Further details are unnecessary. I understood the art of making drinking-cups by cutting a bottle in two with a strong string, but this feat of Buford's was new to me.¹

John Buford died of disease, December 16, 1863, a Major-General of Volunteers. He had won great renown as an able, fighting soldier.

Lee was not to be allowed to rest in his chosen winter quarters. On the 7th of November the Army of the Potomac moved to the fords on the Rappahannock, and preparation was made to pass them, although they were strongly defended by the enemy. The Third Corps massed at Kelly's Ford, some five miles below Rappahannock Station. This corps forced a crossing about 5 P.M., and massed in battle order on the bluffs near the river. My command did no fighting this day. The Third Brigade, with some assistance from the Second brigade of the First Division of the Sixth Corps, at dusk, under the leadership of the accomplished General David A. Russell, gallantly assaulted and carried the strongly fortified *tête-de-pont* on the north of the river at Rappahannock Station. The principal parts of Hoke's and Hay's brigades of Early's division of Ewell's corps were captured, numbering, including killed and wounded, 1630. Russell's loss in this affair, all told, was 327. He captured seven battle flags and Green's battery of four rifled guns.² Lee had intended to hold this position as a centre, and then fall, alternately, on the divided portions of the Army of the Potomac after they crossed the river above and below it.³ Its loss forced him to retire from

¹ A string drawn tightly around a bottle where the cut is desired to be made, and then rapidly drawn back and forth until the friction heats the glass, renders it easy to be separated by a sharp jar against the hand or some hard substance.

² Three of these had belonged to Randolph's battery, lost at Winchester.—*War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 626.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 613-616.

the river and take position in front of Culpepper Court-House, with his right resting on Mount Pony.

The next day the principal part of Meade's army, having succeeded in crossing the river, was moved forward to tender battle. Late in the afternoon I was ordered to dislodge the enemy from a hill (Miller's) about two miles in front of Brandy Station. The place was held by artillery and infantry, flanked by cavalry. This was Lee's most advanced position, and it was held firmly as a point of observation. My command was disposed for the attack in the following order: The 138th Pennsylvania (Colonel McClennan) was moved on the left of the railroad to threaten the enemy on his right; the 122d Ohio (Colonel W. H. Ball) followed in support. The 110th Ohio (Lieutenant-Colonel Foster) was put on the right of the railroad, with orders to move directly on the height occupied by the enemy; the 6th Maryland (Colonel John W. Horn) in support, but some distance to the right. There was no artillery at hand, and the attack was ordered at once. The formation was made in plain view of the enemy. The distance to the hill was about one half mile. The 138th drew the enemy's artillery fire, but continued its advance. The 6th pushed forward into a wood on the right to make a demonstration, and in person I led the 110th to the real work. Not a gun was fired by my men as they advanced to the charge. I made every exertion possible to hasten the troops, but when they reached the foot of the hill the enemy's artillery was withdrawn, and his infantry made a precipitate retreat. I was the first to gain the crest, being mounted, and with pistol fired on the retiring troops not two hundred feet away. A Confederate was reported wounded with a pistol ball at this place. This is the nearest I can come to having personally injured, in any way, any person in battle. We pushed on to Brandy Station without further orders, driving the enemy until we met a more formidable force, with several batteries of artillery, which compelled us to halt. Night came on, and the day's work ended by our going into bivouac at the Station. Captain Address of the 138th was the only officer of my command

killed, and my loss was otherwise light. We made the charge with the commanding General—Meade—and much of his army looking on. It was Meade's belief that behind the heights assaulted would be found Lee's army arrayed for battle.

Though Lee had selected a strong position (as already stated) in front of Culpepper Court-House, and fortified it somewhat, he decided it was not a good one, and therefore declined battle north of the Rapidan,¹ and, by the morning of the 9th of November, his army was south of this historic stream.

The Army of Northern Virginia never again crossed the Rapidan or Rappahannock. Henceforth it was to be confined to a narrower theatre of operations, and a closer defence of the capital of the Confederate States, but this defence was still to be most memorable and boody, even in comparison with what had gone before.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., pp. 611, 616 (Lee's Report).





CHAPTER V

MINE RUN CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF ORANGE GROVE, NOVEMBER, 1863 — WINTER CANTONMENT (1863-64) OF ARMY OF THE POTOMAC AT CULPEPPER COURT-HOUSE, AND ITS REORGANIZATION—GRANT ASSIGNED TO COMMAND THE UNION ARMIES, AND PREPARATION FOR AGGRESSIVE WAR

THOUGH the roads were bad from frequent rains and much use, and November winds warned that winter was at hand to stop further field campaigning on an extended scale, and though all attempts to cross the Rapidan in the fine weather of the spring and summer had failed, yet, when the Army of the Potomac was again bivouacked at Culpepper, the public cry was heard—"On to Richmond!"

Lee's last campaign was looked upon in high quarters as a big bluff that should have been "called" by Meade while the Army of Northern Virginia was north of the Rappahannock. Meade, however, acted persistently and conscientiously on his own judgment, formed in the light of the best knowledge he could obtain. He would not stand driving, and was something of a bulldozer himself, and sometimes—said to have been caused by fits of dyspepsia—was unreasonably irascible, and displayed a most violent temper towards superiors and inferiors. Notwithstanding this, he never lost his equipoise or acted upon impulse alone, and he never permitted mere appearances to move him. Nor could his superiors induce him to act against his judgment as to a particular military situation. It will be remembered that he was urged to fight

Lee north of the Potomac after Gettysburg. He was urged to bring on a battle before the departure of the Eleventh and Twelfth Corps for the West, and when Lee moved north on his flank his opportunity seemed to have come to fight a battle, but his fear of the same strategy displayed by the Confederate Army in the second Bull Run campaign against Pope induced him to be over-cautious, and to so concentrate his army as to avoid the possibility of its being beaten in detachments.

The next day (October 16th), after Meade reached Centreville, the President, in his anxiety that Lee should not again escape without a general battle, addressed this characteristic note to Halleck:

"If General Meade can now attack him (Lee) on a field no more than equal for us, and do so with all the skill and courage which he, his officers, and men possess, the honor will be his if he succeeds, and the blame may be mine if he fails.

"Yours truly,

"A. LINCOLN."

This note was forwarded to Meade.

To this he answered that it had been his intention to attack the enemy when his exact whereabouts was discovered; that lack of information as to Lee's position and intentions and the fear of jeopardizing his communications with Washington had prevented his doing so sooner. But the pressure continued. Halleck, the 18th, wired Meade:

"Lee is unquestionably bullying you. If you cannot ascertain his movements, I certainly cannot. If you pursue and fight him, I think you will find out where he is. I know of no other way."

This was too much for Meade's temper. He responded:

" . . . If you have any orders to give me I am prepared to receive and obey them, but I must insist on being spared the infliction of such truisms in the guise of opinion as you have recently honored me with, particularly as they have not been asked for. I

take this occasion to repeat what I have before stated, that if my course, based on my own judgment, does not meet with approval, I ought to be, and I desire to be, relieved from command."

Although Halleck apologized "if he had unintentionally given offence," and Meade thanked him for the "explanation," these and other like occurrences had their influence on Meade's conduct.

As he had failed to bring Lee to bay at Culpepper, the only opportunity to do so must be sought south of the Rapidan. Meade was not averse to battle.

On November 26, 1863, Meade's army was put in motion with a view to a general concentration south of the Rapidan, at Robertson's Tavern on the turnpike road, by evening of that day. Lee's army of about 50,000 men was mainly massed and in winter quarters in front of Orange Court-House, with an intrenched line in its front across the plank road and turnpike, extending to the river.

Meade's design was, by a rapid movement, to carry this line before Lee had time to concentrate behind it.

The Fifth Corps (Sykes) was directed to cross the Rapidan at Culpepper Mine Ford, and thence move by the plank road to Parker's Store and the junction of the road to Robertson's Tavern; the First Corps (Newton), with two divisions, to follow the Fifth. The Second Corps (Warren) was to force a crossing at Germanna Ford, thence march directly to Robertson's Tavern, and there await the arrival of other corps.

The Third Corps (General William H. French), followed closely by the Sixth (Sedgwick), was directed to cross at Jacob's Ford (Mill), and continue the march, bearing to the left, to Robertson's Tavern. Jacob's Ford, with its steep banks, proved so difficult to pass that some delay occurred, and the artillery had to be sent around by Germanna Ford, and did not rejoin the corps until the morning of the 27th. Jacob's Ford was the highest up the river, and consequently brought French, on passing it, in close proximity to the enemy. Lee, by the evening of the 26th, had thrown forward

BATTLE OF WILDERNESS MAY 1864

ORANGE RIVER
PLANK ROAD
ORANGE TAVERN
WILDERNESS TAVERN
NEW HOPE CHURCH
MARKER'S STORE
GERMANIA FORD
CLAY'S BRIDGE
CHOPIN'S BRIDGE
WITCHELL'S BRIDGE
NORTON'S FORD
RACON FORD
BATTLE OF WILDERNESS
CONFEDERATE POSITION (GENERAL LEE.)
CONFEDERATE POSITION (GENERAL MEADE.)
NOV 28th - DEC 1st 1863
NOV 30th
NOV 27th 1863
PRINCE
TOM MORRIS
WIDOW LEFER
ARMY
CORPS NOV 27th 1863
FRENCH
ROBERTSON'S TAVERN
ORANGE
TURNPIKE
BATTLE OF WILDERNESS

cavalry and some infantry of Hill's corps to the vicinity of Robertson's Tavern, though not in sufficient force to prevent Warren taking his designated position. Nor was Sykes seriously interfered with. The cavalry crossed at Ely's and other fords. French, with the aid of pontoons, safely passed the river, but he did not advance on the 26th more than three miles beyond the crossing, time having been lost in hunting blind country roads, waiting for artillery to arrive, and reconnoitring. A force of the enemy showed itself on intersecting roads to his right, where were a number of such roads leading from Sisson, Witchell, Tobaccostick and Morton's Fords, and one which led from Raccoon Ford—still higher up the river—to an intersection at Jones' house, with the most direct road to the Tavern. The enemy's intrenchments covered a considerable part of this last road, from which he could easily debouch and attack the flank and rear or the trains of the marching columns.¹ These conditions rendered French's situation perilous, and caused him to move with extreme caution, as the Sixth Corps could not arrive until he was out of the way. Notwithstanding French had some miles farther to march than Warren, and unusual difficulties to overcome or guard against, Meade dispatched him, as early as 1 P.M. of the 26th, that his delay was retarding the operations of Warren, and again at 3 P.M. he dispatched French:

"I would not move forward farther from the river than to clear the way for General Sedgwick, until he comes up and crosses."

The Second Division, General Henry Prince, with some cavalry, was in the advance; the Third, Carr's, and the First, General David B. Birney's, following in the order named. At the Widow Morris', a somewhat obscure road bore off abruptly to the left, but which, somewhat circuitously, led to Robertson's Tavern. The head of Prince's column, however, was on the more direct road to Tom Morris' house, with flankers and cavalry well to the right. These were soon attacked and driven in or recalled.

¹ See sketch attached to Meade's report, *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 19.

It seems Prince was led to believe he was in communication with Warren's left.¹

It soon became evident that the head of French's column was near the Raccoon Ford road, and the intrenchments held by at least two divisions of Ewell's corps of Lee's army, and there seemed to be no possible chance to extricate it without a battle.

At 11.45 A.M., on the 27th, Meade dispatched French

"If you cannot unite with Warren by the route you are on, you must move through to him by the left."

At 1.45 P.M. Meade again dispatched French:

"Attack the enemy in your front immediately, throwing your left forward to connect with General Warren at Robertson's Tavern. The object of an attack is to form junction with General Warren, which must be effected immediately."

Prince had, by this time, formed line of battle and engaged the enemy. Carr's division was ordered forward to take position on Prince's left, and at 3 P.M. Birney's division was ordered to form in support of Carr.

Prince covered the road leading to a junction with the Raccoon Ford road. The First Brigade of Carr's division (General W. H. Morris) moved to the left of Prince, my brigade—the Second—was ordered to pass behind Morris, and take position on his left, and Colonel B. F. Smith's brigade—the Third—was sent to my left.

Morris became somewhat entangled in a ravine and in thick timber, and was slow in forming good line. In this position he was fired upon from a ridge not two hundred yards from his front, the bullets falling among my men as they passed his rear. I appealed to Morris to face to the front, charge, and take the ridge, but he declined to do so for want of orders.

As soon as I could get my two leading regiments, 110th and 122d Ohio, on Morris' left, I led them to the crest of the

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 738.

ridge, captured some prisoners, and posted the regiments in good position behind a fence on the summit. My other regiments, 6th Maryland and 138th Pennsylvania, successively, on their arrival, took position on the left of the Ohio troops. The ridge which extended to my right along Morris' front was still held by the enemy in strong force, and both my flanks were threatened. Through a misunderstanding of orders the Ohio regiments fell back a short distance, but soon retook the crest and were again fiercely engaged, though under an enfilading fire of artillery and a galling fire of musketry. The ground being somewhat open to the front, I could see the enemy massing for an attack. I again, but vainly, appealed to Morris to advance and close the gap, as otherwise his position in the ravine and thick woods could not be held. The assault came, and Morris was forced, in some confusion, to retire. By refusing my right somewhat, I maintained my isolated position and threatened the enemy's right. The First Brigade, though composed in part of regiments not before in strong battle, was quickly re-formed, and, under Carr's order, soon obtained full possession of the ridge by a splendid charge, and thus the gap was closed. The battle by this time raged furiously all along the front. Colonel Smith, passing too far to the rear, lost his way in the thickets, and failed to come up on my left. He did not rejoin the division until the battle was over. This misfortune was hard to account for, as Colonel Smith was an intelligent, brave, and skilled officer—a graduate of West Point. He met some scouting parties of the enemy, and, as directed, sought to find a connection with troops of Warren's corps. His failure caused my left to remain uncovered.

Two assaults were made upon my line by the enemy in columns not less than three lines deep. The first came in front of Horn's regiment, but was anticipated, and McClellan's regiment, moving into the open ground, struck the right flank of the enemy and (firing buck and ball from .69 calibre muskets) did great execution. McClellan was severely wounded, and in consequence was obliged to leave the field.

The battle raged with unabated fury until dark, and as late as 8 P.M. enfilading shells from heavy guns on our right screamed and crashed through the timber over our heads, bursting with loud noise, producing a most hideous and weird appearance, but really doing little damage.

As night approached, the ammunition of my regiments gave out, and all my command, save one regiment, were relieved by regiments of Birney's division.¹

The bravery and fighting skill of Colonels Ball, Horn, and McClennan, also of Lieutenant-Colonels M. M. Granger and W. N. Foster, and Major Otho H. Binkley, and others, was most conspicuous. Lieutenant James A. Fox of the 110th here lost his life. He had risen from the ranks, but was a proud-spirited and promising officer. We buried him at midnight, in full uniform, wrapped in his blanket, behind a near-by garden fence.

I wish to bear testimony also, at this late day, to the quiet gallantry and high soldierly qualities of the long-since-dead General David B. Birney.² He did not obey orders to the letter only. His division being in reserve and support, he took position where he could watch the progress of the battle, and note in time when and where he was needed. He made no display on the field. When he noticed, by the slackening fire of my men, that their ammunition was about exhausted, he rode to my side and quietly suggested that he be allowed to order regiments from his own command to take their places. That there might not be, even momentarily, a break in the line, his regiments were moved up, and my men lay down while his stepped over them and opened fire. The relieved troops were then withdrawn and resupplied with ammunition.

While the battle was in progress, the Sixth Corps, still some distance to the rear, was directed by another road on Robertson's Tavern, and during the night the Third Corps was ordered to withdraw and follow the Sixth.

The enemy retired at the close of the battle, leaving in our

¹ Birney's Report, *War Records*, vol. xxvii., Part I., p. 750.

² He died of disease October 18, 1864.



BREVET BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN W. HORN,
SIXTH MARYLAND VOLUNTEERS.
(Taken from a photograph, 1864)



BREVET BRIGADIER-GENERAL M. R. MCCLENNAN,
138TH PENNSYLVANIA VOLUNTEERS.
(Taken from a photograph, 1864)

possession his dead, unburied, and his wounded on the field and in hospitals. We fought a great part, if not all, of Ewell's corps.

Casualties were reported in thirteen Confederate brigades, in forty-four regiments, and in the artillery of Early, Johnston, and Rodes' divisions, total 601.¹

The losses in the Third Corps were 10 officers and 115 enlisted men killed, 28 officers and 719 enlisted men wounded, total 872.

The brigades of Morris and Keifer suffered the most severely, although Prince's division was first engaged. My own killed and wounded numbered 172, those of Prince's division 163. There were no captured or missing men of my command.

This engagement has been called by the Confederates the battle of Payne's Farm¹; but by the Union side it is generally known as the battle of Orange Grove; the place, however, is sometimes referred to as Locust Grove, and by both sides it is often mentioned as Mine Run, though in no proper sense did the contest occur on that stream.

The battle, fought by French under the circumstances narrated, gave rise to much crimination and recrimination between Generals Meade and French, and probably led to a reorganization of the Army of the Potomac four months later.

Meade attributed the miscarriage of the campaign to French's failure on the 26th, and his further failure on the 27th, to connect with Warren's left at Robertson's Tavern. He claimed that if such junction had been made he could have fallen on the portion of Lee's army on the turnpike and destroyed it, and that he would then have been able to seize the line behind Mine Run before Lee could occupy it with his united forces. Meade further contended that, on the 27th, French got on the wrong road, and, consequently, had to fight a fruitless battle alone, while the other corps of the army were standing idle, waiting for him. French stoutly insisted that his march, being on the extreme right and exposed flank, on the longest line, and *via* a difficult ford, without a good guide

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., pp. 836-8.
VOL. II.—5.

and over blind roads, with a doubt as to which one should be taken, warranted him in acting with caution, and in fighting where he did when he found his command attacked; and he further claimed that when he brought Ewell's corps to battle, Meade should have fallen on the enemy in Warren's front and overwhelmed it; that by fighting when and where he did, he was doing more than he otherwise could have done to prevent a concentration of the Confederate Army, especially in preventing it from massing in front of Robertson's Tavern. A considerable part of the Union Army sympathized with French, yet the fact remained that Meade's plan of concentration and of battle at the appointed time and place failed.

On the 28th the armies were brought face to face, the Confederate Army in fortifications behind and along the high west bank of Mine Run, both armies extending from a short distance south of the plank road to the north of the turnpike, in the direction of the battle-field of the 27th.¹ The Third Corps held the Union centre. Warren's corps, with a division of the Third Corps, was sent to reconnoitre for a point of attack on the Confederate right. Warren reported an attack there feasible. Other reconnoissances were made on the 29th, and Meade decided to assault from both flanks the next morning, the Sixth and Fifth Corps under Sedgwick on the enemy's left and the Second Corps and two divisions of the Third on his right. Carr's division of the Third marched at 4 A.M. two miles to the left and joined Warren's column. The night was cold and there was much suffering.

Warren had about 20,000 men in readiness, and was to attack at 8 A.M. at a signal from the batteries of the centre. Sedgwick was to attack an hour later. The signal batteries opened, and we stood, in grand array, soberly waiting for the order to charge. The enemy's strong works, with guns bristling in the morning sun, were in our immediate front. Minutes of delay were as hours to the waiting troops. Many sent up silent prayers for safety, and not unfrequently through the column there could be seen on a soldier's breast a paper giving

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 19. (Sketch).

his name, company, regiment, and home address, so, if killed, his body could be identified. Warren hesitated, and just before 9 A.M. dispatched Meade, then four miles distant:

“The full light of the sun shows me that I cannot succeed.”

Meade suspended Sedgwick's attack, then in progress, and hastened to Warren. I saw the two men at a small, green, pine wood fire, earnestly discussing the critical situation. Meade seemed to be censuring Warren, yet the latter adhered to his view that the assault could not be successfully made, and Meade yielded. Somehow the troops of the great column, before the final decision was announced, came to believe the charge would not be made, and they cautiously commenced badgering each other, soldier like, over wasted prayers. The different commands were later ordered to their former positions.

French opposed an assault on the centre. The enemy's position, naturally a strong one, had been greatly strengthened by labor. The wisdom of not making any assault, in the light of all the facts, was, I think, generally recognized. The season was unfavorable; Meade was a long distance from his base; success could only have been temporary and could not have been followed up, and defeat under the circumstances would have been a fatal catastrophe. Even Grant, in 1864, was “all summer” in trying to gather fruits of what were called successes.

The 1st of December was spent by both armies in watching each other, and behaving as if they dared each other to attack. “One was afraid and the other dare not”—but which?

The campaign had been delayed beyond expectation; all hope of gaining an advantage by a surprise or otherwise was passed, food was becoming scarce, and hence Meade decided to retire his army to its base of supplies. At dusk of the 1st, therefore, the Union Army moved by different roads to various fords of the Rapidan, the Third Corps to Culpepper Mine Ford, the farthest down the river of any used, and by 8 A.M. of the coming morning all had recrossed, and on the 3d they

were in their former camps at Brandy Station. The Army of the Potomac lost in this campaign, killed and wounded, 1272.¹

Thus ended the Mine Run campaign; not bloodless, yet disappointing, as were many others. In it Meade demonstrated his willingness to fight, and that his army was loyal to him. Another opportunity to fight a great battle in independent command on the field never came to him. His chief glory for all time must rest on Gettysburg.

Lee, the night of December 1st, feeling certain Meade would not assault him in his strong position, and knowing the latter was far from his base, in an unfamiliar country, encumbered with trains, determined to assume the offensive by throwing two of his divisions against Meade's left on the following morning. But Meade was safely away when morning came, and pursuit impossible.

Lee, it is said, was greatly chagrined over his lost opportunity, and exclaimed to his generals:

"I am too old to command this army; we should never have permitted these people to get away."²

Before starting on this campaign Meade expressed a purpose to take position in front of Fredericksburg, but Halleck disapproved the plan.³

The Army of the Potomac, having ended its historic work of the memorable year 1863, went into winter quarters around Culpepper Court-House, with Brandy Station for its base of supplies. My brigade occupied log huts on John Minor Bott's 'farm, partly constructed by the Confederates prior to November 8th.

The caring, in winter, for a large army calls for great vigilance, skill, and energy. The season not permitting much opportunity for drill, discipline is hard to maintain. Sickness

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 686.

² *Battles and Leaders*, vol. iii., p. 241 (Col. Venable).

³ *War Records*, vol. xxix., Part I., p. 18.

⁴ Botts was then on his farm—a Union man. He had been an old line Whig, and was personally hostile to Jeff. Davis.

becomes prevalent, and there is much unrest, both of officers and soldiers.

Camp guards, however, had to be maintained; also grand-guards and pickets around the front and flanks of the whole army. The freezing and thawing and the constant moving of supply trains caused deep mud in the roads and camps. The brigade commanders of the Third Corps, and of other corps as well, were, alternately, detailed as corps officer-of-the-day, the duties of which lasted twenty-four hours, and required the officer to be with the advance-guard and on the corps' picket lines to see that vigilance was preserved; that orders were understood and obeyed, and to report any unusual occurrences. He was required to visit all guards and pickets, personally, at least once by day and once by night. The Third Corps' advance line was from Mt. Pony, its left, around the front of Culpepper Court-House, covering the Madison Court-House road; in length about five miles. This service was arduous, trying, and, by night, attended with danger.

During my service as corps officer-of-the-day, in March, 1864, Lieutenant-Colonel Charles Townsend (106th N. Y.), in charge of the grand-guard on the Sperryville road, in violation of orders, admitted some refugee ladies, who presented a pass from an officer of an outer cavalry picket. The orders were to recognize no pass for a citizen not emanating from army headquarters. The Colonel reported the occurrence to me, and I disapproved his action, but made no report of it. The ladies, on some errand, reached headquarters, and told of their admittance on this road. Meade ordered me to report the delinquent officer, which I did, giving all excuses I could for him, but they were unavailing. I was ordered to prefer charges against Colonel Townsend, "for disobedience of orders." A general court-martial was called for his trial, of which General D. B. Birney was President, and, notwithstanding I had preferred the charges, I was made a member of it.

On the trial I protested my interest and asked the court to excuse me from sitting, but my request was refused. The court found Townsend guilty and sentenced him: "To be

suspended from rank and pay for two months." This sentence was approved by General Meade, April 1st, but Townsend's suspension from rank was remitted, and he was ordered to duty. He was a gallant and accomplished officer, and, feeling keenly the disgrace, rushed to his death at Cold Harbor just after the sixty days' suspension of pay elapsed. The incident illustrates the severity of discipline and the fate of war.

The soldiers of the army, as far as possible, were kept active, but the cold winter, with frequent rains, caused much discomfort, and many were in hospital; few were furloughed. Many rude log chapels were erected and used, often alternately, for religious worship, lectures, concerts, readings, and dances. Civilian visitors were, at times, numerous. One most notable army ball was given at the headquarters of General Joseph B. Carr. This event took place January 25, 1864, and was attended generally by officers of the army, by some military officials from Washington and elsewhere, by officers' wives and their friends visiting the army, and by invited ladies and gentlemen from Washington, New York, Philadelphia, Boston, and Baltimore. Over four thousand attended. The ball was held in large communicating tents, erected for the purpose. Ample floors were laid for promenades and dancing. Dinner was provided, where everything obtainable from land or sea was served, with liquors and wines without stint. The night was entirely devoted to it. It was brilliant beyond description. To hundreds it was their last ball, or appearance in social life.

Notwithstanding the necessarily promiscuous character of the participants, and though no scandal attended it, and all decorum usual on such occasions was observed, it was at the time the subject of much severe criticism through the press, from the pulpit, and by people generally. General Carr and his good wife were adepts in social affairs, and are entitled to the distinction of having assembled and directed the most numerous attended ball of its kind ever held in the United States.

Horse racing and other sports were indulged in, especially



BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOSEPH B. CARR.
(*From a photograph taken since the war.*)



COLONEL JAMES W. SNYDER,
NINTH NEW YORK HEAVY ARTILLERY.
(*From a photograph taken 1865.*)

by the cavalry. But all these were mere diversions, and did not indicate that the army was not preparing for the bloody work yet ahead of it.

Grant, with the armies under Generals George H. Thomas, W. T. Sherman, and Joseph Hooker, November 25, 1863, drove Bragg from his perch on Missionary Ridge and to a precipitate retreat, and the Army of the Tennessee under Sherman subsequently relieved Burnside, besieged at Knoxville by Longstreet, thus closing the campaigns of 1863 in the West about the time they closed in the East. Soon thereafter rumors were current that Grant was to be promoted to chief command of all the Union armies. A law passed Congress February 29, 1864, reviving the grade of Lieutenant-General, and President Lincoln, the next day, appointed Ulysses S. Grant to the office, and the Senate, the succeeding day, confirmed the appointment. March 10, 1864, Halleck was relieved from duty as General-in-Chief, and became thereafter Chief of Staff of the Army. Grant was, the same day, assigned by the President, "pursuant to the act of Congress, to command the Armies of the United States," headquarters of the Army to be in Washington, and "with General Grant in the field." Grant established his field-headquarters at Culpepper Court-House, March 26, 1864, and remained with the Army of the Potomac until Appomattox came. Just prior to his joining the Army of the Potomac, March 23, 1864, it was reorganized, the First and Third Corps being broken up as separate organizations, and the troops composing them distributed to the Second, Fifth, and Sixth Corps, they retaining their former corps badges. Hancock resumed command of the Second Corps. Warren was assigned to command the Fifth. Carr was transferred to the Second. The Third Division, Third Corps, became the Third Division of the Sixth (Sedgwick's), the old Third Division of the Sixth being consolidated with its other divisions.

General H. Prince was assigned to command the Third Division of the Sixth. The Second Brigade (Keifer's) of this division, with the 126th Ohio (Colonel Smith) and the 67th

Pennsylvania (Colonel Staunton) added, was placed under the command of General David A. Russell,¹ but he was soon transferred to another command, and Colonel B. F. Smith for a time succeeded him. Major-General James B. Ricketts, before April 30, 1864, relieved General Prince, and thereafter the Third Division of the Sixth Corps was known as "Ricketts' Division."

Much bad feeling existed on the part of Generals French, Sykes, Newton, and others over the breaking up of their commands and their being relieved from field duty. The consolidation of divisions and brigades in the corps retained, also caused much discontent, and excited jealousies towards the organizations from the disbanded corps which took their old designations. This was the second time troops I commanded had this experience. While in camp or on marches an officer may become disliked by his men, but a great battle in which he does his duty will always restore him to popularity. The Third Corps badge was a diamond; the Sixth a Greek cross. The Third Division for a time adhered to the *diamond*, but later, wore both proudly, and finally rejoiced alone under the *Greek cross*.

The Army of the Potomac was for the first time reduced to three corps. There was, however, belonging to this army a large artillery reserve, not attached to any corps, but under a chief, General Henry J. Hunt; also a cavalry corps, consisting of three divisions and a reserve brigade, which Major-General Philip H. Sheridan was assigned (April 5, 1864) to command.² To each corps was attached an artillery brigade. This army, like any other well-appointed one, also had (each with a chief officer) its Commissary, Quartermaster, Ordnance, and Medical Departments; also a Provost-Guard, consisting of a brigade of infantry and a regiment of cavalry under a Provost Marshal-General;³ also Signal and Engineer Corps, and other minor

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxiii., pp. 717, 722, 732, 745.

² *Ibid.*, 798, 806.

³ A badge for each fighting corps of the Union Army was adopted (January, 1863), its color indicating the number of the division in a corps. Three divisions

and somewhat independent organizations, such as body-guards to commanding generals, pioneers, pontoniers, etc.

The Army of the Potomac, thus organized, commanded, and appointed, with the new commander of all the armies of the Union with it, now awaited good weather to enter upon the bloodiest campaign civilized man has ever witnessed.

of three brigades each usually constituted a corps. Each officer and soldier wore on his hat or cap his proper corps badge: the first division being red, second white, and third blue. The badge appeared prominently in the centre of all headquarters flags. Division flags were square, brigade, tri-cornered, all of white ground save those of a second division which were blue; the flag of a second brigade had a red border next to the pole, and of a third brigade a red border on all sides.





CHAPTER VI

PLANS OF CAMPAIGNS, UNION AND CONFEDERATE — CAMPAIGN AND BATTLE OF THE WILDERNESS, MAY, 1864 — AUTHOR WOUNDED, AND PERSONAL MATTERS — MOVEMENTS OF THE ARMY TO THE JAMES RIVER, WITH MENTION OF BATTLES OF SPOTSYLVANIA, COLD HARBOR, AND OTHER ENGAGEMENTS, AND STATEMENT OF LOSSES AND CAPTURES

A FULL detailed history of the great campaign of the Wilderness and of the many battles fought in the spring and summer of 1864 in Southeast Virginia and around Richmond and Petersburg will not here be attempted. I shall confine myself to a general story of the campaign, with dates, results of engagements and losses, and some details of the fighting participated in by troops I was immediately connected with or interested in.

General Grant (April 9, 1864), in a confidential communication to General Meade,¹ outlined his plan for the early movements of all the principal Union armies. Texas was to be abandoned, save on the Rio Grande, and General Banks, then on Red River, was to concentrate a force, not less than 25,000 strong, at New Orleans to move on Mobile. Sherman was to leave Chattanooga at the same time Meade moved, "Joe Johnston's army being his objective point and the heart of Georgia his ultimate aim"; if successful, Sherman was to "secure the line from Chattanooga to Mobile, with the aid of Banks." General Franz Sigel (then in command of the

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxiii., p. 827.

Department of West Virginia ¹) was to start two columns, one from Beverly under General Ord, to endeavor to reach the Tennessee and Virginia Railroad west of Lynchburg, and the other from Charleston, West Virginia, under General George Crook, to strike at Saltville and go thence eastward to join Ord. General Quincy A. Gilmore was to be transferred, with 10,000 men, from South Carolina to General B. F. Butler at Fortress Monroe, and the latter General was to organize a force of about 23,000 men, under the immediate command of General W. F. Smith, with which, and Gilmore's command, he should "seize City Point and operate against Richmond from the south side of the river," moving simultaneously with Meade's army. To Meade he said: "*Lee's army will be your objective point. Wherever Lee goes there you will go also.*" General Burnside, then at Annapolis organizing the Ninth Army Corps, was to reinforce Meade with probably 25,000 men. There was to be naval co-operation on the James. Grant had not then determined on which flank to attack Lee, or whether he would cross the Rapidan above or below the Confederate Army.

All baggage was reduced to the lowest standard possible. "Two wagons to a regiment of 500 men . . . for all baggage, exclusive of subsistence stores and ordnance stores. One wagon to a brigade and one to a division headquarters, . . . and about two to corps headquarters."

Meade subsequently made a further reduction, and allowed only one wagon to a regiment.

When it was finally determined to move by Lee's right flank, Meade was ordered to have supplies forwarded to White House, on the Pamunky.²

Sigel was directed to advance a column in co-operation from Martinsburg up the Shenandoah Valley.

Grant, in a confidential dispatch,³ April 29th, to Halleck, fixed May 4th as the date for putting the Army of the Potomac in motion, saying:

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxiii., p. 664.

² *Ibid.*, p. 1017.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 827-9.

"My own notions about our line of march are entirely made up, but as circumstances beyond my control may change them, I will only state that my effort will be to bring Butler's and Meade's forces together."

The next day, on the authority of a rebel officer arrested in Baltimore, who left Lee's army on April 17th, Halleck wired Grant that Lee was about to move Longstreet by the mountain road westward over the Blue Ridge with 20,000 men; that Hill, 50,000 strong, was to force Grant's right at Culpepper, and with three divisions form a junction at Warrenton with Ewell; that all Confederate troops from East Tennessee were to strengthen Lee; that Breckinridge, with 25,000 men in West Virginia, accompanied by Morgan's cavalry, was to force his way down the Kanawha into Ohio, near Gallipolis; that if Lee reached Pennsylvania, Breckinridge was to join him, Morgan's cavalry destroying all railroads east and west; that Lee's general direction was to be towards Wheeling and Pittsburgh; that Richmond's defence was to be left to Beauregard, with Pickett's division of 15,000 men, the Maryland Line, details from hospitals, conscripts, citizens, militia of Governor Smith's call (fifty to fifty-five years of age), and a foreign legion of forced aliens.¹

This plan, if ever formed, comprehensive as it may have been in conception, was never to be even partially put in execution. It probably originated in the fertile imagination of the rebel officer from whom Halleck obtained it.

In March, 1864, an equally comprehensive plan was conceived by Longstreet, then at Greenville, Tennessee, by which Beauregard was to lead an advance column from the borders of North Carolina through the mountain passes, Longstreet to follow through East Tennessee, uniting with Beauregard in Kentucky, and, together, move against the line of railway from Louisville, and thus force Sherman to retire from Johnston's front, allowing him to advance northward, avoiding general battle until all the Confederate columns could form a grand

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxiii., p. 1022.

junction on or near the Ohio River. This plan was approved by Lee, and by both Lee and Longstreet laid before President Davis and the War Department at Richmond. Davis disapproved it.

Another plan, submitted by Bragg (then "Commander-in-Chief near the President"), received the approval of Davis. By this Johnston was to march to the headwaters of the Little Tennessee River, Longstreet to the east of Knoxville and join Johnston, and, united, they were to march west into Middle Tennessee and break the Union line of supplies about Nashville. Though some orders were issued looking to the execution of this plan, it was not seriously attempted, as Joe Johnston regarded it as impracticable.¹ Longstreet, with the part of his command that had served in Virginia, was, early in April, transferred to the Rapidan. Grant alone moved his armies to the execution of his campaigns as planned.

Wilderness.

Not until May 2d did Meade send orders to his corps for the movement on the 4th across the Rapidan. On the day of starting he issued a stirring and patriotic address to his soldiers.² Grant had determined to attack and turn Lee's right flank.³

As soon in the early morning as engineers could lay pontoons the cavalry crossed the river at Ely and Germanna Fords, and cleared the way for the infantry. Hancock's (Second) corps crossed at Ely's Ford and marched to the vicinity of Chancellorsville. Warren's (Fifth) corps, with Sedgwick's (Sixth) following, crossed at Germanna Ford. Warren proceeded to the Old Wilderness Tavern. Sedgwick bivouacked on the heights south of the river. The reserve artillery crossed at Ely's Ford, and subsistence and other trains at this and Culpepper Mine Ford. All these movements took place as ordered.⁴

¹ *Manassas to Appomattox* (Longstreet), p. 544-5.

² *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part II., p. 370.

³ *Ibid.*, Part I., p. 189 (Meade's Report).

⁴ *Ibid.*, Part II., p. 331.

No serious resistance was met with the first day. On the night of the 4th I encamped immediately south of the Rappahannock on the height just above the ford. I was ordered to cover the ford and protect the pontoon bridge until the head of Burnside's column should reach it. The whole army slept without tents. On rising in the early morning, and while standing on a bluff overlooking the river, Major Wm. S. McElwain of my regiment, in a quiet but somewhat troubled way, ventured to suggest that unless I was more prudent than usual I would never recross it. I told him the chances of war were hardly lessened by prudence where duty was involved, and that my chances of going North alive were probably as good as his. He seemed to have no concern about himself.

General Grant, his staff, and escort, rode by while we waited. He was on a fine, though small, black horse, which he set well; was plainly dressed, looked the picture of health, and bore no evidence of anxiety about him. His plain hat and clothes were in marked contrast with a somewhat gaily dressed and equipped staff. He saluted and spoke pleasantly, but did not check his horse from a rather rapid gait.

About 10 A.M. Burnside, at the head of his command, reached the ford. His corps, the Ninth, had been recently organized by him at Annapolis, Maryland, and officers and soldiers were, in general, newly equipped and clothed, and all regiments and headquarters had new flags. The long line, as displayed for miles, moving slowly over the lowlands to the crossing, was most imposing, and gave rise to varied reflections. But the time for strong battle had come. The head of the Fifth Corps was pushed forward on the Orange and Fredericksburg plank road, the purpose being to avoid the intrenchments of Mine Run, but the enemy appearing on the turnpike running, in general, parallel with the plank road and to the north of it, the Sixth Corps (except the Second Brigade, Third Division) moved to position on the right of the Fifth, save Getty's division, which was sent to the intersection of the Brock and Orange plank roads with instructions to hold it, at all hazards, until the arrival of Hancock's corps from Todd's

Tavern. About noon two divisions of Warren's corps had a sharp combat with the head of Ewell's corps on the pike, driving it back some distance when, being outflanked, they were in turn forced back, losing two guns. Wadsworth's division of this corps having been sent to the plank road was withdrawn to a junction with Warren's other divisions. Warren suffered some loss in prisoners taken from Crawford's division. Getty, on his arrival on the plank road, found our cavalry being pressed back by Hill's corps, but he deployed on each side of the road, and opening fire on the enemy checked him. Getty was able to hold his position until Hancock arrived about 2 P.M. Hancock, with his corps and Getty's division, assailed the enemy furiously, and for a time successfully, though meeting with stubborn resistance. General Alexander Hays was killed in this action while repairing a break in our line. The enemy moved troops from the turnpike to Hill's relief, and Meade, seeing this, sent Wadsworth's division and Baxter's brigade of the Fifth Corps to Hancock. Night came, and the battle ceased on this part of the field before the reinforcements arrived, both armies holding their positions.

The Sixth Corps (Getty's division absent with Hancock) with much difficulty made its way through the dense low pine picket, and about 2 P.M. was in position, principally deployed, on the right of the Fifth, Rickett's division (Second Brigade absent) on the left, and Wright on the right. Soon after the head of Burnside's column reached Germanna Ford, my brigade moved to the battle-ground. As we advanced, firing along the extended front soon told us where serious work had begun. General Truman Seymour (of Olustee fame) was assigned this day to command the brigade, but he did not promptly join it. As we approached the battle, I was ordered by a staff officer of Sedgwick to conduct the brigade to the right of that part of the Sixth Corps already in line and partly engaged. This order being executed, we became the extreme right of the army. The other brigades of the Third Division being in position on the left of the corps, I was not in touch with them,

and reported to General H. G. Wright, commanding the First Division.

Heavy firing already extended along the line of the Sixth Corps to the left of us. The brigade, about 2 P.M., was put by me in position in two lines, the 6th Maryland and 110th Ohio, from left to right, in the front, and the 122d and 126th Ohio and the 138th Pennsylvania on the rear line and in reserve. Skirmishers were advanced, who pressed the enemy's skirmishers back a short distance to his main line, and a sharp engagement ensued, lasting until about 5 P.M., when, proper support being promised, an aggressive attack was made.

I quote from my official report, dated November 1, 1864:

"I received orders to assume general charge of the first line, to press the enemy, and, if possible, outflank him upon his left. The troops charged forward in gallant style, pressing the enemy back by 6 P.M. about one half mile, when we came upon him upon the slope of a hill, intrenched behind logs which had been hurriedly thrown together. During the advance the troops were twice halted and a fire opened, killing and wounding a considerable number of the enemy.

"The front line being upon the extreme right of the army, and the troops upon its left failing to move forward in conjunction with it, I deemed it prudent to halt without making an attack upon the enemy's line. After a short consultation with Col. John W. Horn, I sent word that the advance line of the brigade was unsupported upon either flank, and that the enemy overlapped the right and left of the line, and was apparently in heavy force, rendering it impossible for the troops to attain success in a further attack.

"I soon after received an order to attack at once.

"Feeling sure that the word I sent had not been received, I delayed until a second order came to attack. I accordingly made the attack without further delay.

"The attack was made about 7 P.M. The troops were in a thick and dense wilderness. The line was advanced to within 150 yards of the enemy's works, under a most terrible fire from the front and flanks. It was impossible to succeed; but the two regiments, notwithstanding, maintained their ground and kept up a rapid fire for nearly three hours, and then retired under orders, for a short distance only.

"I was wounded about 8.30 P.M. by a rifle ball passing through both bones of the left forearm, but did not relinquish command until 9 P.M.

"The troops were required to maintain this unequal contest under the belief that other troops were to attack the enemy upon his flank.

"In this attack the 6th Maryland lost in killed, two officers and sixteen men, and eight officers and 132 men wounded; and the 110th Ohio lost one officer and thirteen men killed, and six (6) officers and ninety-three (93) men wounded, making an aggregate in the two regiments of 271.

"Major William S. McElwain, 110th Ohio, who had won the commendations of all who knew him, for his skill, judgment, and gallantry, was among the killed.

"Lieutenant Joseph McKnight, 110th Ohio, and Captain Adam B. Martin, 6th Maryland, were mortally wounded, and have since died.

"Captain J. B. Van Eaton and Lieutenants H. H. Stevens and G. O. McMillen, 110th Ohio, Major J. C. Hill, Captains A. Billingslea, J. T. Goldsborough, J. J. Bradshaw and J. R. Rouser, and Lieutenants J. A. Swarts, C. Damuth and D. J. Smith, 6th Maryland, were more or less severely wounded.

"All displayed the greatest bravery, and deserve the thanks of the country.

"Colonel John W. Horn, 6th Maryland, and Lieutenant-Colonel O. H. Binkley, 110th Ohio, deserve to be specially mentioned for their courage, skill and ability.

"Captains Brown, 110th Ohio, and Prentiss, 6th Maryland, distinguished themselves in their successful management of skirmishers.

"From reports of this night attack published in the Richmond papers it is known that the rebel Brigadier-General J. M. Jones, (commanding the Stonewall Brigade) and many others were killed in the attack."

In consequence of my wound I was absent from the brigade after the battle of the Wilderness until August 26, 1864, and I am therefore unable to give its movements and operations from personal knowledge. Colonel Ball succeeded me on the field in command of the brigade, and Colonel Horn in charge

of the advance line in the night attack. Seymour was not present with the attacking troops. He was captured the next day, and the command of the brigade devolved on Colonel B. F. Smith.

To enable the reader to follow it through the battle I quote further from my report of November 1, 1864.

"Early on the morning of the 6th of May, the brigade formed in two lines of battle and assaulted the enemy's works in its front, the 122d and 126th Ohio and 138th Pennsylvania in the front line, and the 110th Ohio and 6th Maryland in the rear line. The brigade was still the extreme right of the army. The assault was most vigorously made, but the enemy was found in too great numbers and too strongly fortified to be driven from his position. After suffering very heavy loss, the troops were withdrawn to their original position, where slight fortifications were thrown up. In the charge the troops behaved most gallantly. The 122d and 126th Ohio and 138th Pennsylvania lost very heavily.

"About 2 P.M. Brigadier-General Shaler's brigade, of the First Division, Sixth Army Corps, took position upon the right of this brigade, and became the extreme right of the army.

"Skirmishing continued until about sunset, when the enemy turned the right of the army and made an attack upon its flank and rear, causing the troops to give way rapidly, and compelling them to fall back for some distance before they were reformed. So rapid was the enemy's advance upon the flank and rear, that time was not given to change front to meet him, and some confusion occurred in the retreat. Few prisoners were lost in the brigade. The lines were soon re-established and the progress of the enemy stopped. An attack was made by the enemy upon the re-established line about 8 P.M., but was handsomely repulsed.

"Unfounded reports were circulated that the troops of this brigade were the first to give way, when the first attack of the enemy was made.

"It is not improper to state here that no charges of bad conduct are made against the troops upon its right, but that this brigade remained at its post and successfully resisted a simultaneous attack from the front, until the troops upon its right were doubled back and were retreating in disorder through and along its lines."

The presence of a general officer in authority, or an intelligent staff officer representing him, would have averted the useless slaughter of the evening of the 5th, and the disaster of the evening of the 6th, which, for a time, threatened the safety of the whole army. A brigade or more of troops thrown on the enemy's left by a little *détour* on either evening would have doubled it back and given us, with little loss, that part of the field and a free swing for the next day.

The success in gaining ground on the 5th left our right in the air, bent to the front, with the enemy on its flank, thus inviting the attack made the next day by General J. B. Gordon, which drove back the main part of the Sixth Corps on the Union centre. Gordon's attack was a repetition of Stonewall Jackson's flank movement at Chancellorsville, and it should have been so far anticipated as to cause its disastrous failure.

In field-hospital, on seeing a staff officer of mine (Captain Thomas J. Black, who was having a wounded hand dressed), I discussed the situation, and predicted the enemy would seize the favorable opportunity of attacking. Anticipating the attack, my servant (Andy Jackson), in his eager solicitude for my safety, kept my horse near the tent, saddled, so I might, when it came, be assisted on him, and escape. Gordon's men advanced far enough for their bullets to pass through the hospital tents, but the hospital was not taken.

General Shaler's brigade of the First Division, Sixth Corps, having been placed on the extreme right of the Sixth, was the first to give way; then, the enemy being well on the rear of the Second Brigade as well as on its flank, and it being at the same time attacked from the front, it also gave way in some confusion, but, under its brave officers, Colonels Ball, Horn, and McClennan, Lieutenant-Colonels Granger, Ebright, Binkley, and others, it was soon assembled in good line in front of Gordon's advancing column, where it did much to arrest it. Generals Seymour and Shaler being separated from their brigades, while searching for them were both captured.¹

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part II., pp. 729, 742, 745, 748.

But somebody needed, and sought, a "*scapegoat*." There were only three regiments in the Second Brigade—6th Maryland, 110th and 122d Ohio, which had served under Milroy in the Shenandoah Valley in 1863. Somebody reported to the press, and probably to Grant, that on the evening of the 6th of May troops that had fought there under Milroy were on the extreme right of our army, and were the first to give way. This was necessarily false, as these troops were not then on the extreme right at all, and did not retire until the force to their right had been broken and routed. General Grant to Halleck, in an excusatory and exculpatory letter (May 7th), as to the disaster on his right, said: "Milroy's old brigade was attacked and gave way in great confusion, almost without resistance, carrying good troops with them."¹ This statement may have been made to tickle Halleck's ear, as he was known to hate Milroy and his friends, but it was, nevertheless, untrue and grossly unjust. Of the three regiments from the Shenandoah Valley, 494 (one third their number) fell dead or wounded on that field, through inefficiency and blunders of high officers who were never near enough to it to hear the fatal thud or passing whiz of a rifle ball. Many others of these regiments had fallen (nearly) on the heights of Orange Grove, the November before. Grant, long after, acknowledged the injustice of his statement.

After I had been wounded, though yet in command of the attacking force, a Major rode up from the left, and reported to me that his officers and men were falling fast, and expressed the fear that they could not be long held to their work. He was directed to cheer them with the hope that the expected support would soon arrive. As he swung his horse around to return, it was shot, fell, and the Major, lighting on his feet, without a word quickly disappeared (as seen by the light of flashing rifles) among the dense scrub pines. He never was seen again, nor his body found. He must have been killed, and his body consumed later by the great conflagration which, feeding on the dry timber and *débris*, swept the battle-field, licking up the precious blood and cremating the bodies of the

¹ War Records, vol. xxxvi., Part II., p. 480.



MAJOR WM. S. McELWAIN,
110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1863.)



BREVET LIEUTENANT-COLONEL AARON SPANGLER,
110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1863.)

martyr dead. This was the gallant McElwain, who, in the early morning, expressed so much anxiety for my safety.

Colonel William H. Ball, on hearing, late at night, of my wound, inquired particularly as to its nature, and being assured it was serious, characteristically exclaimed: "Good! he will get home now and survive the war; his fighting days are over." Not so, nor yet with him. As I was borne to the left along the rear of the line on a stretcher towards the field-hospital, about midnight, a quickened ear caught the sound of a voice, giving loud command, familiar to me years before at my home city. I summoned the officer, and found him to be my fellow-townsmen, Colonel Edwin C. Mason, then commanding the 7th Maine. A day or two more and he, too, was severely wounded.

I had seen something of war, but, for the first time, my lot was now cast with the dead, dying, and wounded in the rear. A soldier on the line of battle sees his comrades fall, indifferently generally, and continues to discharge his duty. The wounded get to the rear themselves or with assistance and are seen no more by those in battle line. Some of the medical staff in a well organized army, with hospital stewards and attendants, go on the field to temporarily bind up wounds, staunch the flow of blood, and direct the stretcher-bearers and ambulance corps in the work of taking the wounded to the operating surgeons at field-hospital. The dead need and generally receive no attention until the battle is ended.

On my arrival at hospital, about 2 P.M., I was carried through an entrance to a large tent, on each side of which lay human legs and arms, resembling piles of stove wood, the blood only excepted. All around were dead and wounded men, many of the latter dying. The surgeons, with gleaming, sometimes bloody, knives and instruments, were busy at their work. I soon was laid on the rough board operating table and chloroformed, and skilful surgeons—Charles E. Cady (138th Pennsylvania) and Theodore A. Helwig (87th Pennsylvania)—cut to the injured parts, exposed the fractured ends of the shattered bones, dressed them off with saw and knife, and put

them again in place, splinted and bandaged. I was then borne to a pallet on the ground to make room for—" *Next.*" The sensation produced by the anæsthetic, in passing to and from unconsciousness, was exhilarating and delightful. For some hours, exhausted from loss of blood as I was, I fell into short dozes, accompanied with fanciful dreams. Not all have the same experience.

From this hospital, on the 7th, I was taken by ambulance, in the immense train of wounded, towards Spotsylvania Court-House, but on nearing that place, the train diverging from the track of the army, moved, with the roar of battle in our ears, slowly to Fredericksburg. At its frequent halts, great kettles of beef tea were made and brought to us. I drank gallons of it, as did others. It was grateful to a thirsty, fevered palate, but afforded little nourishment. For about ten days I was confined to a bed in a private house—Mrs. Alsop's—taken for an officers' hospital. The wounded from Spotsylvania also soon arrived at Fredericksburg, and surgeons and nurses were overtaxed. Contract surgeons appeared from the North; also nurses and attendants from each of the Sanitary and Christian Commissions. I was visited by Miss Dorothea L. Dix (then seventy years of age), who was in charge of a corps of hospital nurses. Horace Mann had, long before, apotheosized her for her philanthropic work for the insane.¹ A highly inflamed condition of my arm threatened my life while here, but finally reaching Aquia Creek, I went by hospital boat to Washington, thence home. Everywhere, hotels, hospitals, boats, and cars were crowded with the wounded, fresh from the Wilderness and Spotsylvania. Philanthropic people of principal cities kept, day and night, surgeons with skilled assistants at depots to care for the travelling wounded.

But to return to the Wilderness. The Sixth Corps, with little fighting, recovered its lost position on the morning of the 7th. The Fifth had a fierce engagement on the 6th, to the left of the Sixth Corps, but without material success. Hancock's corps, with Wadsworth's division of the Fifth and

¹ *Twelve Sermons*, p. 302.

Getty's of the Sixth, opened a brilliant battle on the plank road at early dawn of the 6th, and drove the enemy more than a mile along the road in some confusion, when Longstreet's corps arrived on Hancock's left and turned the tide of battle, and in turn our troops were forced back to their former position on the Brock road. General James S. Wadsworth was mortally wounded while rallying his men, and the heroic Getty was severely wounded. The losses in this engagement on both sides were great. General Jenkins of the Confederate Army was killed, and Longstreet severely wounded. They were shot by mistake, by their own men,¹ as was "Stonewall" Jackson at Chancellorsville. Lee, in person, was on the plank road giving direction to the battle. He exposed himself to danger, and despaired of the result. At a critical moment he sent his "Adjutant-General, Colonel W. H. Taylor, back to Parker's Store to get the trains ready for a movement to the rear."² Grant, early the 6th, put Burnside's corps in between the turnpike and plank roads, and it sustained the battle in the centre throughout the day, both armies holding well their ground. The morning of the 7th found Lee's army retired and strongly intrenched on a new line, with right near Parker's Store, and left extending northward across the turnpike.

On the 5th and 6th, Sheridan with his cavalry held the left flank and covered the rear of the army, fighting and repulsing Stuart's cavalry in attempts to penetrate to our rear. At Todd's Tavern, on the 7th, a severe cavalry engagement took place in which Sheridan was victorious. But the two great armies principally rested in position on that day, and the great battle of the Wilderness, with its alternate successes and repulses and its long lists of dead and wounded, was ended.

Grant, having decided not to fight further in the Wilderness country, on the night of the 7th put his army in motion for Spotsylvania Court-House, the cavalry preceding the Fifth Corps over the Brock road, followed by the Second and Sixth Corps on the plank and turnpike roads, with the army trains in the advance, the Ninth Corps in the rear. Lee, having

¹ *Manassas to Appomattox*, p. 564.

² *Memoirs of Lee*, A. L. Long, p. 330.

either anticipated or discovered the movements, threw Longstreet's corps in Warren's front on the Brock road, and heavy fighting ensued on the 8th, most of the corps of both armies being, at different times, engaged. Wilson's cavalry division gained possession of the Court-House, but, being unsupported, withdrew. May 9th, the enemy was pressed and his position developed. Two divisions of the Ninth Corps, finding the enemy on the Fredericksburg road, drove him back and across the Ny River with some loss. This day, Major-General John Sedgwick, commanding the Sixth Corps, while on the advance line looking for the enemy's position, was killed by a sharpshooter. He had the confidence and love of his corps.

Sheridan, with the cavalry, cut loose from the main army on the 9th, with orders from Meade to move southerly, engage, whenever possible, the enemy's cavalry, cut railroads, threaten Richmond, and eventually communicate with or join the Union forces on James River. He passed around the enemy's right and destroyed the depot at Beaver Dam, two locomotives, three trains of cars, one hundred other cars, and large quantities of stores and rations for Lee's army; also the telegraph line and railroad track for ten miles, and recaptured some prisoners. On the 10th of May he crossed the South Anna at Ground Squirrel Bridge, captured Ashland Station, a locomotive and a train of cars, and destroyed stores and railroad track, and next day marched towards Richmond. At Yellow Tavern he met the Confederate cavalry, defeated it, killing its commander, General J. E. B. Stuart, and taking two pieces of artillery and some prisoners, and forcing it to retreat across the Chickahominy. On the 12th Sheridan reached the second line of works around Richmond, then recrossed the Chickahominy, and after much hard fighting arrived at Bottom's Bridge the morning of the 13th. On the next day he was at Haxall's Landing on the James River, where he sent off his wounded and recruited his men and horses. On the 24th he rejoined the Army of the Potomac at Chesterfield, returning *via* White House on the Pamunkey.¹

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part I., pp. 193, 776-792.

Fighting at and around Spotsylvania Court-House continued during the 10th and 11th, and on the 12th Hancock's corps assaulted the enemy's centre, capturing Major-General Edward Johnson, with General George G. Steuart and about three thousand men of his division. On advancing to the enemy's second line of breastworks, Hancock met with desperate resistance at what is known as the salient, or "*dead angle*." This was the key to Lee's position, and concentrating there his batteries and best troops, he mercilessly sacrificed the latter to hold it. The Second Corps was reinforced by the Sixth, under Major-General Horatio G. Wright, the successor of Sedgwick. The most deadly fighting occurred, and the dead and wounded of both sides were greater, for the space covered, than anywhere in the war, if not in all history. Wheaton's brigade of the Sixth Corps fought in the "*dead angle*"; and the 126th Ohio of the Second Brigade, Third Division, was detached and ordered to assail it. In making the assault it lost every fourth man.¹ The whole of the Second Brigade fought with conspicuous gallantry at Spotsylvania.

The enemy retired to a shorter line during the night. From the 13th to the 17th, both armies being intrenched, nothing decisive transpired, though there were frequent fierce conflicts. The Union sick and wounded were sent to the rear *via* Fredericksburg and Aquia Creek, and supplies were brought forward.²

General Grant, the morning of the 11th of May, wrote Halleck:

"We have now ended the sixth day of very heavy fighting. The result to this time is much in our favor. But our losses have been heavy, as well as those of the enemy. We have lost to this time, eleven general officers, killed, wounded, and missing, and probably 20,000 men. I think the loss of the enemy must be greater. We have taken over 4000 prisoners in battle, while he has taken but few except stragglers. I am now sending back to Belle Plain all

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part I., p. 749.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 188-195 (Meade's Report).

my wagons for a fresh supply of provisions and ammunition, *and propose to fight it out on this line if it takes all summer.*"¹

The italics are mine, to emphasize the origin of the most frequently quoted phrase of General Grant.

The Union Army was moving by its left flank on the 19th, when Ewell attempted to turn its right flank and get possession of the Fredericksburg road, but he met a new division under General R. O. Tyler, later, two divisions of the Second Corps, and Ferrero's division of colored troops (twelve companies, 2000 strong, recently from the defences of Washington), and was handsomely beaten back.

The 9th New York Heavy Artillery, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel William H. Seward, son of Secretary Seward, joined the Second Brigade at North Anna River, the 26th of May.²

The army, by the 26th, had crossed the North Anna at various fords, and by the 28th it was across the Pamunkey at Hanoverton and Hundley Fords, sharp engagements ensuing constantly. The 29th the enemy was driven into his works behind the Totopotomoy, the Sixth Corps occupying Hanover Court-House. Warren was attacked, but repulsed the enemy at Bethesda Church, and Barlow of the Sixth carried a line of rifle-pits south of the river. The cavalry was engaged during these movements in many affairs, and Sheridan with two divisions occupied Cold Harbor the 31st, but was hard pressed until Wright with the Sixth and General W. F. Smith (recently arrived with the Eighteenth Corps from Butler on the James) relieved him. These corps, June 1st, attacked and took part of the enemy's intrenched line.

At 6 P.M., in a general assault upon the enemy's works, Ricketts' division (Third of Sixth) captured many prisoners and the works in its front, and handsomely repulsed repeated efforts to retake them. In this assault the Second Brigade moved in the following order: 6th Maryland and 138th Pennsylvania in the first line, 9th New York in the second and

¹ *War Records.*, vol. xxxvi., Part I., p. 627.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 734, 740.



MAJOR-GENERAL HORATIO G. WRIGHT.

(From a photograph taken 1865.)

third lines, and the 122d and 126th Ohio in the fourth line, all preceded by the 110th Ohio on the skirmish line.

General Meade addressed this note to General Wright:

"Please give my thanks to Brigadier-General Ricketts and his gallant command for the very handsome manner in which they have conducted themselves to-day. The success attained by them is of the greatest importance, and if followed up will materially advance our operations."

The morning of the 3d, the division charged forward about two hundred yards under a heavy fire and intrenched, using bayonets, tin cups, and plates for the purpose.¹ At 4 A.M., June 3d, by Grant's order, the Sixth and the Eighteenth Corps and Barlow's division of the Second assaulted the strongly fortified works of the enemy, but suffered a most disastrous repulse—the bloodiest of the war. Approximately, 10,000 Union men fell. The number and strength of the enemy's position was not well understood. He did not suffer correspondingly. There were found to be deep ravines and a morass in front of his fortifications.

The assault was suspended about 7 A.M., and not renewed. Grant says in his *Memoirs*:²

"I have always regretted that the last assault at Cold Harbor was ever made."

Other indecisive fighting occurred at Cold Harbor to the 12th, when Lee's army having retired in consequence of further flank movements, the last of the Union Army was withdrawn, and by June 13th, its several corps crossing the Chickahominy at Long and Jones' Bridges, reached the James River at Charles City Court-House. Sheridan, meantime, with two cavalry divisions, was ordered to Gordonsville to destroy the Central Railroad, and to communicate, if practicable, with Hunter's expedition, then in progress in the Shenandoah

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part I., pp. 734-5 (Keifer's Report).

² Vol. ii., p. 276.

Valley. Sheridan fought a successful battle at Trevilian Station, June 11th, overthrowing Hampton and Fitz Lee's cavalry divisions.

The Union Army soon crossed the James.

Excluding captured and missing, the casualties in the Union Army during the operations mentioned, shown by revised lists, are given in the summary table following :¹

	KILLED.		WOUNDED.		Aggregate.
	Officers.	Men.	Officers.	Men.	
Wilderness, May 5-7.....	143	2013	569	11,468	14,193
Spotsylvania Court-House, May 8-21.....	174	2551	672	12,744	16,141
North Anna, Pamunkey, and Totopotomoy, May 21-June 1.	41	550	159	2,575	3,325
Cold Harbor, Bethesda Church, etc., June 2-15.....	143	1702	433	8,644	10,922
Todd's Tavern to James River (Cavalry, Sheridan), May 9-24	7	57	16	321	401
Trevilian raid (Cavalry, Sheridan), June 7-24.....	14	136	43	695	888
Totals.....	522	7009	1892	36,447	45,870. ²

There do not seem to exist any lists, at all complete, by which a summary of casualties of killed and wounded in the Confederate Army during the Wilderness campaign can be made up, but, barring Cold Harbor, they were, doubtless, approximately as great as in the Union Army. During the campaign the Union Army captured 22 field guns and lost 3. It captured at least 67 colors. And reports show the Army of the Potomac, from May 1 to 12, 1864, took 7078 prisoners, and from May 12 to July 31, 1864, 6506; total, 13,584.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part I., p. 188 (119-198).

² It is interesting to note that the ratio of killed to wounded, shown by this table, is almost exactly 1 to 5, that is, 16.6 per cent. of the whole number were killed; that of the killed, 1 out of every 14.6 was an officer; of the wounded, 1 out of 20 was an officer; of the whole number killed and wounded, 1 officer was killed out of every 88, 1 officer was wounded out of every 24.3, and 1 enlisted man was killed out of every 6.5, and one officer was killed or wounded out of every 19.

The Union reports show the " captured and missing [Union], May 4th to June 24th," to be 8966.¹

The killed and wounded in the Sixth Army Corps, May 5 to June 15, 1864, were 10,614; in the Third Division thereof, 1993, and in the Second Brigade of this division, 1246.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part I., pp. 188, 196.





CHAPTER VII

CAMPAIGN SOUTH OF JAMES RIVER AND PETERSBURG—HUNTER'S RAID—BATTLE OF MONOCACY—EARLY'S ADVANCE ON WASHINGTON (1864)—SHERIDAN'S MOVEMENTS IN SHENANDOAH VALLEY, AND OTHER EVENTS

IN pursuance of the general plan, as we have seen, General B. F. Butler had organized at Fortress Monroe the Army of the James, composed of the Tenth and Eighteenth Corps, commanded, respectively, by Generals Quincy A. Gilmore and W. F. Smith. It moved by transports up the James River on May 4, 1864, and effected a landing without serious resistance at Bermuda Hundred the night of the 5th. At the same time General Kautz, with 3000 cavalry, made a raid from Suffolk and destroyed a portion of the Petersburg and Weldon Railroad. These movements caused a hasty concentration against Butler of all the available troops from the Carolinas. Beauregard was put in command of them. There was some indecisive fighting between parts of Butler's army at Stony Creek, Jarratt's Station, and White Bridge, and there were somewhat general engagements at Port Walthall Junction, Chester Station, Swift Creek, Proctor's Creek, and Drewry's Bluff, and some minor affairs along the James. Kautz, making a second successful raid, cut the Richmond and Danville Railroad at Caulfield, destroying bridges, tracks, and depots. The result of all was to leave Butler's command strongly intrenched at Bermuda Hundred, but unable to advance and seriously threaten Richmond.

The term "Bottled up," an expression used to describe

Butler's position, was derived from a dispatch of Grant to the War Department in which he referred to Butler's situation between the James and the Appomattox with the enemy entrenched across his front, as being "like a bottle."¹

Grant ordered Smith's corps to reinforce the Army of the Potomac. Butler attacked Petersburg on the 9th of June, chiefly with Gilmore's corps, but, for want of co-operation by the several attacking bodies, the place was not taken. General Butler attributed the defeat to Gilmore's failure to obey orders and to act with energy.²

After Smith's withdrawal, Butler did little more than hold his position. The Army of the Potomac crossed to the south of the James on June 14th. An attack was made by Meade on Petersburg on the 16th, principally with troops under Hancock and Burnside, by which a part only of the enemy's works with one battery and some prisoners were taken. Fighting continued on the 17th, and a general assault was ordered at daylight on the 18th, but on advancing it was found the enemy had retired to an inner and stronger line. Later in the day unsuccessful assaults were made on this new line by portions of the Second, Fifth, and Ninth Corps. It was then ascertained that Lee's main army had reached Petersburg, and further efforts to take it by assault were abandoned.³ There was much fighting, extending through June, by detachments of infantry, for possession of roads, all of which, however, was indecisive. Wilson and Kautz's cavalry divisions, on the 22d, in a raid took Reams Station and destroyed some miles of the Weldon Railroad, and the next day, after defeating W. H. F. Lee's cavalry near Nottoway Station, reached Burkeville Junction and destroyed the depot and about twenty miles of railroad track. The succeeding day they destroyed the railroad from Meherim Station to Roanoke Bridge, a distance of twenty-five miles, but on returning they encountered at Reams Station, on the 28th, the enemy's cavalry and a strong force

¹ *Memoirs of Grant*, vol. ii., p. 151.

² *War Records*, vol. xxxvi., Part II., pp. 273, 291. *Butler's Book*, p. 677.

³ *Ibid.*, vol. xl., p. 168.

of infantry, and were defeated, with the loss of trains and artillery. The Sixth Corps was sent to their relief, but arrived at the Station after the affair was over and the enemy had withdrawn.¹

I shall not undertake to give the important movements and operations² of the troops under Grant in front of Petersburg and Richmond during the remainder of the summer and the fall of 1864, as the troops in which I was immediately interested were, early in July, transferred to Maryland and Washington. A summary of the occurrences in the Shenandoah Valley and West Virginia is, however, necessary to enable the reader the better to understand important events soon to be narrated.

General Franz Sigel, in command of the Department of West Virginia, moved up the Valley, and was defeated at New Market on the 15th of May. He retired to the north bank of Cedar Creek. His loss was about 1000 killed, wounded, and captured, and seven pieces of artillery. General George Crook, proceeding *via* Fayetteville, Raleigh, and Princeton, fought the battle of Cloyd's Mountain on the 9th of May and gained a brilliant victory. He did much damage to the enemy, and returned to Meadow Bluff, on the Kanawha. General David Hunter relieved Sigel in command of the department on the 21st, and joined the troops at Cedar Creek in the Valley, on the 26th. Sigel was assigned to command a Reserve Division along the line of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad.

Hunter and Crook, from their respective positions, moved towards Staunton on the 30th. Hunter met the enemy under General W. E. Jones at Piedmont, on June 5th, and after a severe engagement defeated him, killing Jones and capturing about 1500 prisoners. Hunter reached Staunton on the 6th, and was joined by Crook on the 8th. They here destroyed railroads, Confederate supplies, mills, and factories, and,

¹ *War Records*, vol. xl., Part II., p. 169.

² The memorable "Mine explosion," under the immediate direction of Burnside, occurred July 30, 1864.

together, advanced towards Lexington on the 10th. They were now opposed by McCausland, whose command was chiefly cavalry. Lexington was taken on the 11th, after some fighting, and with it large quantities of military supplies. A portion of the James River Canal and a number of extensive iron-works were destroyed. Hunter burned the Virginia Military Institute and all buildings connected therewith on the 12th. He also burned the residence of ex-Governor John Letcher. Doubts have been entertained as to whether the burning of the Institute or Letcher's home could be justified under the rules of modern warfare. The Institute, however, was a preparatory school for Confederate officers, and its Principal, Colonel Smith, with 250 cadets, united with McCausland's troops in the defence of Lexington. Letcher had issued a violent and inflammatory proclamation inciting the population to rise and wage a guerrilla warfare on the Union troops.¹

Hunter proceeded *via* Buchanan and by the Peaks of Otter road across the Blue Ridge, and arrived at Liberty, twenty-four miles from Lynchburg, on the 15th. Here he heard rumors through Confederate channels of disasters to Grant and Sherman's armies, and of Sheridan's fighting at Trevilian Station. Hunter was also told Breckinridge was in Lynchburg with all the rebel forces in West Virginia, and that Ewell's corps, 20,000 strong, was arriving to reinforce him. Notwithstanding these reports, Hunter commenced an advance on the 16th on Lynchburg. His several columns met stubborn resistance on this and the succeeding day, but at night, after a spirited affair at Diamond Hill, he encamped his forces near the town. It became known to Hunter on the 18th that Lieutenant-General Jubal A. Early, with Ewell's corps from Lee's army, was at Lynchburg. Early and Breckinridge's combined commands far outnumbered Hunter's forces. The situation was critical for Hunter. He maintained a bold front, however, until nightfall, and then withdrew *via* Liberty and Buford's Gap to New Castle and Sweet Springs. General Wm. W. Averell

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvii., Part I., p. 97.

with the cavalry covered the rear. The enemy pursued rather tardily to Salem, where Early concentrated his army. Hunter chose, in his retreat, the Lewisburg route to Charleston on the Kanawha, rather than retire down the Shenandoah Valley or by Warm Springs and the South Branch of the Potomac. The latter route would have had the advantage of bringing him out at Cumberland or New Creek on the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, much nearer to his proper base at Martinsburg or Harper's Ferry. His retreat, on the line chosen, left the Valley, the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, and Baltimore and Washington practically without defence. Hunter arrived at Charleston on the 30th, having marched through White Sulphur Springs, Lewisburg, and Meadow Bluff. From near Liberty, on the 16th, he sent his supply train of 200 wagons, 141 prisoners and his sick and wounded in charge of Captain T. K. McCann, A.Q.M. of Volunteers, with orders to reach the Kanawha at Charleston. The train was guarded by parts of the 152d and 161st Ohio Volunteers—one hundred day men, commanded by Colonel David Putnam of the former regiment. At Greenbrier River, on the 22d, the train was attacked by the Thurmond brothers, and forced to return to White Sulphur Springs. From thence it proceeded through Hillsborough to Beverly, where it arrived on the 27th.¹ Hunter's raid, so brilliantly begun, thus unfortunately ended.

Early reached Lynchburg on the 17th of June and assumed command of all the forces there, including those under Breckinridge. Early pursued Hunter to the mountains, and then, on the 23d, marched rapidly through Staunton and down the Shenandoah Valley, with the purpose of invading Maryland, in pursuance of instructions given him by Lee before being detached from the latter's main army.²

Sigel was now holding Maryland Heights. Early, therefore, on the 8th of July crossed the Potomac higher up the river, and reached Frederick City, Maryland, the morning of the 9th.³

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvii., Part I., pp. 99, 101, 618-19, 683.

² *Ibid.*, 346, 347.

³ *Ibid.*, 102.

Hunter's command was obliged to descend the Kanawha by boats, then ascend the Ohio to Parkersburg, and from there move by rail to Cumberland and points on the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad. Hunter did not leave Charleston until July 3d, nor Parkersburg until the 8th, and did not reach Cumberland with any part of his army until the 9th. He was then too remote to be available in an effort to resist Early's invasion.¹

Early's movements in the Valley caused loud calls for troops, and Grant ordered Ricketts' division (Sixth Corps) to Maryland. The division left its camp in front of the Williams house on the 6th of July, and the same day embarked at City Point for Baltimore. It disembarked at Locust Point, near Baltimore, on the morning of the 8th, and took cars for Monocacy Junction, where, on the same day, parts of two brigades of the division joined General Lew Wallace, then in command of the department.

Prior to Ricketts' arrival Wallace had only been able to gather together, under General E. B. Tyler, two regiments of the Potomac Home Brigade, the 11th Maryland Infantry, two Ohio one hundred day regiments (144th and 149th), the 8th Illinois Cavalry, and a detachment of the 159th Ohio (one hundred day regiment), serving as mounted infantry, all new or inexperienced troops.² He had only one battery of artillery. Sigel, still at Maryland Heights, was therefore unavailable as against Early. Only the First Brigade, numbering 1750 men, under Colonel Truax, and a part of the Second Brigade (138th Pennsylvania, 9th New York Heavy Artillery, 110th and 126th Ohio), 1600 strong, Colonel McClennan commanding, of Ricketts' veteran troops reached the battle-field. Tyler went into position on the right, covering the stone bridge, and Ricketts on the left. The position chosen by Wallace was good, strategically, and also strong to resist a front attack by a superior force. It was behind the Monocacy River, covering the railroad bridge and the public highway and another bridge, and also had for lines of retreat the turnpikes to

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvii., Part I., p. 102.

² *Ibid.*, 200.

Baltimore and Washington. If the position were held, communication could be kept up with these cities, also with Sigel at the Heights. It was Early's purpose to destroy Wallace or brush him aside and move on Washington. Early moved from Frederick at 8 A.M., the 9th of July, and after demonstrating on Wallace's front, marched Gordon's troops around by a ford to fall on Ricketts' left. The latter changed front to the left to meet Gordon. The battle opened in earnest at 10.30 A.M. The enemy's superiority in artillery gave him a great advantage, and most of the day Ricketts' troops held their position under an enfilading fire from Early's batteries. The enemy's front was so great that Ricketts', to meet it, had to put his entire command into one line. Gordon's first and second lines were beaten back, and his third and fourth lines were, later, brought into action on the Union left. Early put in his reserves there, and still Ricketts' troops were unbroken and undismayed. It was, however, evident the unequal contest must result in defeat, hence Wallace ordered a retreat on the Baltimore pike. Ricketts did not commence to retire until 4 P.M., and then in good order. Tyler's troops fought well, and held the stone bridge until Ricketts had passed off the field. Early was so seriously hurt that he did not or could not make a vigorous or immediate pursuit. Save some detachments of cavalry, he halted his army at the stone bridge. The Union loss was 10 officers and 113 men killed and 36 officers and 567 men wounded, total, 726, besides captured or missing.¹ Colonel Wm. H. Seward (9th N. Y. H. A.) was slightly wounded and had an ankle broken by the fall of his horse on its being shot.

The veteran Third Division lost 656 of the killed and wounded, and the troops under Tyler 70. My former assistant adjutant-general, Captain Wm. A. Hathaway, was killed in this action. The total killed and wounded in the Second Brigade, from May 5th to July 9th, inclusive, was 2033,² more than half the number lost under Scott and Taylor in the Mexican War.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvii., Part I., pp. 201-2.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 206-7.



MAJOR-GENERAL JAMES B. RICKETTS.
(From a photograph taken 1865.)



FANNY RICKETTS.
(From a photograph taken 1865.)

No report of the Confederate loss has been found, but from the strong Union position, the character of the Confederate attacks, and the number of wounded (400) left in hospital, it must have largely exceeded that of the loyal army. Early says in his report, written immediately after the battle, that his loss "was between 600 and 700."¹

On the morning of the 10th, Early marched *via* Rockville towards Washington, and arrived in front of the fortifications on the Seventh Street pike late the next day. He met no resistance on the way. Wallace, with Ricketts, had retired towards Baltimore. Great consternation reigned at the Capital, and the volunteer militia of the District of Columbia were called out.

The defences were, however, feebly manned. The First and Second Divisions of the Sixth Corps embarked at City Point on the 10th, and a portion of the Second reached Fort Stevens on the 11th, about the time Early reached its front, and the First Division, with the remainder of the Second, arrived next morning. Some skirmishing took place in front of the fort, witnessed by President Lincoln. Many government employees and citizens were put in the trenches. Early retreated across the Potomac to Leesburg, somewhat precipitately, commencing after nightfall on the 12th. He again reached the Valley on the 15th. The Sixth Corps under Wright pursued Early on the 13th, but did not come up with him. Ricketts' division rejoined its corps on the 17th. Portions of Hunter and Crook's commands also joined Wright, who moved *via* Snicker's Gap into the Valley at Berryville. Wright alternately retired and advanced his army, crossing and recrossing the Potomac, until August 5th, when he was at Monocacy Junction, Maryland.

It should be stated in this connection that Early sent General Bradley Johnson with his brigade of cavalry to cut the Northern Central and the Baltimore and Ohio Railroads; he succeeded in doing this, and also in destroying some bridges and two passenger trains. One bridge on the railroad between

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvii., Part I., pp. 348-9.

Washington and Baltimore was destroyed by Johnson while on his way to Point Lookout, Maryland, to release Confederate prisoners. One of the principal objects Lee had in ordering Early into Maryland was to release these prisoners.¹ When Early retired from Washington he recalled Johnson.

The most remarkable thing connected with the campaigns just described was the utter dispersion of the thousands of troops in West Virginia and the Valley under Hunter, Sigel, Crook, Averell, and B. F. Kelly, so that none of them participated in the battle of Monocacy or the defence of Washington.

Wright had been assigned, July 13th,² to command all the troops engaged in the pursuit of Early, including a portion of the Nineteenth Corps under General W. H. Emory, just arriving by transport from the Army of the James. Hunter still remained in command of the Department of West Virginia. The recent failure of Hunter caused him to be distrusted for field work, and another commander was sought. General Sheridan was, by Grant, ordered from the Army of the Potomac, August 2d, to report to Halleck at Washington. In a dispatch to Halleck of August 1st, Grant said he wanted Sheridan put in command of all the troops in the field. On this being shown to President Lincoln (August 3d), he impatiently wired Grant:³

"I have seen your dispatch in which you say 'I want Sheridan put in command of all the troops in the field with instructions to put himself south of the enemy and follow him to the death. Wherever the enemy goes let our troops go also.' This, I think, is exactly right as to how our forces should move; but please look over the dispatches you may have received from here even since you made that order, and discover, if you can, that there is any idea in the head of any one here of 'putting our army south of the enemy,' or of 'following him to the death' in any direction. I repeat to you it will neither be done nor attempted, unless you watch it every day and hour and force it."

¹ *War Records*, vol. xxxvii., Part I., pp. 349, 767, 769.

² *Ibid.*, Part II., pp. 261, 284.

³ *Ibid.*, Part I., p. 582.



CAPTAIN WM. A. HATHAWAY,
110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1863.)



BREVET MAJOR JONATHAN T. RORER,
138TH PENNSYLVANIA VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1865.)

Sheridan reached Harper's Ferry, August 7th, and assumed command of the newly constituted Middle Military Division, including the Middle Department, and the Departments of Washington, Susquehanna, and West Virginia.¹ The First Division of the cavalry, commanded by General Alfred T. A. Torbert, reached Sheridan from before Petersburg, August 9th. Sheridan moved on the 10th, and reached Cedar Creek twelve miles south of Winchester on the Strasburg pike on the 12th, encountering some opposition at Opequon Creek, Winchester, and Newtown. Early was reinforced by Kershaw's division of Longstreet's corps, and by other detachments from Lee's army. The enemy manœuvred on Sheridan's flanks, and by August 22d the Union Army had retired to Halltown and Harper's Ferry.

Thus far Lincoln's predictions were fulfilled. But great events were soon to follow.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., pp. 709, 719, 721.





CHAPTER VIII

PERSONAL MENTION OF GENERALS SHERIDAN, WRIGHT, AND RICKETTS, AND MRS. RICKETTS — ALSO GENERALS CROOK AND HAYES — BATTLE OF OPEQUON, UNDER SHERIDAN, SEPTEMBER, 1864, AND INCIDENTS

I HAD so far recovered from the wound received in the Wilderness as to enable me to reach Baltimore, August 25th, on the way to the army, though my arm was yet in splints and a sling. In response to a telegram, the War Department directed me to report to General Sheridan. I reached Harper's Ferry the next day. When I reported to Sheridan, he looked at me fiercely, and observed: "I want fighting men, not cripples. What can I do with you?" I asked him to order me to General Wright for assignment to my old brigade. He seemed to hesitate. I informed him of my familiarity with the Shenandoah Valley, and told him I thought I was able for duty. He gave the desired order reluctantly.

Sheridan did not impress me favorably then. He seemed restless, nervous, and petulant. I now think I somewhat misjudged him. He was thirty-three years of age,¹ in full vigor of manly strength. He had, both in infantry and cavalry commands, won renown as a soldier, though his highest fame was yet to be achieved. He was short of stature, especially broad across the shoulders, with legs rather short even for his height. His head was quite large, nose prominent, eyes full; he had a strong face, and was of a cheerful, social disposition, rather than retiring and taciturn. Irish characteristics

¹ Sheridan was born March 6, 1831, and died August 5, 1888.



GENERAL PHILIP H. SHERIDAN, U. S. A.
(From a photograph taken 1885.)

predominated in him, and when not on duty he was disposed to be rollicking and free and easy. He was not hard to approach by his inferiors, but he was not always discriminating in the language he used to them. He did not seem to be a deliberate thinker or reasoner, and often gave the impression that his decisions or opinions were off-hand and not the result of reflection. In the quiet of camp he seemed to be less able to combine or plan great movements than in emergencies on the field. In a battle he often showed the excitement of his impetuous nature, but he never lost his head or showed any disposition save to push the enemy. These are some opinions formed after seeing him in several great battles, and knowing him personally through all the later years of his life. It remains to say that he was an honest man, and devotedly loyal to his friends. His fame as a soldier of a high class will endure.

Generals Wright and Ricketts each received me warmly and, as always, showed me the utmost kindness.

Horatio G. Wright was a skilled and educated soldier, of the engineer class. He, like the great Thomas, was of a most lovable disposition and temperament. He had held many important commands during the war; had failed in none, and yet uncomplainingly suffered himself to be assigned from the command of a department to that of a division of troops. He was unfortunate once, as we shall see, and the glory of his chief shone so brightly as to dim the subordinate's well earned fame. But I must not anticipate. Wright was especially fitted to command infantry—a corps or more in battle. His intercourse with his officers was kindly and assuring under all circumstances. His characteristics as a soldier were of the unassuming, sturdy, solid kind—never pyrotechnic. He was modest, and not specially ambitious. In brief, he was a great soldier.

James B. Ricketts was also a highly educated soldier, and when I met him in the Valley he had been in many battles. He was a man of great modesty, of quiet demeanor, and of the most generous impulses. He never spoke unkindly of any person, and was always just to superiors and inferiors. He

was wounded at Bull Run (1861), and captured and confined for many months in prison at Richmond. His heroic wife, Fanny Ricketts, on learning of his being wounded, joined him on the battle-field, and shared his six months' captivity to nurse him.¹ The special mention of Wright and Ricketts and his wife must be pardoned by the reader, as they were of my best friends, not only during, but since the war. Mrs. Ricketts was often in camp with her husband, and though a most refined lady, was, by disposition, education, and spirit quite capable of commanding an army corps. She possessed great executive ability.

Two other officers whose acquaintance I formed in the Valley in 1864, and who were in after life my friends, I venture to mention also.

George Crook was an ideal soldier. He was born near Dayton, Ohio, September 8, 1828, and was a West Point graduate. He was of medium stature, possessed of a gentle but heroic spirit, and justly won renown in the War of the Rebellion, and subsequently in Indian wars. He died suddenly in Chicago, March 21, 1890. His body is buried at Arlington in the midst of his fallen war-comrades. He left no children. His fame as a patriot and soldier belongs to history.

Rutherford B. Hayes, a brigade commander in the opening of Sheridan's Valley campaign, was born at Delaware, Ohio, October 4, 1822. He was not educated for a soldier. He was a man of medium height, strong body, sandy hair, sanguine temperament, and was always self-possessed, and gentle in his intercourse with others. He was a most efficient officer and had the power to inspire his men to heroic deeds. He was twice wounded, and retired at the end of the war distinguished as a volunteer soldier. Subsequently he served a term in Congress, three terms as Governor of Ohio, and was President of the United States 1877 to 1881.

¹ Mrs. Ricketts drove from Washington to Bull Run in her own carriage and besought Gen. J. E. Johnston to parole her husband, and allow her to take him to his home in Washington. This was refused, and her carriage was confiscated. In after years, when the Johnstons were in Washington, he holding high political positions, she refused to recognize them.

I assumed command of my old brigade on the 26th of August, near Halltown. Its ranks had been much depleted, yet it numbered about 2000 effective men, including recruits. It was then composed of the 6th Maryland, 110th, 122d, and 126th Ohio, 67th and 138th Pennsylvania, and 9th New York Heavy Artillery serving as infantry. I found still with it, in command of regiments, Colonels John W. Horn and Wm. H. Ball, Lieutenant-Colonels Otho H. Binkley and Aaron W. Ebright, who had each passed safely through the recent bloody campaigns.

Sheridan's cavalry made daily reconnoissances, and frequently engaged the enemy in advance of Charlestown. A cavalry reconnoissance was made on the 29th which brought on an attack, near Smithfield, by Fitz Lee's cavalry supported by infantry. The report came that our cavalry under General Wesley Merritt were being driven back, and Ricketts was ordered to go to its relief. As I was familiar with the roads and country, he sent me forward with my brigade and some attached troops. We met our cavalry about two miles from Smithfield retiring in a somewhat broken condition. I deployed my command on its left and pushed the enemy back to a ridge about a mile north of that place. Here he made a stand, displaying considerable force. I decided to attack at once. While preparing for an advance, I discovered what appeared to be a considerable body of cavalry forming for a charge on my left flank. My line was single, and I was without support in that direction. At this juncture a small number of mounted officers and men appeared on a knoll to my rear. I supposed them to be a body of cavalry sent forward to participate in the engagement. I rode to advise the officer in command of the threatened danger. I found there Sheridan and his staff and escort; also Merritt and some of his staff. Sheridan had ridden to the front to see the situation. He seemed surprised to see me, and asked sharply, "What are *you* doing here?" There was no time then for parley, as my command had already begun to advance. I told him of the danger, and pointed out to him the enemy's cavalry on our

left, and asked for a force to meet it. He responded that he had no force at hand. I suggested that the cavalry with him, if immediately thrown well out to the left in a threatening position, would answer the purpose. He replied: "—— —, that is my escort." I rejoined that it was needed badly, and might save disaster. With a somewhat amused expression on his face he ordered it to move as I indicated.¹

About the time of this incident a puff of smoke from a rifle, fired on the heights held by the enemy about a mile distant, was seen. Almost instantly a familiar *thud* was heard, and all looked around to see who of the assembled officers had been hit. Major (Surgeon) W. H. Rulison (9th New York Cavalry), serving as Medical Director of the Cavalry, was killed by the shot.²

The enemy was driven from the ridge and we were soon in possession of Smithfield.³ Merritt's cavalry took post at the bridge, and the infantry were withdrawn to camp near Charlestown.

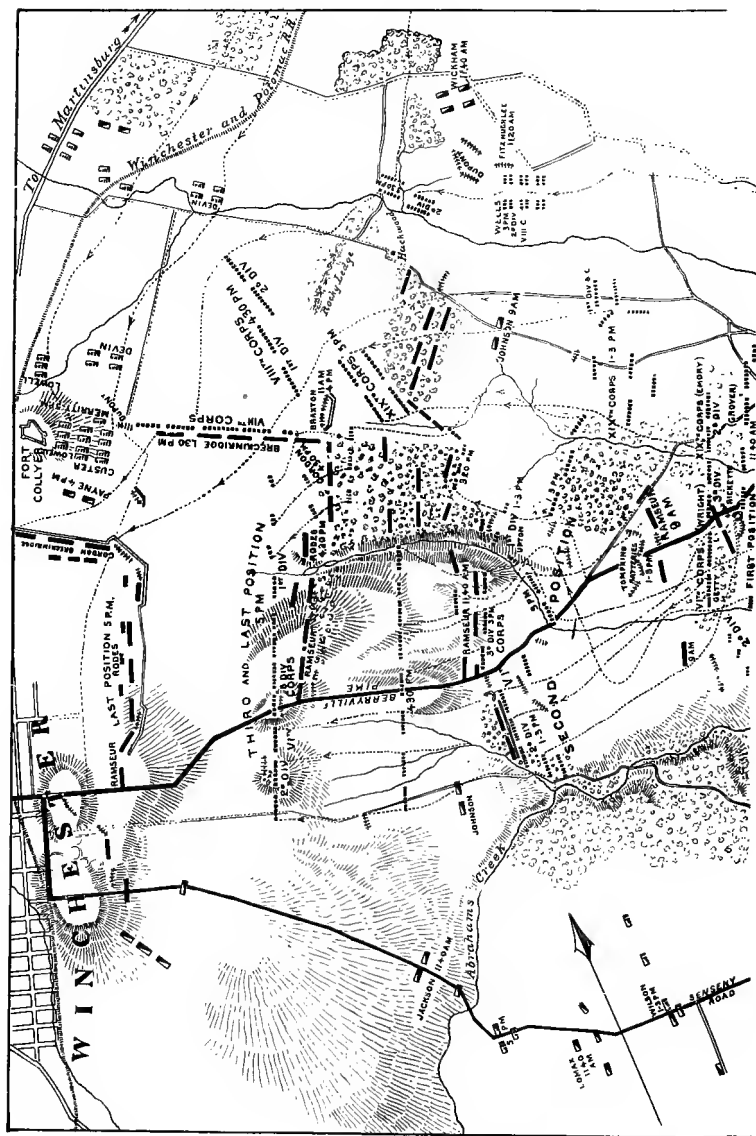
Sheridan threw his whole army forward on September 3d, the infantry stretching from Clifton farm on the right to Berryville on the left. On this day there was short but fierce fighting between Averell and McCausland's cavalry at Bunker Hill, in which the latter was defeated with loss in prisoners, wagons, and supplies, and also between Crook's command and Kershaw's division. The latter seems to have run, at nightfall, unexpectedly, into Crook, near Berryville, and was severely punished. Kershaw was of Longstreet's corps and was then under orders to return to Lee's army at Petersburg. No other event of greater importance than a reconnoissance occurred until the 19th.

Sheridan's army was then composed of the Sixth Corps under Wright—three divisions, commanded, respectively, by Generals David A. Russell, George W. Getty, and James B. Ricketts, and an artillery brigade of six batteries; the

¹ Members of his staff reported Sheridan as saying that the request for his personal body-guard was impudent, but could not be refused.

² *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., 145.

³ *Ibid.*, 45.





BATTLEFIELD OF OPEQUON, VA.
(September 19, 1864. From the official map, 1873.)

Nineteenth Corps under Emory—two divisions and four batteries; Eighth Corps (Army of West Virginia) under Crook—two divisions, and an artillery brigade of three batteries. Besides the troops mentioned, there were three divisions of cavalry and eight light or horse artillery batteries, commanded by General Alfred T. A. Torbert. The cavalry divisions were commanded, respectively, by Generals Wesley Merritt, Wm. W. Averell, and James H. Wilson.¹ Although there were in Sheridan's command about 50,000 men present for duty, they were so scattered, guarding railroads and various positions, that he was not able to take into battle more than 25,000 men of all arms.² Early had in the Valley District Ewell's corps, Breckinridge's command, and at least one division of Longstreet's corps, Fitz Lee's and McCausland's cavalry divisions and other cavalry organizations, and it is probable that he was not able to bring into battle more than 25,000 effective men. These estimates will hold good through the months of September and October, though some additions and changes took place in each army. Grant met Sheridan at Charlestown the 16th, to arrange a plan for the latter to attack Early. Sheridan drew from his pocket a plat showing the location of the opposing armies, roads, streams, etc., and detailed to Grant a plan of battle of his own, saying he could whip Early. Grant approved the plan, and did not even exhibit one of his own, previously prepared. This meeting was on Friday. Sheridan was to move the next Monday.³

Sheridan gives much credit to Miss Rebecca M. Wright of Winchester for sending him information by a messenger that Kershaw's division and Cutshaw's artillery, under General Anderson, had started to rejoin General Lee.⁴

The enemy was in camp about five miles north of Winchester at Stephenson's Depot, his cavalry extending eastward to the crossing of the Opequon by the Berryville pike. Our camps were, in general, about six miles to the northward of

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., pp. 107-112.

² *Ibid.*, p. 61.

³ *Grant's Memoirs*, vol. ii., p. 328. ⁴ *Sheridan's Memoirs*, vol. ii., pp. 4-7.

Opequon Creek. Sheridan's plan submitted to Grant was to avoid Early's army, pass to the east of Winchester, and strike the Valley pike at Newtown, seven miles south of Winchester, and there, being in Early's rear, force him to give battle.¹ Early moved two divisions to Martinsburg on the 18th, which caused Sheridan suddenly to change his plan and determine to attack the remaining divisions at Stephenson's Depot. Early, however, did not tarry at Martinsburg, but learning there of Grant's visit to Sheridan, and fearing some aggressive movement, returned the same night, leaving Gordon's division at Bunker's Hill with orders to start at daylight the next morning for the Depot. Gordon reached the Depot about the time the battle opened.²

Sheridan's final plan for the expected battle was set forth in orders issued on the 18th. It was for Wilson's cavalry and Wright's corps to force a crossing of Opequon Creek on the Berryville pike. Emory was to report to Wright and follow him. As soon as the open country, south of the Opequon, was reached, Wright was to put both corps in line of battle fronting Stephenson's Depot. Crook's command was to move to the same crossing of the Opequon and be held there as a reserve. Merritt and Averell's cavalry divisions under Torbert were to move to the right in the direction of Bunker Hill.³

The army moved at 2 A.M. of the 19th as ordered. Wilson's cavalry succeeded in crossing the creek and driving the enemy's cavalry through a deep defile some two miles towards Winchester. Wright followed, Getty's division leading, Ricketts and Russell following. When the defile was passed, Getty went into position on the left of the pike, Ricketts on the right, both in two lines, and Russell's division was held in reserve. My brigade was the right of the corps as formed for battle. The only battery up was put in position on the right. The Nineteenth Corps was ordered to form on the right of the Sixth and to connect with it. Up to this time no severe

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 46.

² *Ibid.*, p. 555.

³ *Ibid.*, Part II., pp. 102-3.

fighting had taken place. Early was forced to move the main part of his army to his right to cover the Berryville and Winchester pike. Upon our side much delay occurred in getting up the artillery and the Nineteenth Corps, during which time we were exposed to an incessant fire from the enemy's guns. The Nineteenth did not make a close connection on the right of the Sixth. Not until 11.40 A.M. was the order given for a general attack. Ricketts' division was to keep its left on the pike. As soon as the advance commenced the Sixth Corps was exposed to a heavy artillery fire from the enemy's batteries, but it went forward gallantly for about one mile, driving or capturing all before it. General Ricketts, in his report of September 27th, describes what took place:

"The Nineteenth Corps did not move and keep connection with my right, and the turnpike upon which the division was dressing bore to the left, causing a wide interval between the Sixth and Nineteenth Corps. As the lines advanced the interval became greater. The enemy, discovering this fact, hurled a large body of men towards the interval and threatened to take my right in flank. Colonel Keifer at once caused the 138th and 67th Pennsylvania and 110th Ohio to break their connection with the right of the remainder of his brigade and move towards the advancing columns of the enemy. These three regiments most gallantly met the overwhelming masses of the enemy and held them in check. As soon as the Nineteenth Corps engaged the enemy the force in my front commenced slowly retiring. The three regiments named were pushed forward until they came upon two batteries (eight guns), silencing them and compelling the enemy to abandon them. The three regiments had arrived within less than two hundred yards of the two batteries when the Nineteenth Corps, after a most gallant resistance, gave way. These guns would have been taken by our troops had our flanks been properly protected. The enemy at once came upon my right flank in large force; successful resistance was no longer possible; the order was given for our men to fall back on our second line, but the enemy advancing at the time in force threw us temporarily into confusion."

The repulse of the Nineteenth, and consequently of my

three regiments, left Breckinridge's corps full on our right flank, threatening disaster to the army. Wright promptly put in Russell's division, until then in reserve, and the progress of the enemy was arrested. Here the brave David A. Russell lost his life. My report, written September 27, 1864, describes, in general, a further part taken by my brigade:

"The broken troops of my brigade were halted and reformed in a woods behind troops from the reserve, which had come forward to fill up the interval. As soon as reformed, they were moved forward again over the same ground they had traversed the first time. While moving this portion of my brigade forward, I received an order from Brigadier-General Ricketts, commanding division, to again unite my brigade near the centre of the corps, and to the right of the turnpike, near a house. This order was obeyed at once, and my whole brigade was placed in one line, immediately confronting the enemy. The four regiments of my brigade, that were upon the left, kept connection with the First Brigade, Third Division, and fought desperately, in the main driving the enemy. They also captured a considerable number of prisoners in their first advance.

"Heavy firing was kept up along the whole line until about 4 p.m., when a general advance took place. The enemy gave way before the impetuosity of our troops, and were soon completely routed. This brigade pressed forward with the advance line to, and into, the streets of Winchester. The rout of the enemy was everywhere complete. Night came on, and the pursuit was stopped. The troops of my brigade encamped with the corps on the Strasburg and Front Royal roads, south of Winchester."

It was Sheridan's design, if Wright's attack had been completely successful, to push Crook rapidly past Winchester and seize the Strasburg pike, and thus cut off Early's retreat; but the repulse of the Nineteenth Corps made it necessary to move Crook to our right. This caused some delay, during which the Sixth Corps bore the brunt of the battle. General Hayes, in his report, dated October 13, 1864, describes the part taken by a division of Crook's command:

"I have the honor to report that at the battle of Opequon, Sep-

tember 19, 1864, the Second Infantry Division, Army of West Virginia, was commanded by Colonel Isaac H. Duval until late in the afternoon of that day, when he was disabled by a severe wound, and the command of the division devolved upon me. Colonel Duval did not quit the field until the defeat of the enemy was accomplished and the serious fighting ended. The division took no part in the action during the forenoon, but remained in reserve at the Opequon bridge, on the Berryville and Winchester pike. The fighting of other portions of the army had been severe, but indecisive. There were some indications as we approached the battle-field soon after noon that the forces engaged in the forenoon had been overmatched. About 1 P.M. this division was formed on the extreme right of the infantry line of our army, the First Brigade, under my command, in advance, and the Second Brigade, Colonel D. D. Johnson commanding, about sixty yards in the rear, forming a supporting line; the right of the Second Brigade being, however, extended about one hundred yards farther to the right than the First Brigade. The division was swung around some distance to the right, so as to strike the rebel line on the left flank. The rebel left was protected by field-works and a battery on the south side of Red Bud Creek. This creek was easily crossed in some places, but in others was a deep, miry pool from twenty to thirty yards wide and almost impassable. The creek was not visible from any part of our line when we began to move forward, and no one probably knew of it until its banks were reached. The division moved forward at the same time with the First Division, Colonel Thoburn, on our left, in good order and without much opposition until we unexpectedly came upon Red Bud Creek. This creek and the rough ground and tangled thicket on its banks was in easy range of grape, canister, and musketry from the rebel line. A very destructive fire was opened upon us, in the midst of which our men rushed into and over the creek. Owing to the difficulty in crossing, the rear and front lines and different regiments of the same line mingled together and reached the rebel side of the creek with lines and organizations broken; but all seemed inspired by the right spirit, and charged the rebel works pell-mell in the most determined manner. In this charge our loss was heavy, but our success was rapid and complete. The rebel left in our front was turned and broken, and one or more pieces of artillery captured. No attempt was made after this to form lines or regiments.

Officers and men went forward, pushing the rebels from one position to another until the defeated enemy were routed and driven through Winchester."

About 5 P.M. Sheridan galloped along the front line of the Sixth Corps with hat and sword in hand and assured the men, in more expressive than elegant language, of victory in the final attack, and he, about the same time, ordered Wilson with his cavalry to push out from the left and gain the Valley pike south of Winchester. Torbert, with Merritt and Averell's cavalry, was ordered to sweep down along the Martinsburg pike on Crook's right to strike Early's left. The enemy had been pushed back upon the open plains northeast of Winchester and was trying hard to hold his left against the foot-hills of Apple-Pie Ridge, and to cover the Martinsburg pike.

Most of the enemy's cavalry and much of his artillery were on his left. Getty (Sixth Corps), who from the first held the left of our infantry, steadily advanced, holding whatever ground he gained. The Nineteenth did not participate largely in the battle after its repulse. The cavalry bore a conspicuous part in the battle. The last stand was made by Early one mile from Winchester. About 5 P.M. Wright and Crook's corps, though then in single line, impetuously dashed forward, while Merritt and Averell's cavalry divisions under Torbert, somewhat closely massed, overthrew the Confederate cavalry and swept mercilessly along the Martinsburg pike and the foot of the precipitous ridge. The enemy's artillery was ridden over or forced to fly from the field. Torbert reached the left flank of the Confederate infantry at the moment it was hard pressed by the advancing troops of Wright and Crook. Our cavalry, in deep column, with sabres drawn, charged over the Confederate left, and the battle was won. This charge was the most stirring and picturesque of the war. The sun was setting, but could be seen through the church spires of the city. Its rays glistening upon the drawn sabres of the thousands of mounted warriors made a picture in real war, rarely witnessed. In this charge, besides the division leaders mentioned, were Generals Custer and Devin, and Colonels Lowell,



BREVET MAJOR-GENERAL RUTHERFORD B. HAYES.

(From a photograph taken from a painting.)

Schoonmaker, and Capehart, leading brigades, all specially distinguished as cavalry soldiers. The fighting continued into and through the streets of Winchester. The pursuit was arrested by the coming of night and the weariness of the soldiers, many of whom had been without food or rest for about eighteen hours. The significance of the victory was great, but it was particularly gratifying to the old soldiers in my command who had fought at Winchester under Milroy. The night battle at Stephenson's Depot, fifteen months before—June, 1863—was within the limits of the field of Opequon. Ewell's corps had driven Milroy from Winchester, but now, in turn, under another commander, it was flying as precipitately from our forces. The war-doomed city of Winchester was never again to see a Confederate Army. Wilson's cavalry division did good service on the Union left, often fiercely attacking the Confederate right flank. Late in the day he pushed past Winchester on the east, and encountered and dispersed Bradley Johnson's cavalry. Wilson, however, was too weak to cut off Early's retreat, but he continued in pursuit until 10 P.M.

This was my first considerable battle after being severely wounded, and candor compels me to say that I do not think being wounded one or more times has a tendency to promote bravery or to steady nerves for future battles. The common experience, however, is that when a soldier is once engaged in the conflict, his nerves, if before affected, become steady, and danger is forgotten.

My horse was shot while leading the three regiments on the right of the corps; later I was severely bruised on the left hip by a portion of an exploded shell, and a second horse was struck by a fragment of one which burst beneath him while I was trying to capture a battery posted on a hill at the south end of the main street of Winchester.

I quote again from my report:

"My brigade lost, in the battle of Opequon, some valiant and superior officers. Lieutenant-Colonel A. W. Ebright, commanding the 126th Ohio, was killed instantly early in the action. He was

uniformly brave and skilful. He had fought in the many battles of the Sixth Corps during the past summer's campaign. Captain Thomas J. Hyatt and Lieutenant Rufus Ricksecker, 126th Ohio, and Lieutenant Wm. H. Burns, 6th Maryland, also fell in this action. Each was conspicuous for gallantry on this and other fields upon which he had fought. Colonel John W. Horn, 6th Maryland, whom none excelled for distinguished bravery, was severely if not mortally wounded.¹ Colonel William H. Ball, 122d Ohio, received a wound from a shell, but did not quit the field. He maintained his usual reputation for cool courage and excellent judgment and skill. Captain John S. Stucky, 138th Pennsylvania, lost a leg. Major Chas. M. Cornyn, 122d Ohio; Captains Feight and Walter, 138th Pennsylvania; Captain Williams, Lieutenants Patterson, Wells, and Crooks, 126th Ohio; Captains Hawkins and Rouzer and Lieutenant Smith, 6th Maryland; Lieutenants Fish and Calvin, 9th New York Heavy Artillery; Captains Van Eaton and Trimble and Lieutenants Deeter and Simes, 110th Ohio, are among the many officers more or less severely wounded. (Lieutenant Deeter, 110th Ohio, has since died.)

"Captain J. P. Dudrow, 122d Ohio, and Lieutenant R. W. Wiley, 110th Ohio, were each slightly wounded while acting as A. D. C's upon my staff."

Colonel Ebright had a premonition of his death. A few moments before 12 M. he sought me, and coolly told me he would be killed before the battle ended. He insisted upon telling me that he wanted his remains and effects sent to his home in Lancaster, Ohio, and I was asked to write his wife as to some property in the West which he feared she did not know about. He was impatient when I tried to remove the thought of imminent death from his mind. A few moments later the time for another advance came, and the interview with Colonel Ebright closed. In less than ten minutes, while he was riding near me he fell dead from his horse, pierced in the breast by a rifle ball. His apprehension of death was not prompted by fear. He had been through the slaughters of the Wilderness and Cold Harbor; had fought his regiment in the

¹ Colonel Horn survived the war, and died near Mitchellville, Md., October 4, 1897.



BREVET COLONEL MOSES M. GRANGER
122D OHIO VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1864.)

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL AARON W. EBRIGHT,
128TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1864)

dead angle of Spotsylvania, and led it at Monocacy. It is needless to say I complied with his request.

Incidents like this were not uncommon.

The battle was a bloody one.

The Union killed and wounded were :¹

	KILLED.		WOUNDED.		Aggregate.
	Officers.	Men.	Officers.	Men.	
Sixth Army Corps (Wright).....	18	193	111	1331	1653
Nineteenth Army Corps (Emory)	22	292	104	1450	1868
Army of W. Va.....	6	98	34	649	787
Cavalry.....	7	61	29	275	372
Totals.....	53	644	278	3705	4680

The casualties in my brigade were 4 officers and 46 men killed, 24 officers and 261 men wounded; aggregate, 335.² This was little less than the total loss in the three cavalry divisions.

There is no complete list of Confederate losses so far as I can discover. Early reported his killed and wounded in this battle at 2141, and missing 1818, total, 3959.³ Doubtless many of the missing were killed or wounded. General R. E. Rodes was killed in a charge with his division.⁴ General Godwin and Colonel Patton were also killed; Generals Fitzhugh Lee and York were severely wounded.

This battle was inspiring to the country. Lincoln, Stanton, and Grant each wired congratulations and thanks.⁴

Sheridan was now appointed a Brigadier-General in the regular army and assigned to the permanent command of the Middle Military Division.

The Valley was soon to further reek with blood, and the torch of war was soon to consume it.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., 118.

² *Ibid.*, p. 113.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 555.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 61-2.



CHAPTER IX

BATTLE OF FISHER'S HILL—PURSUIT OF EARLY—DEVASTATION OF THE SHENANDOAH VALLEY (1864)—CAVALRY BATTLE AT TOM'S BROOK, AND MINOR EVENTS

WE left Sheridan's victorious army south of Winchester, five miles from the battle-field. It had only such opportunity for rest as can be obtained on the night succeeding a long day's battle. Some of the officers and soldiers returned to the scene of the conflict through the gloom of night, to minister to the wounded and to find and identify the bodies of dead friends. It was, however, the duty of the surgeons, hospital attendants, ambulance corps, and stretcher-bearers to care for the wounded; and the dead of both armies could be buried later. The bodies of some of the dead of the successful army are always sent home for interment. Chaplains are often instrumental in doing the latter. Rations, forage, and ammunition had now to be brought up and distributed. No matter how well soldiers have been supplied, they generally come out of a great battle with little.

Early's army bivouacked at Newtown, and at 3 A.M. of the 20th of September continued its retreat to Fisher's Hill, about two miles south of Strasburg. Early placed his army in a strong defensive position on this hill, which is an abrupt bluff with a precipitous rocky face, and immediately south of Tumbling Run. His right rested on the Shenandoah River, and his left extended to the narrow Cedar Creek Valley at the foot of Little North Mountain. This naturally strong position was well fortified and impregnable against front attack.

Sheridan's army moved at day-dawn of the 20th in pursuit,



BATTLEFIELD OF FISHER'S HILL, VA.
(September 22, 1864. From the official map.)

Emory in the advance. Wright and Emory occupied the heights around Strasburg on the evening of that day, and Crook's corps was moved to their right and rear, north of Cedar Creek, where it was concealed in the dense timber. Sheridan determined to use Crook to turn the enemy's left, if possible. The Nineteenth and Sixth Corps during the night of the 20th took position in the order named, from left to right, in front of Fisher's Hill. This was not accomplished without some fierce conflicts, brought on in dislodging the enemy from strongly fortified heights which he held in advance of his main line. A portion of my brigade was engaged in these preliminary movements all the night.¹ The Third—Ricketts' division—was again on the right of the Sixth Corps and of the army as formed on the 21st. Near the close of the day I was informed by a staff officer of General Ricketts that my command was to be held in reserve behind the right, and that I was not likely to be engaged in the coming battle if the plan of the commanding general was carried out. I was directed to get my regiments into as comfortable a situation as possible for rest, and hence selected a good place to bivouac, and was employed in riding through the troops and telling the officers of the prospect of freedom from severe work the coming day when a brisk engagement broke out in my immediate front. A portion of the Second Division of the Sixth Corps was repulsed in an attempt, just at nightfall, to carry a fortified hill in front of our right, which Sheridan and Wright had suddenly decided must be taken for the security of our army.² Wright, seeing my command near at hand, ordered Ricketts to send to me for a regiment to reinforce the repulsed troops. I sent the 126th Ohio under Captain George W. Hoge, and it soon became seriously imperilled in a renewed attack. Discovering this, I followed it with the 6th Maryland under Major C. K. Prentiss, and, uniting the two with other troops, charged the heights just at dark and carried them. My two regiments occupied them for the night.³

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 152.

² *Ibid.*, p. 152. ³ *Ibid.*, p. 223 (Ricketts' Report).

Sheridan, on the 21st, ordered Torbert with Merritt and Wilson's cavalry divisions (save Devin's brigade) to the Luray Valley, with instructions to drive out any force of the enemy he might encounter, and, if possible, cross over from that Valley to New Market and intercept Early's retreat, should the latter be defeated in the impending battle. Averell's cavalry division was on the Back or Cedar Creek road, well advanced.

The Sixth and Nineteenth Corps held their positions of the previous evening, and threatened the enemy in front. Part of my brigade was continued on the advance line during the forenoon of the 22d, the remainder in reserve. The real attack was to be made by Crook, but this rendered it desirable to conceal his movements and deceive the vigilant enemy. While Crook remained in hiding in the timber, Sheridan decided to demonstrate against Early's left centre in such way as to lead him to expect a formidable assault there. Accordingly the whole of Ricketts' division with Averell's cavalry was, about 12 M., rather defiantly displayed and moved conspicuously to our right, and close upon the enemy's front. My position in partial reserve made my command the most available for this movement. I was therefore ordered to take the advance, followed by Colonel Emerson with the First Brigade. The movement was made in full sight of the enemy and under the fire of his guns. We gained, after some fighting, a ridge that extended near to Tumbling Run on the north of the enemy's fortifications. The enemy fought hard to hold possession of this ridge as a protection to his left and as a good lookout. Under Ricketts' orders I continued by repeated charges to push the enemy along this ridge for about three quarters of a mile until he was forced to abandon it, cross the Run, and take refuge within his works. Under such cover as we could get my men were now held within easy musket shot of the enemy. During this movement our guns in the rear tried to aid us, but it was hard to tell which we suffered from the most—our own shells or the enemy's fire. Averell's cavalry pushed back the enemy's skirmishers still farther to our right.

The enemy, from his signal station on Three-Top Mountain,

took the movements of Ricketts and Averell to be a preparation for a real attack, designed to fall on the front of Ramseur's division, and he prepared to meet it. While these operations were taking place, Crook moved his infantry under cover of the thick timber along the face of Little North Mountain, and by 4 P.M. reached a position with his two divisions full on Early's left flank. Crook at once crossed the narrow Valley and bore down on the enemy's extreme left, which at once gave way. Ramseur, in my front, had been attentively watching Ricketts, and now seeing the danger from Crook, commenced drawing his troops out of his breastworks and changing front to his left. I was near enough to discover this movement and, to prevent its consummation, I ordered an immediate charge, which was executed on a run. Ramseur, discovering the new and seemingly more imminent danger, tried to reoccupy his works, but, simultaneously, Crook charged, and Ramseur's troops, caught in the midst of his movement, fell into confusion, became panic-stricken, and fled through the timber or were captured. This spread a panic to Early's entire army. The troops of my command did not halt to fire in the charge, but crossed the Run and struggled up the precipitous banks and over the breastworks, suffering little loss, and were soon in possession of eight of the enemy's guns and some prisoners. They met inside of the enemy's fortifications and commingled with Crook's men. When the charge was well under way, Colonel George A. (Sandy) Forsyth¹ of Sheridan's staff reached me on the gallop. He was the bearer of orders, but did not deliver them. He only exclaimed: "You are all right; you need no orders." He, later, explained that Sheridan had sent

¹ Forsyth, precisely four years later, while in command of fifty picked scouts was surrounded on Beecher Island, on the Arickaree fork of the Republican River, by about nine hundred Indians, led by the celebrated chief, Roman Nose, and made the most desperate fight known in the annals of our Indian wars. Lieutenant Beecher, Surgeon Movers, and six of the scouts were killed and twenty others severely wounded. Forsyth was himself struck in the right thigh and his left leg was broken by rifle balls. He held out eight days; meantime two of his scouts succeeded in eluding the Indians and, reaching Fort Wallace, 110 miles distant, returned with a relieving party.—Custer's *Life on the Plains*, 88-98.

him to direct me to assault, if opportunity presented, in co-operation with Crook.

In passing on horseback around the right of the enemy's works to gain an entrance, and while going up a steep hill in the timber, I fell in with a mounted officer wearing a plain blouse and a slouch hat, but with no insignia of rank. We continued together for a short time, he inquiring of the progress of the battle as I had observed it. I asked him if he knew what General Crook was then doing. He modestly laughed, and said Crook was just then engaged with me in gaining an entrance to the enemy's fortifications, and that he supposed his command was pursuing Early. Here began my acquaintance with the hero of this battle, that ripened into a friendship which ended only with his death.

Early could not rally his troops to a stand, and all his guns in position behind his works fell into our hands. Night only saved him and his demoralized army from capture. The other divisions of the Sixth and the Nineteenth Corps came up promptly, but the battle was over with the assault.

Captain Jed. Hotchkiss, of the Topographical Engineers, serving in Early's army, describes the operations in his journal of the 22d, thus:

"The enemy at 1 P.M. advanced several lines of battle in front of Ramseur, but did not come far, and only drove in our skirmish line. At 4.30 P.M. they drove in the skirmishers in front of Gordon and opened a lively artillery duel. At the same time a flanking force that had come on our left, near the North Mountain, advanced and drove away the cavalry and moved on the left flank of our infantry—rather beyond it. The brigade there (Battle's) was ordered to move to the left, and the whole line was ordered to extend that way, moving along the line of the breastworks. But the enemy attacking just then (5.30 P.M.) the second brigade from the left, instead of marching by the line of works, was marched across an angle by its commander. The enemy seeing this movement rushed over the works, and the brigade fled in confusion, thus letting the enemy into the rear of Early's division, as well as of Gordon's and the rest of Rodes'; our whole line gave way towards the right, offering little or



MAJOR-GENERAL GEORGE CROOK, U. S. A.

(From a photograph taken 1888.)

no resistance, and the enemy came on and occupied our line. General Early and staff were near by, and I with others went after Wharton (to the right), but it was too late."

At 4 A.M. next morning Early dispatched Lee:

"Late yesterday the enemy attacked my position at Fisher's Hill and succeeded in driving back the left of my line, which was defended by the cavalry, and throwing a force in the rear of the left of my infantry, when the whole of the troops gave way in a panic and could not be rallied. This resulted in the loss of twelve pieces of artillery, though my loss in men is not large."¹

He, later, reported his killed and wounded at Fisher's Hill at 240, missing 995; total, 1235.² Many of his missing were doubtless killed or wounded.

The Union killed and wounded were:³

	KILLED.	WOUNDED.	AGGREGATE.
Sixth Army Corps	27	208	235
Nineteenth Army Corps.....	15	86	101
Army of W. Va. (Crook).....	8	152	160
Cavalry.....	2	11	13
Totals.....	52	457	509

The killed and wounded in my brigade were 80, exactly one half the casualties in Crook's command, and above one third in the Sixth Corps.

The victory of Fisher's Hill, though comparatively bloodless, was one of the most complete of the war. But from the inability of Torbert to drive Fitz Lee's cavalry (then under Wickham in consequence of Fitz Lee being wounded at Opequon) from the Luray Valley and to gain a position in Early's rear, the latter's army would have been destroyed. Torbert encountered Wickham in a narrow gorge and was unable to dislodge him in time. Sheridan's infantry assembled on the

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 557. ² *Ibid.*, p. 556. ³ *Ibid.*, p. 124.

Valley pike south of Fisher's Hill after dark, and continuing the pursuit all night, capturing many stragglers and two more guns, reached Woodstock twelve miles farther south at day-break. Averell was ordered to push forward up the Cedar Creek road and debouch at Woodstock in rear of the retreating foe. This, for some reason, he did not do, but soon after dark went into camp and awaited daylight. He reached Woodstock after the infantry corps, too late to cut off or assail the enemy. For this and some other alleged delinquencies Sheridan relieved him from the command of his division, and assigned Colonel William H. Powell to succeed him.

Early collected his broken forces and essayed to make a stand at Rude's Hill, east of the Shenandoah and south of Mount Jackson. As our troops advanced to attack him, however, he withdrew rapidly in the direction of Staunton. After passing New Market he took a road leading to Brown's Gap, where he was joined by his cavalry from Luray Valley and Kershaw's division and Cutshaw's artillery, which had left him at Stephenson's Depot on the 15th.

Not until the 25th did Torbert with his cavalry reach Sheridan at New Market. Some of Sheridan's infantry advanced as far as Mount Crawford and Lacey Springs, while the main body of the cavalry pushed to Staunton and Waynesboro.

An incident occurred on the evening of the 3d of October that had something to do with the severity of orders relating to the destruction of property in the Shenandoah Valley. Lieutenant John R. Meigs, Sheridan's engineer officer, while returning from a topographical survey of the country near Dayton, accompanied by two assistants, fell in with three men in our uniform, and rode with them towards Sheridan's headquarters. Suddenly these men turned on Lieutenant Meigs and, though demanding his surrender, shot and killed him. One of his assistants was captured and one escaped and reported the event. Sheridan was much enraged, as the killing of the Lieutenant was little less than a murder, occurring, as it did, within our lines. The three men were probably disguised Confederates operating near their homes. Sheridan

ordered Custer, who had succeeded to the command of Wilson's cavalry division, to burn all houses within an area of five miles of the spot where Meigs was killed. The next morning Custer proceeded to execute this order. The designated area included the village of Dayton. When a few houses had been burned the order was suspended, and Custer was required instead to bring in all able-bodied men as prisoners.¹

General T. W. Rosser, with a cavalry brigade from Richmond, joined Early on the 5th of October, and the latter's army, being otherwise much strengthened, soon began again to show signs of activity.

As the Sixth Corps was expected to rejoin the Army of the Potomac in front of Petersburg, Sheridan decided to withdraw at least as far as Strasburg, and he determined also to lay waste the Valley, as it was a great magazine of supplies for the Confederate armies. He commenced to move on the 6th, the infantry taking the advance. The cavalry had begun the work of destruction at Waynesboro and Staunton. It usually remained quiet during the day, then at night, while moving, set fire to all grain stacks, barns, and mills, thus leaving behind it nothing but a waste. The fires lit up the Valley and the mountain sides, producing a picture of resplendent grandeur seldom witnessed. The flames lighted up the fertile Valley, casting a hideous glare, commingled with clouds of smoke, over the foot-hills and to the summits of the great mountain ranges on each side of the doomed Valley. The occasional discharge of artillery helped to make the panorama sublime. Fire and sword here literally combined in the real work of war. Of the necessity or wisdom of this destruction of property there may be doubts, yet the war had then progressed to an acute stage. All possible means to hasten its termination seemed justifiable. Chambersburg, Pa., had been wantonly burned July 30, 1864. It has been charged that Sheridan declared that he would so completely destroy everything in the Valley that a "crow would have to carry a haversack when he flew over it." The Confederates, with Rosser, their new cavalry leader, pursued

¹ *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., pp. 50-2.

and daily assailed Sheridan's rear-guard. This continued until the evening of the 8th. Rosser's apparent success was heralded in an exaggerated way at Richmond. He was bulletined there as the "Savior of the Valley." He had recently before his advent to the Valley won reputation in a raid in which he had captured and driven off some cattle belonging to Grant's army. Torbert was ordered by Sheridan, on the night of the 8th, to whip Rosser the next morning or get whipped.

The infantry of the army was halted to await the issue of the cavalry battle. Sheridan informed Torbert that he would witness the fight from Round Top Mountain. Merritt's division was encamped on the Valley pike at the foot of this mountain, just north of Tom's Brook, and Custer's division about five miles farther north and west near Tumbling Run. Custer during the night moved southward by the Back road, which lay about three miles to the westward of the pike. At early daylight, Rosser, believing our army was still falling back, unexpectedly met and assailed Custer with three cavalry brigades, and almost simultaneously Merritt, in turn, assailed Lomax and Johnson's cavalry divisions on the Valley pike. Merritt extended his right and Custer his left until the two divisions united, when, under Torbert, they charged upon and broke Rosser's lines all along Tom's Brook. The battle lasted about two hours, when Rosser's entire force fell into the wildest disorder, and in falling back degenerated into a rout. Torbert pursued for twenty-five miles, capturing about three hundred prisoners, eleven pieces of artillery with their caissons, and all Rosser's wagons and ambulances, including his headquarters wagons with his official papers. It was said that unsent bulletins announcing Rosser's anticipated victories for the

¹ General A. T. A. Torbert distinguished himself on many fields and survived the war. While making a voyage on the steamer *Vera Cruz* he was shipwrecked off the Florida coast, August 29, 1880. He heroically aided others to escape death, and with almost superhuman exertion kept himself afloat on a broken spar for twenty hours, and thus reached shore, only to sink down and die from exhaustion.

day were found. Rosser's fame as a soldier, earned by years of hard fighting, was lost at Tom's Brook in two hours.

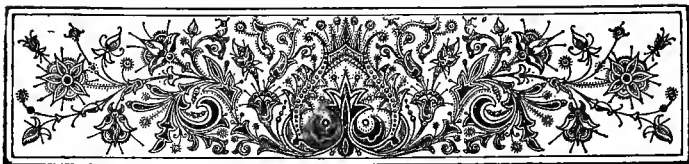
Disasters had now become so frequent to the Confederates in the Valley that some wag at Richmond marked a fresh shipment of new guns destined for Early's army: "*General Sheridan, care of Jubal A. Early.*"

Sheridan's army retired to the north of Cedar Creek. The Sixth Corps, having orders to rejoin the Army of the Potomac, continued its march eastward towards Front Royal, expecting to proceed to Piedmont and there take cars for Alexandria. It abandoned that route, however, on the 12th, and marched towards Ashby's Gap, with a view of passing through it to Washington, and going thence, by transports, to City Point.¹ When this corps was partly across the Shenandoah near Millwood, on the 13th, an order came from Sheridan for Wright to return with his corps to Cedar Creek. This order was given in consequence of Early's return to Fisher's Hill. The necessity of the Sixth Corps' return will soon be apparent. It reached Cedar Creek and went into camp at noon of the 14th.

I recall the incident of a red fox starting to run through the temporary bivouac of the corps at Millwood. The troops all turned out, about 10,000, formed a ring around it, while a few horsemen rode after it until it fell from fright and exhaustion. The officers and men of an army always enjoyed incidents of this character. There was, however, more serious diversion near at hand for these bronzed soldiers.

¹ *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., p. 59.





CHAPTER X

BATTLE OF CEDAR CREEK, OCTOBER 19, 1864, WITH COMMENTS THEREON — ALSO PERSONAL MENTION AND INCIDENTS

GENERAL EARLY, on his arrival at Fisher's Hill with his reorganized army, assumed, on the 13th of October, an aggressive attitude by pushing a division of infantry north of Strasburg and his cavalry along the Back road towards Cedar Creek. This brought on sharp engagements, in which Colonel Thoburn's division of Crook's corps and Custer's cavalry participated. Early seems to have acted in the belief that all but Crook's command had gone to Petersburg. This action resulted in bringing Wright back to Cedar Creek, as we have seen.

Secretary Stanton, by telegram on the 13th, summoned Sheridan to Washington for consultation as to the latter's future operations.

Early, having met unexpected resistance, withdrew his forces at night to Fisher's Hill, and quiet being restored, Sheridan started on the 16th to Washington, *via* Front Royal and Manassas Gap. He took with him as far as Front Royal his cavalry, under Torbert, intending to push them through Chester Gap to the Virginia Central Railroad at Charlottesville, to make an extensive raid east of the Blue Ridge.

Early had a signal station on Three Top Mountain in plain view of our signal officers, who knew the Confederate signal code. From this station there was flagged, on the 16th, this message:



MAJOR-GENERAL GEO. W. GETTY.
(From a photograph taken 1864)



BRIGADIER-GENERAL WM. H. SEWARD.
(From a photograph taken 1864.)

"TO LIEUTENANT-GENERAL EARLY :

"Be ready to move as soon as my forces join you, and we will crush Sheridan.

"LONGSTREET, Lieutenant-General."

Wright, who was left in command of the army at Cedar Creek, forwarded this message to Sheridan, who received it when near Front Royal. Wright, also, in a communication accompanying the message, expressed fear of an attack in the absence of the cavalry. He anticipated that it would fall on his right. Sheridan, deeming it best to be on the safe side, abandoned the cavalry raid, and ordered Torbert to report back to Wright, cautioning the latter to be well on his guard, and expressing the opinion to Wright that if attacked he could beat the enemy.¹ Sheridan with a cavalry escort proceeded to Rectortown, the terminus of the railroad; there took cars, and arrived in Washington the morning of the 17th. He held a consultation with Stanton and Halleck, and with certain members of his staff left Washington at 12 M. by rail, arriving the evening of the same day at Martinsburg. Here he was met by an escort of three hundred cavalry. He left Martinsburg the next morning (18th), and reached Winchester about 3 P.M., twenty-two miles distant. He tarried at the latter place over night, making some survey of the surrounding heights as to their utility for fortifications.

But to return to his army. Torbert reached Cedar Creek with the cavalry on the 17th. The Longstreet message was a ruse. Longstreet, though in Richmond, was not on duty, not having fully recovered from his wound received in the Wilderness.²

The position of the opposing armies the night of the 18th of October can be briefly stated.

The Union Army was encamped on each side of the turnpike, facing southward, and north of Cedar Creek, a tributary of the Shenandoah, which, flowing in general direction from northwest to southeast, empties into the river about two miles

¹ *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., p. 64.

² *Manassas to Appomattox* (Longstreet), p. 574.

VOL.—II. 9.

west of Strasburg. The north branch of the Shenandoah flows northward to Fisher's Hill, thence bending to the eastward at the foot of and around the north end of Three Top (or Massanutten) Mountain, thence, forming a junction with the south branch, past Front Royal to the west and again northward, emptying into the Potomac at Harper's Ferry.

Crook's two divisions, Colonel Joseph Thoburn and Colonel Rutherford B. Hayes commanding, were wholly to the east of the pike; Thoburn's division well advanced, his front conforming to the course of the creek; the Nineteenth Corps (Emory's), two divisions, lay on each side of the pike, covering the bridge and ford in its immediate front, and the Sixth was on Emory's right. Ricketts, Wheaton, and Getty's divisions of the Sixth were encamped in the order named from left to right. Meadow Brook (sometimes called Marsh Run), a small stream, with rugged banks, flowing from north to south and emptying into Cedar Creek, separated the left of Ricketts' division from the right of the Nineteenth Corps. The Sixth Corps' front conformed to the line of Cedar Creek; Getty's division being retired, and consequently much nearer than the others to Middletown. My brigade was the left of the Sixth, and its left rested on Meadow Brook. Merritt's cavalry was in close proximity to Getty's right. Custer was about one and a half miles to Merritt's right, on the Back road beyond a range of hills and near the foot of Little North Mountain. The whole course of the Back road is through a rough country, not adapted to cavalry operations. Powell's cavalry division was near Front Royal. Army headquarters were at the Belle Grove House on the heights west of the pike, immediately in rear of the right of the Nineteenth Corps. Wright's headquarters were a short distance to the rear of Sheridan's.

The supply and baggage trains of our army were about one mile behind its right centre and about the same distance from Middletown, a village twelve miles south of Winchester, and about two miles north of the Cedar Creek bridge. Getty and Merritt's camps were, in general, westward of Middletown. The front of our army covered about two miles; Custer's and

Thoburn's divisions, on the right and left, being outside of this limit.

The Union Army was not intrenched, save a portion of the Nineteenth and Eighth Corps. Owing to reports that Early had withdrawn southward, Wright ordered a brigade of the Nineteenth Corps to start at daylight of the 19th to make a strong reconnoissance. The Union troops, except only the usual guards and pickets, quietly slept in their tents the night of the 18th of October.

The Confederate Army was encamped on Fisher's Hill, two miles south of Strasburg and about six miles from the centre of the Union Army, measured by the pike. Three Top Mountain was east and south of a bend in the Shenandoah; its north end abutting close up to the river. General J. B. Gordon and Captain Hotchkiss, from the Confederate signal station on Three Top, on the 18th, with field-glasses, marked the location of all the Union camps, and on their report Early decided to attack the next morning.¹ Accordingly, Gordon, Ramseur, and Pegram's divisions and Payne's cavalry brigade were moved in the night across the river, thence along the foot of Three Top Mountain, and along its north end and eastward to and again across the river at Bowman and McIntorf's Fords below the mouth of Cedar Creek, and thence, by 4 A.M., to a position east of the main camp of Crook's corps. These divisions were under Gordon. Kershaw and Wharton's divisions marched by the pike to the north of Strasburg, and there separated; the former moving to the eastward, accompanied by Early. Kershaw crossed Cedar Creek at Robert's Ford, about one and a half miles above its mouth, which brought him in front of Thoburn of Crook's corps. Wharton, followed by all of Early's artillery, continued on the pike and took position in advance of Hupp's Hill, less than a mile south of the bridge over Cedar Creek. He had orders to push across the bridge as soon as Gordon made an attack on the Union left and rear, and thus bring the artillery into action. Lomax's cavalry division, theretofore posted in Luray Valley, was ordered to

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 580, Captain Hotchkiss' Journal.

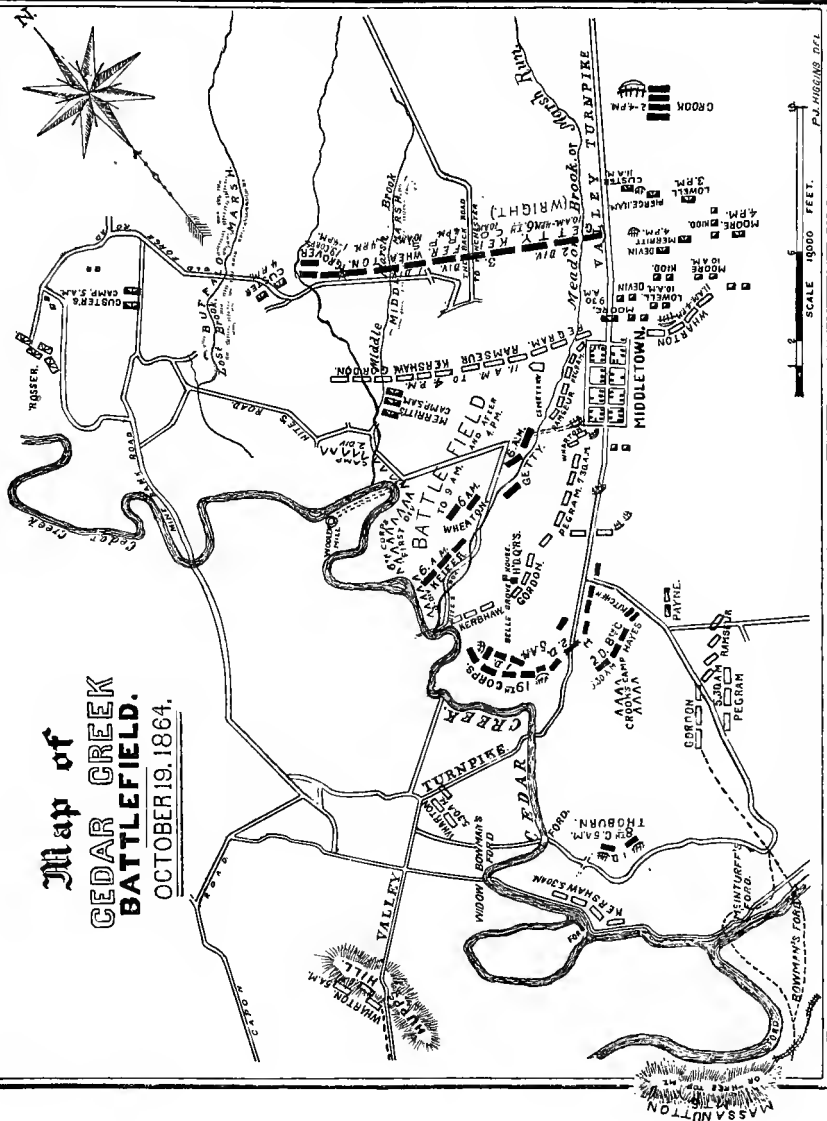
elude Powell's cavalry, join the right of Gordon, and co-operate with him in the attack. Rosser's cavalry divisions were pushed up the night of the 18th close in front of Custer, with orders to attack simultaneously with Gordon. The enemy did not know Sheridan was absent from his army, and Payne's cavalry, which accompanied Gordon, was ordered to penetrate to the Belle Grove House and make him a prisoner.¹

Wright was in command of the army for all military operations, but otherwise it was commanded in Sheridan's name, during his absence, by his staff. Few of the army knew Sheridan was away when the battle opened.

At 4 A.M. the still sleeping Union Army was aroused by sharp firing far off on its right. Rosser had attacked Custer, but though there was some surprise, Custer held his ground. This was the initial attack, but almost at the moment Rosser's guns were heard came an assault on Thoburn by Kershaw, followed at once by Gordon with his three divisions and Payne's cavalry on Hayes' division of Crook's corps. Besides being surprised Crook's divisions were largely outnumbered, and, consequently, after a short and desperate resistance, both divisions were broken and somewhat dispersed. Thoburn was killed. The officers heroically did all in their power to rally the men, but some were captured, and seventeen pieces of artillery lost. Early soon joined Gordon with Kershaw, and together they fell on the left of the Nineteenth Corps, which was at the same time assailed in front by Wharton with all Early's artillery. The Nineteenth shared the fate of Crook's corps, and was soon broken and flying to the rear. This brought Early's five infantry divisions and his artillery together on the heights near the Belle Grove House, from whence they could operate against the Sixth Corps. Sheridan's headquarters were captured, his staff being forced to fly with such official papers as they could collect. Crook and Emory's commands were routed before it was fully day-dawn. The position of our cavalry was such that it could render no immediate aid against the main attack. Gordon prolonged his

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 580.

Map of CEDAR CREEK BATTLEFIELD. OCTOBER 19, 1864.



line towards Middletown, facing generally to the westward, and was joined on his right by some irregular cavalry, part of which appeared north of Middletown. These forces threatened our ammunition and other trains. A thick fog helped to conceal the enemy's movements. The disaster sustained must not be attributed to a want of skill and bravery on the part of the troops of the Eighth and Nineteenth. Crook, aided by such gallant officers as Colonels Thoburn, Thomas M. Harris, and Milton Wells of his First, and Colonels R. B. Hayes, H. F. Devol, James M. Comly, and B. F. Coates of his Second Division, and Emory, assisted by Generals McMillan and Dwight and Colonels Davis and Thomas of his First, and Generals Grover and Birge and Colonels Porter, Molineux, Dan. McCauley, and Shunk of his Second Division, did all possible under the circumstances to avert calamity. No braver or more skilful officers could be found. These corps were victims of a surprise. Their position was badly chosen, and not well protected by pickets and guards. There is no necessity to defend the good name of the officers and men who were so ingloriously routed. The battle, so successful thus far for Early, was, however, not over, nor was he to have continued good fortune. Wright had retained the active command of the Sixth Corps, though by virtue of seniority he was in command of the army. He, as soon as the attack was made, turned his corps over to Ricketts, who turned the command of his division (Third) over to me, and I turned my brigade over to Colonel Wm. H. Ball of the 122d Ohio. My division was the next to be struck by Early's troops. It had time, however, to break camp, form, and face about to the eastward. Before it was fairly daylight, my old brigade, under Colonel Ball, had crossed Meadow Brook by my order and was advancing up the heights near the Belle Grove House. Ball's brigade was run through by the broken troops of the Nineteenth, and it was feared for a time it could not be held steady. The enemy swung across the Valley pike to my left and rear, and thus completely isolated my division from other Union troops. Notwithstanding this situation the division firmly held its exposed position. To

cover a wider front the brigades were fought and manoeuvred separately in single battle line, and often faced in different directions. I soon found I was able to drive or hold back any enemy in front of any part of my command. The fighting became general and furious and promised an early success to our arms. Wheaton, next on my right, and Getty next on his right as camped, likewise faced about and moved eastward towards the pike to meet the enemy already in possession of it immediately south of Middletown. Getty encountered some of Gordon's infantry and cavalry among our trains. Getty and Wheaton were soon widely separated from each other, and Wheaton, the nearest, was still not within a half mile of my division, which was the farthest south. The broken troops of the Eighth and Nineteenth Corps had retreated as far as Middletown, and some soon reached Newtown, pressing onward towards Winchester, carrying exaggerated reports of disaster to the whole army. Custer's cavalry was still held in Cedar Creek Valley by Rosser. Merritt came gallantly to the rescue, and by 7 A.M. the enemy were confronted at every point and held at bay. Getty met a strong force along Meadow Brook, near Middletown, but maintained himself, though his right flank was assailed by one of Gordon's divisions. Wheaton fought his division in the interval between Getty's and my division, he having frequently to change front, as had the other divisions, to meet flanking columns of the enemy. The complete isolation of the divisions of the Sixth Corps rendered it impossible for their commanders to know the real situation throughout the field, and neither of them had any assurance of co-operation or assistance from the others. My division, being the farthest south, was in great danger of being cut off. Each division maintained, from 6 A.M. until after 9 A.M., a battle of its own. Neither division was, during that time, driven from any position by any direct attack made on it, and every change of position by any considerable part of the Sixth Corps was deliberately made under orders and while not pressed by the enemy in front. Wright was with Getty or Wheaton until assured of their ability to

cover the trains and to hold their ground. Ricketts, in command of the corps, after directing me to hold my position near Cedar Creek until further orders, left me, promising soon to return with assistance, but about 7 A.M. he fell pierced through the chest with a rifle ball, and was borne from the field.¹ The command of the corps then devolved on Getty, and the command of his division on General L. A. Grant of Vermont.

About 8 A.M. Wright came to me with information of Getty and Wheaton's success. He said he would soon have cavalry on the enemy's right flank, and that he believed the battle could be won. He was tranquil, buoyant, and self-possessed. He did not seem to pay any attention to a wound under his chin, made by a passing bullet, though he was bleeding profusely. He had no staff officer with him, and was without escort.² I ordered Captain Damon of my staff to report to him. Wright repeated Ricketts' order to hold my division behind Meadow Brook well down to Cedar Creek. This I had been enabled to do when not threatened on my left flank. It must be remembered that after 6 A.M. the divisions of the corps having been faced about, and the Eighth and Nineteenth Corps driven to the rear, Getty's division became the left, Wheaton's the centre, and my division the right of the army, the whole line facing, in general, eastward. In this position, isolated as before stated, the divisions maintained the battle. My greatest anxiety arose over the possibility of the ammunition of the men becoming exhausted. One officer conducted to us through the fog, smoke, and confusion a

¹ General Ricketts was supposed to be mortally wounded. His wife a second time came to him on the battle-field. He was taken to Washington, his home, and slowly recovered. He was able again to perform some field service near the close of the war. He died of pneumonia, September 22, 1887, and is buried at Arlington.

² Major A. F. Hayden, of Wright's staff, while the battle was raging in the early morning, was seen galloping towards me with one hand raised to indicate he had some important order. Just before reaching me he was shot through the body and plunged off his horse on the hard ground, rolling over and over until he lay almost in a ball. He was borne off in a blanket for dead. In February following I met him on a steamer on the Chesapeake returning to duty, and I saw him again at the Centennial in Philadelphia in 1876.

considerable supply of cartridges in boxes strapped on mules. Colonel Ball sent Captain R. W. Wiley of his staff to hasten forward another such mule-caravan. Owing to a change in the location of the brigade, he conducted it within the Confederate lines. Captain Wiley was the only officer of my division captured in the day's battle.

Getty, who had successfully fought with his division near Middletown, took up a position before 10 A.M. with the left of his division resting on the turnpike north of the town about three fourths of a mile.

My division was fiercely engaged all the morning. Colonel Tompkins, Chief of Artillery of the Sixth Corps, assembled a number of guns on the plateau to my left under Captains McKnight and Adams. They were unsupported by infantry. The enemy approached under cover of the smoke and fog and captured most of them. Under my direction, Colonel W. H. Henry and Captain C. K. Prentiss with the 10th Vermont and 6th Maryland changed front and retook them after a fierce struggle. The guns not disabled were drawn off by hand. My position was in open ground along the crest of a ridge, right resting near Cedar Creek, covering Marsh Run (or Meadow Brook). The enemy forced a crossing of the Run near its mouth, but soon were driven back; then a fierce attack came on my left from a large force. This too was repulsed. The battle raged with alternate assaults on the front and flanks of my division. They were each repulsed with considerable loss to the enemy. The situation grew so promising that about 9 A.M. I ordered a general charge along the whole line. This was promptly made, and the enemy were driven to the east of Marsh Run, and complete success seemed assured, when a large force of the enemy again appeared on my left in the direction of Middletown. The charge had to be suspended and combinations made to meet the new danger. The battle still raged with great fury, my line being frequently compelled to change front to meet the flank attacks. Sometimes a portion of it faced northward, another eastward, and another southward. The enemy was at no time able to



CAPTAIN J. C. ULLERY,
110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1865.)

BREVET COLONEL OTHO H. BINKLEY.
110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1863.)

drive us. All changes of position were made under my orders and after the enemy had been repulsed in his direct attacks. The importance of uniting the divisions of the Sixth Corps was kept in mind, and as the enemy was driven back on my left, my command slowly moved northward towards Getty and Wheaton's battles. My battle had been maintained, in general, a mile and more southwestward of Middletown and in the vicinity of our camps of the night before. Getty and Wheaton had thus far fought their divisions near Marsh Run to the south of Middletown. Before 10 A.M. I reached the Woollen Mill road that ran parallel to the general line my troops were then holding and almost at right angles to the turnpike, westward to Cedar Creek from the south end of Middletown. At this time the enemy was in my front, and our flanks were no longer threatened. He had suspended further attacks with infantry, but concentrated on us a heavy artillery fire which our guns returned. We had lost few prisoners; even the wounded of the division had been brought off. The men were in compact order and no demoralization had taken place. The captured or missing from the division the entire day was two officers and thirty-four men.¹ From this last position I leisurely moved the division to the left and rear over the Old Forge road (which extended west from the Valley pike at the north end of Middletown over Middle Marsh Brook and a ridge to the Creek), passing Wheaton's front, and united with Getty's right. Emerson's brigade of the division through a mistake temporarily moved a short distance north of the line designated, but the error was promptly corrected. Colonel Ball was then, by me, directed to cover the front of the entire division with a heavy line of skirmishers, and he accordingly deployed the 110th Ohio and 138th Pennsylvania under Lieutenant-Colonel Otho H. Binkley, and moved them about three hundred yards to the front along the outskirts of a woods, with orders to hold the enemy in check as long as possible if attacked. Orders were at once given to resupply the troops with ammunition. Wheaton's division soon formed on my

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 132.

right, and for the first time after the battle opened the Sixth Corps was united.

The enemy was now in possession of the camps (except of the cavalry) of our army, and was flushed with success. Wright had given orders for all the broken troops to be re-organized, and for Merritt and Custer's cavalry to move from the right to the left of the army,¹ and the division commanders were told the enemy would be attacked about 12 M.

We left Sheridan at Winchester. He remained there the night of the 18th of October. Before rising in the morning an officer on picket duty in front of the city reported artillery firing in the direction of his army. Sheridan interpreted this as a strong reconnoissance in which the enemy was being felt. He had been notified the night before that Wright had ordered such a reconnoissance. Further reports of heavy firing having reached him, he, at 8.30 A.M. started to join his army. When he reached Mill Creek just south of Winchester, with his escort following, he distinctly heard the continuous roar of artillery, which satisfied him his army was engaged in strong battle. As he approached Kearnsstown and came upon a high place in the road, he caught sight of some demoralized soldiers, camp followers, and baggage and sutler wagons, in great confusion, hurrying to the rear. There were in this mixed mass sutlers and their clerks, teamsters, bummers, cow-leaders, servants, and all manner of camp followers. This sight greatly disturbed Sheridan; it was almost appalling to him. Such a scene in greater or less degree may usually be witnessed in the rear of any great army in battle. The common false reports of the army being all overwhelmed and in retreat were proclaimed by these flying men as justification of their own disgraceful conduct. Sheridan, notwithstanding his experience as a soldier, was impressed with the belief that his whole army was defeated and in retreat.² He formed, while riding through these people, erroneous impressions of what had taken place in the morning battle which were never removed from his mind. The steady

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 53.

² *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., pp. 68-82.

roar of guns and rattle of musketry should have told him that some organized forces were, at least, baring their breasts bravely to the enemy and standing as food for shot and shell. Sheridan mistook the disorganized horde he passed through for substantial portions of a wholly routed army, and this mistake prevented him, even later, from clearly understanding the real situation.

He first met Torbert, his Chief of Cavalry, and from him only learned what had taken place to the left of and around Middletown. Torbert, who had not been to the right, where the battle with infantry had raged for hours, assumed that demoralization extended over that part of the field. Next Sheridan came to Getty's division (10.30 A.M.),¹ and finding it and its brave commander in unbroken line, facing the foe, assumed without further investigation that no other infantry troops were doing likewise. He justly gives Getty's division and the cavalry credit for being "in the presence of and resisting the enemy."² Getty, though theretofore in command of the Sixth Corps, did not pretend to know the position or the previous movements of the army. He had remained constantly with his division, and wisely held the turnpike, covering our left flank and trains. This, too, was according to Wright's order. When Sheridan arrived Getty was not actually engaged, but the enemy were, at long range, firing artillery. A shot passed close to Sheridan as he approached Getty. After the first salutation, Sheridan said to Getty: "Emory's corps is four miles to your rear, and Wheaton's division of your corps is two miles in your rear. I will form on your division." Sheridan then said nothing of Crook's corps, or of the Third Division of the Sixth, which I commanded.³

Up to this time Sheridan had not met Wright, who was on

¹ In one account Sheridan fixes his arrival at 9 A.M. In his *Memoirs* at 10.30 A.M. (p. 86). Getty, in his report of November, 1864, says, "Sheridan arrived at between 11 A.M. and 12 M." I made a note (still preserved), of the time Sheridan was seen by me riding up to the rear of Getty's division.

² *Memoirs*, p. 82.

³ These facts are as stated in a private letter from General Getty to the writer, dated December 31, 1893.

the right of the army, nor could Sheridan see from the pike the troops of my division nor of Wheaton's, still to my right. My division was at no time as far to the rear as the left of Getty's line. Wright confirms my recollection of the position of my division at the time of Sheridan's arrival, but his recollection is that Wheaton had not completed a connection with my right.¹

Colonel Ball, in his report dated the day after the battle, speaking of the final movement of the Second Brigade of my division to connect with Getty's division, correctly says: "We were ordered to move obliquely to the *left and rear* and connect with the right of the Second Division." Instead of having to *advance* to form line with Getty it was necessary to move obliquely to the *rear*. By about 10 A.M. the divisions of the Sixth Corps were united, the organized troops of our army were in line, and the enemy's flank movements were over. Thenceforth he had to meet us in front. Our trains were protected, and there was no thought of further retiring. The Sixth Corps had not lost any of its camp equipage, not a wagon, nor, permanently, a piece of artillery. Its organization was perfect, and there were no stragglers from its ranks. A strong line of skirmishers had been thrown forward and the men resupplied with ammunition.

An incident here occurred which came near causing my dismissal from the army. Colonel J. W. Snyder, of the 9th New York Heavy Artillery, on being ordered to hold his command ready for an early advance, notified me his men were practically out of ammunition, and that the ordnance officer reported there were no cartridges to be had of suitable size. This was the only regiment in the command armed with smooth-bore

¹ Here is an extract from a letter of General Wright to me, dated July 18, 1889:

"Orders had been given by me for the establishment of the lines, and Getty's and your division (the Second and Third) were in position, and Wheaton's (First) and the Nineteenth Corps were coming into position when General Sheridan arrived upon the ground. I advised him of what had been done and what it was intended to do, and he made no change in the dispositions I had made. Indeed, as I understand, he fully approved them. . . . General Sheridan did later make some change in the disposition of the cavalry."

.69 calibre muskets. They required buck and ball. The other troops were armed with rifles, .58 calibre. I ordered the Colonel to instruct his men to throw away their muskets as fast as rifles could be found on the field to take their places. This his men eagerly did, and Colonel Snyder soon reported his regiment ready for action, with rifles in their hands and forty rounds of cartridges. This regiment, a very large and splendid one (three battalions, four companies each), was thus kept in line to participate in the impending conflict. After the incident had been almost forgotten a letter came through the army channels from the Chief of Ordnance at Washington, advising me that the captains of companies of the 9th New York had reported, severally, that their men had thrown away their muskets "October 19, 1864, by order of Colonel Keifer, division commander," and asking me for an explanation of the reprehensible order. I plead guilty and stated the circumstances giving rise to the unusual order, but soon received a further communication from the same officer informing me my name had been sent to the President, through the Secretary of War, for dismissal. I was told some correspondence arose over the matter, in which both Generals Sheridan and Wright approved my action fully. This incident serves now to enable me to remember that Wright proposed to attack Early at 12 M.

Two or three statements of Sheridan deserve special mention. Speaking of his appearance on the field, he says:

"When nearing the Valley pike, just south of Newtown, I saw about three fourths of a mile west of the pike a body of troops, which proved to be Ricketts and Wheaton's divisions of the Sixth Corps."

And speaking of a time after he had met Getty and Wright, he says:

"I ordered Custer's division back to the right flank, and returning to the place where my headquarters had been established, I met near them Ricketts' division under General Keifer and General Frank Wheaton's division, both marching to the front."¹

¹ *Memoirs*, vol. ii., pp. 82, 85.

The distance from Newtown to Middletown is five miles. My division was at no time on that day within four miles of Newtown. This is also true, I am sure, of Wheaton's division. Sheridan was deceived by false reports received before his arrival, and by the sight of magnified numbers of broken troops of other corps, who had continued to the rear. It was impossible for Sheridan to have met Wheaton and myself leading our divisions to the front; besides, our divisions were not at any time within a mile of his then headquarters. Wheaton's and the right of my division were farther advanced than any part of Getty's division. This is proved by the recollection of Wright, Getty, and others, also by the reports written soon after the battle by many officers.¹ Sheridan, when he wrote, must have remembered meeting Wheaton and myself when we, together, rode to him from the right to tell him of the position and situation of our respective commands, and to assure him we could hold our ground and advance as soon as ordered. This ride brought Wheaton and me nearer Newtown than we were at any other time that day. Sheridan was so impressed by the circumstances attending his coming to the field, and by his first meeting with Torbert and Getty, and the previous reports to him, that he assumed a condition of things which did not exist. It has been stated that my division joined Getty on his right. It, however, turned out that a portion of Hayes' division of Crook's corps had united with Getty's right, though not at first distinguished by me from the latter's troops.

Years after the battle, ex-President Hayes referred to some statements in Sheridan's *Memoirs* thus:

"In speaking of that fight he says that, passing up the pike, sometimes on one side, and sometimes on the other, coming to Cedar Creek, he struck the First Division of Getty, of the Sixth Corps; that he passed along that division a short distance, when there arose out of a hollow before him a line consisting entirely of officers of

¹ Colonel Moses M. Granger, of the Second Brigade, Third Division, says: "It is plain that our brigade was in line on Getty's right a considerable time before Sheridan's arrival."—*Sketches War History*, vol. iii., p. 124.

Crook's Army of West Virginia and of color-bearers. The army had been stampeded in the morning, but these people were not panic-stricken. They saluted him, but there was nothing now between the enemy and him and the fugitives but this division of Getty's. Said he: 'These officers seemed to rise right up from the ground.' This was twenty-four years afterward, but he recollects it perfectly well except names. Among them, however, he recollects seeing one, Colonel R. B. Hayes, since President of the United States, and drops the story there, leaving the impression that there were no men there—no privates, no army—simply some color-bearers and some officers.

"The fact is that in the hollow, just in the rear, was a line of men, a thousand or twelve hundred, probably, and they had thrown up a little barricade and were lying close behind it. He came up and saw these officers and did not see the men, or seems not to have seen them; but I had no idea at the time that he did not see the private soldiers in that line. He now tells that singular story of a line of officers, a line of color-bearers, and no force. The fact is that first came Getty's division, and then mine, and then came General Keifer's division, all lying down behind the barricade, but in good condition, except that there had been some losses in the morning. General Keifer was next to me, and then came the rest of the Sixth Corps, and farther down I have no doubt the Nineteenth Corps was in line. We had then been, I suppose, an hour or an hour and a half in that position."¹

Passing from disputed, though important, points relating to the battle, all agree that when Sheridan reached his army a battle had been fought and lost to all appearance, and that the Union Army had been forced to retire to a new position. It should also be regarded beyond controversy that the Sixth Corps had been united before his arrival, that broken troops of other commands were being formed on the Sixth, and that the enemy also had been forced to change front, and was arrested in his advance.

Sheridan's presence went far towards giving confidence to his army, and to inspire the men with a spirit of success.

¹ This extract is from remarks of General Hayes made at a Loyal Legion banquet in Cincinnati, May 6, 1889. *Sketches War History*, vol. iv., p. 23.

While the army loved Wright, and believed in him, his temperament was not such as to cause him to work an army up to a high state of enthusiasm. A deep chagrin over the morning's disaster pervaded our army, and had much to do with its subsequent efforts to win a victory. Sheridan showed himself to the troops by riding along the front, and he was loudly cheered. He assured them of success before the day ended. During the lull in the day's battle some of the broken troops of the Eighth and Nineteenth Corps were reorganized.

Wright resumed command of his corps and Getty his division. Before Sheridan came Wright had instructed his division commanders that he would assume the offensive, and it was understood our army would advance about 12 M., as soon as an ample resupply of ammunition could be issued. Sheridan, however, postponed the time for assuming the offensive until 3 P.M. Early, still filled with high hopes of complete victory, about 1 P.M. pushed forward on our entire front. He did not drive in the strong line of skirmishers, and the attack was easily repulsed. It seemed to me then, as it did to Wright and others, that our whole army should have been thrown against the enemy on this repulse, and thus decided the day. Sheridan, however, adhered to his purpose to act on the defensive until later in the day. A false report that a Confederate column was moving towards Winchester on the Front Royal road caused Sheridan to delay his attack until about 4 P.M.

Early promptly realized that the conditions had changed; that the armies must meet face to face. It will be kept in mind that our army was now fronting southward instead of eastward, and Early's army was forced to face northward instead of westward, as in the morning's battle.

Early, hoping to hold the ground already won and thus reap some of the fruits of victory, retired, on his repulse, beyond the range of our guns, and took up a strong position, with his infantry and artillery, mainly on a natural amphitheatre of hills, centre a little retired, extending from a point north of Cedar Creek near Middle Marsh Brook on his left to and across the turnpike near Middletown, protecting his flanks west of this

brook and east of the town with his cavalry and horse artillery. Early employed his men busily for the succeeding two hours in throwing up lunettes or redans to cover his field guns. His men were skilfully posted behind stone fences, common in the Valley, and on portions of his line behind temporary breastworks.

Early, before 12 M., wired Richmond he had won a complete victory, and would drive the Union Army across the Potomac. At 4 P.M. our army went forward in single line, with no considerable reserves, but in splendid style. Getty, with his left still on the turnpike, was the division of direction. My orders were to hold my left on Getty's right. Wheaton was to keep connection with my right, and the Nineteenth Corps with the right of the Sixth Corps; and the cavalry, Merritt east of Middletown and Custer on Cedar Creek, to cover the flanks. In verifying my position just before starting, I found troops of Hayes' command filling a space of two or three hundred yards between Getty's right and my left. I discovered Hayes temporarily resting on the ground a short distance in rear of his men, with his staff around him. From him I learned he had no orders to advance, whereupon I requested him to withdraw his men so I could close the interval before the movement commenced. He promptly rose, mounted his horse, and said: "If this army goes forward I will fill that gap, with or without orders." Unfortunately, orders came to him to withdraw, and with others of his corps (Eighth) form in reserve near the turnpike. His withdrawal left, at the last moment, a gap which could only be filled by obliqueing my division to the left as it was moving forward. This produced some unsteadiness in the line, and the right brigade (Emerson's) continued the movement too long, causing some massing of troops in the centre of the division, and some disorder resulted while they were under a severe infantry and artillery fire. This necessary movement also caused an interval between Wheaton's division and mine, thereby imperilling my right. Our attack, however, was not checked until we had gone forward about one mile. The enemy's centre was driven back upon his partially

intrenched line on the heights mentioned. This brought my division under a most destructive fire of artillery and infantry from front and flanks. My right flank was especially exposed, as it had gone forward farther than the troops on the right.

The loss in the division was severe, and it became impossible to hold the exposed troops to the charge. They had not fired as they advanced. The division retired a short distance, where it was halted and promptly faced about. In less than five minutes it was again charging the Confederate left centre. The right of Getty's division and Wheaton's left went forward with the second charge, and an advance position in close rifle range of the enemy was gained and held. My division was partly protected by a stone fence located on the north of an open field, while the Confederates held the farther side of the field, about three hundred yards distant, and were also protected by a stone fence as well as by some temporary breast-works. The enemy occupied the higher ground, and the field was lower in the centre than on either side. The battle here was obstinate and, for a time, promised to extend into the night. Early's artillery in my front did little execution, as it was located on the crest of the hills behind his infantry line, and the gunners, when they undertook to work their guns, were exposed to our infantry fire. Wheaton's division and that part of the Nineteenth Corps to his right, though not keeping pace with the centre, steadily gained ground; likewise the cavalry. Getty, though under orders to hold his left on the pike, moved his division forward slowly, making a left half wheel. In this movement Getty's left reached Middletown, and his right swung somewhat past it on the west.

Merritt's cavalry pushed around east of Middletown. At this juncture, Kershaw's division and part of Gordon's division were in front of my right and part of Ramseur's in front of my left. Pegram's and Wharton's divisions were in front of Getty, Wharton being, in part, east of the pike confronting our cavalry. Early's left was held by Gordon's troops, including some of his cavalry.¹ Early now made heroic efforts

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 581.

to hold his position, hoping at night he could withdraw with some of the fruits of victory. Sheridan made every possible exertion to dislodge the enemy, and to accomplish this he was much engaged, personally, on the flanks with the cavalry. Wright, calm, confident, and unperturbed, gave close attention to his corps, and was constantly exposed. I frequently met him at this crisis. He ordered a further charge upon the enemy's centre. This seemed impossible with the tired troops. Preparation was, however, made to attempt it. The firing in this last position had continued for about an hour, during which both sides had suffered heavily. As the sun was going down behind the mountains that autumnal evening it became apparent something decisive must take place or night would end the day of blood leaving the enemy in possession of the principal part of the battle-field.

So confident was Early of final victory that, earlier in the day, he ordered up his headquarters and supply trains, and by 4 P.M. they commenced to arrive on the field.

It must be remembered that the two armies had been manœuvring and fighting for twelve hours, with little food or rest and an insufficient supply of water. Exhausted troops may be held in line, especially when under some cover, but it is difficult to move them in a charge with the spirit essential to success. There remained a considerable interval between Wheaton's left and my right. An illustrative incident again occurred here in resupplying our men with ammunition. Three mules loaded with boxes filled with cartridges were conducted by an ordnance sergeant through the interval on my right in open view of both armies, and with indifferent leisure to and behind the stone wall occupied by the Confederates. The sergeant and his party were not fired on. Word was passed along the line for my division to make a charge on a given signal, and all subordinate officers were instructed to use the utmost exertion to make it a success. The incident of the sergeant and his party going into the enemy's line served to suggest to me the possibility of penetrating it with a small body of our soldiers.

Before giving an order to charge, I instructed Colonel Emerson, commanding the First Brigade, to hastily form, under a competent staff officer, a small body of men, and direct them to advance rapidly along the west of a stone wall extending transversely from my right to the enemy's position, and to penetrate through a gap between two of the enemy's brigades, with instructions to open an enfilading fire on him as soon as his flank was reached. The gap was between two of Gordon's brigades. The order was promptly and handsomely executed, and its execution produced the desired effect. Captain H. W. Day (151st New York, Acting Brigade Inspector) was charged with the execution of the order.¹

The party consisted of about 125 men, each of whom knew that if unsuccessful death or capture must follow. Colonel Moses M. Granger (122d Ohio) voluntarily aided and, in some sense, directed the movement of this small party. The gap was penetrated on the run and a fire opened on the exposed flanks of the Confederates which started them from the cover of their works and the stone wall. At this juncture the division, as ordered, poured a destructive fire upon the now exposed Confederates, and at once charging across the field, drove the enemy in utter rout. A panic seized Gordon's troops, who were the first struck, then spread to Kershaw's and Ramseur's divisions, successively on Gordon's right.²

I quote from the report of Colonel Emerson, commanding my First Brigade, in which he describes the final battle, including the breaking of Early's line:

"The brigade lay here under a fire of shell until about 4 P.M., when Captain Smith came with an order to move forward connecting on the left with the Second Brigade. The brigade moved through the woods, when it received a very heavy fire on the right flank, under which it was broken, but soon reformed in its old position, and again moved forward to a stone fence, the enemy being behind another stone wall in front with a clear field intervening. There was a stone wall running from the right flank of the brigade to the

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., pp. 228, 234, 251-2, 262.

² *Ibid.*, p. 562 (Early's Report).

wall behind which the enemy lay. Some of my men lay scattered along this last named wall. The First Division lay to the right and in advance, nearly parallel with the enemy. Everything appeared to be at a deadlock, with heavy firing of artillery and musketry. At this stage Colonel Keifer, commanding division, came to me and inquired what men those were lying along the wall running from our line to the enemy's, and ordered me to send them forward to flank the enemy and drive them from their position. The execution of the order was entrusted to Captain H. W. Day, Inspector of the [Second] Brigade, who proceeded along the wall, and getting on the enemy's flank dislodged them, when the brigade was moved rapidly forward, in connection with the Second Brigade, and did not stop until we arrived in the works of the Nineteenth Corps, when, in accordance with orders from Colonel Keifer, the brigade went into its position of the morning, got its *breakfast*, and encamped, satisfied that it had done a good day's work before breakfast."¹

Also from a report of Colonel Ball, commanding Second Brigade:

"About 3 P.M. the whole army advanced in one line upon the enemy. Immediately before advancing the troops were withdrawn to the left, and my left connected with the Second Division, Sixth Army Corps, while my right connected with the First Brigade, Third Division. We advanced half a mile to the edge of the woods, when we were met by a well-directed fire from the right flank. This fire was returned with spirit some fifteen minutes, when the troops wavered and fell back a short distance in some disorder. The Second and Third Divisions gave way at the same time. The line was speedily reformed and moved forward and became engaged with the enemy again, each force occupying a stone wall. Advantage was taken of a wall or fence running perpendicular to and connecting with that occupied by the enemy. After the action had continued here about three quarters of an hour a heavy volley was fired at the enemy from the transverse wall. A hurried and general retreat of the enemy immediately followed, and our troops eagerly followed, firing upon the retreating army as it ran, and giving no opportunity to the enemy to reform or make a stand.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., p. 234.

"Several efforts were made by the enemy during the pursuit to rally, but the enthusiastic pursuit foiled all such efforts. Our troops were subject to artillery fire of solid shot, shell, and grape during the pursuit, and we reached the intrenchments of the Nineteenth Army Corps (which were captured in the morning) as the sun set. Here the pursuit by the infantry was discontinued. The first and second, and probably the third colors planted on the recovered works of the Nineteenth Army Corps were of regiments composing this brigade."¹

General Early tells the effect on his army of penetrating his line by the small body of our troops:

"A number of bold attempts were made during the subsequent part of the day, by the enemy's cavalry, to break our line on the right, but they were invariably repulsed. Late in the afternoon, the enemy's infantry advanced against Ramseur, Kershaw, and Gordon's lines, and the attack on Ramseur and Kershaw's fronts was handsomely repulsed in my view, and I hoped that the day was finally ours, but a portion of the enemy had penetrated an interval which was between Evans' brigade, on the extreme left, and the rest of the line, when that brigade gave way, and Gordon's other brigades soon followed. General Gordon made every possible effort to rally his men and lead them back against the enemy, but without avail. The information of this affair, with exaggerations, passed rapidly along Kershaw and Ramseur's lines, and their men, under the apprehension of being flanked, commenced falling back in disorder, though no enemy was pressing them, and this gave me the first intimation of Gordon's condition. At the same time the enemy's cavalry, observing the disorder in our ranks, made another charge on our right, but was again repulsed. Every effort was made to stop and rally Kershaw and Ramseur's men, but the mass of them resisted all appeals, and continued to go to the rear without waiting for any effort to retrieve the partial disorder."²

The charge of the division resulted in the total overthrow of Early's army. Pegram and Wharton's divisions on our extreme left near Middletown were soon involved in the disaster, and our whole army went forward, meeting little resistance,

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., pp. 250-1.

² *Battles and Leaders*, etc., vol. iv., p. 528.

taking many prisoners and guns, only halting when Early's forces were either destroyed, captured, or driven in the wildest disorder beyond Cedar Creek.¹ Our cavalry under Merritt and Custer pursued until late in the night to Fisher's Hill, south of Strasburg, and made many captures.

It often has been claimed that the cavalry on the right is entitled to the credit of overthrowing Early's army. It is true Custer did make some attempts on Gordon's left and rear, but the appearance of Rosser's cavalry on Custer's right, north and east of Cedar Creek, called him off, and it was not until after Early's position had been penetrated and a general retreat had commenced that Custer again appeared on the enemy's flank and rear. His presence there had much to do with the wild retreat of Early's men. Custer, who claimed much for his cavalry, and insisted that it captured forty-five pieces of artillery, etc., did not in his report of the battle pretend that his division caused the final break in Early's forces. Speaking of his last charge on the left, Custer says:

"Seeing so large a force of cavalry bearing rapidly down upon an unprotected flank and their line of retreat in danger of being intercepted, the lines of the enemy, already broken, now gave way in the utmost confusion."²

Part of Early's artillery and caissons, with ammunition and supply trains, also ambulances and many battle flags, were captured north of Cedar Creek. The cavalry, however, seized, south of the Creek, other substantial fruits of the great victory, including many guns and headquarters baggage and other trains, and some prisoners. A panic seized teamsters on the turnpike; they cut out mules or horses to escape upon, leaving the teams to mingle in the greatest disorder. Drivers of ambulances filled with dead and wounded also fled, and the animals ran with them unguided over the field. The scene was of the wildest ruin. The gloom of night soon fell over the field to add to its appalling character.

The guns lost by the Eighth and Nineteenth Corps were

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii, Part I., pp. 562-3, 580.

² *Ibid.*, p. 524.

taken in the morning to the public square of Strasburg and triumphantly parked on exhibition. Our cavalry found them there at night. Little that makes up an army was left to Early; the disaster reached every part of his army save, possibly, his cavalry which operated on the remote flanks. In a large sense, Rosser's cavalry, throughout the day, had been neutralized by a portion of Custer's, and Lomax had been held back by Powell on the Front Royal road. Dismay indescribable extended to the Confederate officers as well as the private soldiers. Among the former were some of the best and bravest the South produced. Early himself possessed the confidence of General Lee. Early had, as division commanders, Generals John B. Gordon (since in the United States Senate), Joseph B. Kershaw, Stephen D. Ramseur, John Pegram, and Gabriel C. Wharton, all of whom had won distinction. Ramseur fell mortally wounded in attempting a last stand near the Belle Grove House, and died there. Early fled from the field, surrounded by a few faithful followers, deeply chagrined and dejected, and filled with unjust censure of his own troops.¹ The next day found him still without an organized army.² He seems to have deserved a better fate. His star of military glory had set. It never rose again. A few months later he reached Richmond with a single attendant, having barely escaped capture shortly before by a detachment of Sheridan's cavalry. He finally returned to Southwest Virginia, where Lee relieved him of all command, March 30, 1865.

His misfortunes in the Valley, doubtless, had much to do with his continued implacable hatred to the Union. Sheridan was his nemesis. Just after Kirby Smith had surrendered in 1865 and while Sheridan was on his way to the Rio Grande, the latter encountered Early escaping across the Mississippi in a small boat, with his horses swimming beside it. He got away, but his horses were captured.³

Sheridan, for his great skill and gallantry, justly won the

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., pp. 562-3.

² Napoleon once remarked, "How much to be pitied is a general the day after a lost battle!"

³ *Mémoires of Sheridan*, vol. ii., p. 211.

plaudits of his country, and his fame as a soldier will be immortal, but not alone on account of his victory at Cedar Creek, nor on account of "Sheridan's Ride," as described by the poet Read.¹

My division, at dark, resumed its camp of the night before, as did other divisions of the army.

When the fifteen hours of carnage had ceased, and the sun had gone down, spreading the gloom of a chilly October night over the wide extended field, there remained a scene more horrid than usual. The dead and dying of the two armies were commingled. Many of the wounded had dragged themselves to the streams in search of the first want of a wounded man—*water*. Many mangled and loose horses were straggling over the field to add to the confusion. Wagons, gun-carriages, and caissons were strewn in disorder in the rear of the last stand of the Confederate Army. Abandoned ambulances, sometimes filled with dead and dying Confederates, were to be seen in large numbers, and loose teams dragged overturned vehicles over the hills and through the ravines. Dead and dying men were found in the darkness almost everywhere. Cries of agony from the suffering victims were heard in all directions, and the moans of wounded animals added much to the horrors of the night.

"*Mercy* abandons the arena of battle," but when the conflict is ended *mercy* again asserts itself. The disabled of both armies were cared for alike. Far into the night, with some all the long night, the heroes in the day's strife ministered to friend and foe alike, where but the night before our army had peacefully slumbered, little dreaming of the death struggle of the coming day. To an efficient medical corps, however, belongs the chief credit for the good work done in caring for the unfortunate.

The loss in officers was unusually great. Besides Colonel Thoburn, killed in the opening of the battle, General D. D. Bidwell fell early in the day, and Colonel Charles R. Lowell, Jr., was killed near its close while leading a charge of his

¹ The distance from Winchester to Middletown is twelve miles.

cavalry brigade. Eighty-six Union officers were killed or mortally wounded.

Many distinguished officers were wounded. Of the six officers belonging to my brigade staff who were turned over to Colonel Ball in the early morning, one only (Captain J. T. Rorer) remained uninjured at night. Two were dead.

All was peaceful enough on the 20th, though on every hand the evidence of the preceding day's struggle was to be seen. The dead of both armies were buried—the blue and the gray in separate trenches, to await the resurrection morn.

I have no purpose to speak of individual acts of bravery. The number of killed and wounded of each army was about the same. The casualties in my division, excluding 36 captured or missing, were, killed, 8 officers and 100 men; wounded, 34 officers and 528 men; total, 670. Wheaton lost, killed and wounded, 470; and Getty, 677. The killed and wounded in the Sixth Corps were 1926, including 109 of its artillery.

Much credit for the victory was given by Sheridan to the cavalry. Its total loss, in the three divisions under Torbert, was, killed, 2 officers and 27 men; wounded, 9 officers and 115 men; total, 153; not one fourth the number killed and wounded in my infantry division alone. The killed and wounded in my old brigade, under Colonel Ball, were 421.

The casualties of the Union Army are shown by the following official table:¹

	KILLED.		WOUNDED.		CAPTURED OR MISSING.		AGGREGATE.
	Officers.	Men.	Officers.	Men.	Officers.	Men.	
Sixth Army Corps.....	23	275	103	1525	6	194	2126
Nineteenth Army Corps.	19	238	109	1227	14	776	2383
Army of West Virginia..	7	41	17	253	10	530	858
Provisional Division....	1	11	6	66	18	102
Cavalry.....	2	27	9	115	43	196
Grand total.....	52	592	244	3186	30	1561	5665

¹ *War Records*, vol. xliii., Part I., pp. 131, 137.

The table includes 156 of the artillery, killed or wounded.

The total Union killed and wounded was 4074.

The dead and wounded in the Sixth Corps and in some other of the infantry divisions approximated twenty per cent. of those engaged. This was larger by six per cent. than similar losses in the French army at Marengo, where Napoleon won a victory which enabled him, later, to wear the iron crown of Charlemagne; by six per cent. than at Austerlitz, the battle of the "Three Emperors"; by eight per cent. than in Wellington's army at Waterloo, where Napoleon's star of glory set; or in either the German or French army at Gravelotte, or at Sedan, where Napoleon III. laid down his imperial crown; and larger by about fifteen per cent. than the average like losses in the Austrian and French armies at Hohenlinden:

"Where drums beat at dead of night,
Commanding the fires of death to light."

The number killed and wounded in this battle is far below that in some other great battles of the Rebellion, yet the loss in the Union Army alone was only a little below the aggregate like losses in the American army from Lexington to Yorktown (1775-1781), and approximately the same as in the American army in the Mexican War, from Palo Alto to the City of Mexico (1846-1848).¹

If either of two things had not occurred prior to the battle, the result of it might have been different. Had Early not precipitated an attack with an infantry division and Rosser's cavalry on the 13th of October, Wright, with the Sixth Corps, would have gone to Petersburg; and had the *fake* (Longstreet) dispatch of the 16th not been flagged from the Confederate signal station on Three Top Mountain, Torbert, with the cavalry, would have been east of the Blue Ridge on the intended raid. But for the Longstreet dispatch, Sheridan most likely would have tarried in Washington or delayed his movements on his return trip. Could the Sixth Corps, could the

¹ Great events in war are not always measured by the quantity of blood shed. Sherman's dead and wounded list on his march from "Atlanta to the Sea" was only 531. *Life of Grant* (Church), pp. 297-8.

cavalry, or could Sheridan have been spared from the battle ?

The principal peculiarities of the engagement were : (1) That an ably commanded army was surprised in its camp, and, in considerable part, driven from it at the opening of the battle ; (2) that notwithstanding this, it won, at the close of the day, the most signal and complete field-victory of the war, with the possible exception of those won at Nashville and Sailor's Creek ; (3) the Confederate Army was destroyed, so there was no battle for the morrow. In most instances during the Rebellion, it transpired that the defeated army sullenly retired only a short way in condition to renew the fight.

Cedar Creek, in some respects, bears a striking analogy to Marengo. Both were dual in character, each two battles in one day ; the victors of the morning being the defeated and routed of the evening. Sheridan's victory over Early, like that of Napoleon over Marshal Melas, left no further fighting for the victors the next day. In one other respect, also, the comparison holds good. The commander of each of the finally routed armies sent a message about the middle of the day of battle announcing to his government a great victory, to be followed at sunset with the news of a most signal disaster.

In other respects, how dissimilar ? Napoleon was, from the opening to the close of the battle of Marengo, on the field, commanding in person, sharing the defeat, then the victory. Sheridan was absent and did not participate in the discomfiture of his army, but was present at the final success. Napoleon, after his repulse, was reinforced by Desaix with 6000 men ; but the Army of the Shenandoah, after the disaster of the morning, was reinforced only by its proper commander—Sheridan.

There was not a great disparity of numbers in the opposing armies at Cedar Creek. Probably 20,000 men of all arms were engaged on each side. Relative position and situation of troops must be taken into account, as well as numbers, in determining the strength of one army over another. Early has tried to excuse his defeat by claiming he had the smaller army.

In response to this, Sheridan and his Provost-Marshal, Crown-inshield, have tried to show that Early lost in captured more men than he claimed he had present for duty.¹ After Opequon and Fisher's Hill Early was reinforced by Kershaw's division of Longstreet's corps, Cutshaw's three batteries, and Rosser's division of cavalry with light artillery, together with many smaller detachments, all of which participated in Cedar Creek. Sheridan received no reinforcements, and Edwards' brigade of the First Division of the Sixth, Currie's of the Nineteenth, and Curtis' of the Eighth Corps were each detached, after Opequon, on other duties, and were not at Cedar Creek. The surprise and breaking up in the morning of the greater parts of Crook's and Emory's corps eliminated them, in large part, from the day's battle, and left the Sixth Corps and the cavalry to wage an unequal contest.

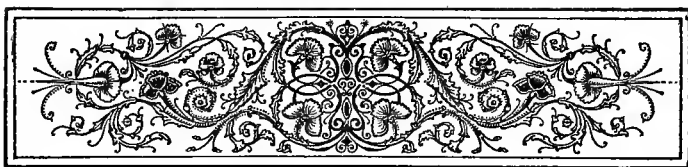
The war closed on the bloody battle-ground of the Shenandoah Valley, so far as important operations were concerned, with Cedar Creek.

President Lincoln appointed me a Brigadier-General by brevet, November 30, 1864; the commission reciting the appointment was "for gallant and meritorious services in the battles of Opequon, Fisher's Hill, and Cedar Creek, Virginia," and I was assigned to duty by him as Brigadier-General, December 29, 1864.

Sheridan's army retired to Kearnsstown and went into winter quarters. The Sixth Corps was, however, soon transferred by rail and steamboat, *via* Harper's Ferry and Washington, to City Point, rejoining the Army of the Potomac, December 5, 1864.

¹ *Battles and Leaders*, etc., vol. iv., p. 532.





CHAPTER XI

PEACE NEGOTIATIONS—LEE'S SUGGESTION TO JEFFERSON DAVIS, 1862 — FERNANDO WOOD'S CORRESPONDENCE WITH MR. LINCOLN, 1862—MR. STEPHENS AT FORTRESS MONROE, 1863—HORACE GREELEY—NIAGARA FALLS CONFERENCE, 1864—JACQUESS-GILMORE VISITS TO RICHMOND, 1863-4—F. P. BLAIR, SEN., CONFERENCES WITH MR. DAVIS, 1865—HAMPTON ROADS CONFERENCE, MR. LINCOLN AND SEWARD AND STEPHENS AND OTHERS, 1865 — ORD - LONGSTREET, LEE AND GRANT CORRESPONDENCE, 1865, AND LEW WALLACE AND GENERAL SLAUGHTER, POINT ISABEL CONFERENCE, 1865

THE war had now lasted nearly four years, with varied success in all the military departments, and the people North and South had long been satiated with its dire calamities. There had, from the start, been an anti-war party in the North, and in certain localities South there were large numbers of loyal men, many of whom joined the Union Army. The South was becoming exhausted in men and means. The blockade had become so efficient as to render it almost impossible for the Confederate authorities to get foreign supplies. It seemed to unprejudiced observers that the Confederacy must soon collapse. Sherman in his march from "Atlanta to the Sea" had cut the Confederacy in twain. It was without gold or silver, and its paper issues were valueless and passed only by compulsion within the Confederate lines. Provisions were obtainable only by a system of military seizure. The Confederacy had no credit at home or abroad; and there was

a growing discontent with President Davis and his advisers. There also came to be a feeling in the South that slavery, in any event, was doomed. Lastly, the "cradle and the grave" were robbed to fill up the army: this by a relentless draft. The Confederate Congress passed an act authorizing the incorporation into the army of colored men—slaves. This was not well received, though General Lee approved of the policy, suggesting, however, that it would be necessary to give those who became soldiers, freedom.¹

Notwithstanding the desperate straits into which the Confederacy had fallen it still had in the field not less than 300,000 well-equipped soldiers, generally well commanded, and, although forced to act on the defensive, they were very formidable.

The officers and soldiers of the Union Army longest in the field, though confident of final and complete success, desired very much to see the war speedily terminated—to return to their families and to peaceful pursuits. This desire did not show itself so much in discontent as in a restless disposition towards those in authority, who, it might be supposed, could in some way secure a peace. The credit of the United States remained good; its bonds commanded ready sale at home and abroad, yet an enormous debt was piling up at the rate of \$4,000,000 daily, and its paper currency was depreciated to about thirty-five per cent. of its face value. These and many other causes led to a general desire for peace. On both sides, those in supreme authority were unjustly charged with a disposition to continue the war for ulterior purposes when it had been demonstrated that it was no longer justifiable.

This retrospect seems necessary before giving a summary of the various efforts to negotiate a peace. About the first open suggestion to that end came from General Robert E. Lee in a letter to President Davis written at Fredericktown, Maryland, September 8, 1862. This was just after the Second Bull Run, during the first Confederate invasion of Maryland and in the hey-day of the Confederacy. Davis was requested to join Lee's army, and, from its head, propose to the United States a

¹ *Life of R. E. Lee*, White (Putnam's), pp. 416-17.

recognition of the independence of the Confederate States. Lee in this letter showed himself something of a politician. He urged that a rejection of such a proposition would throw the responsibility of a continuance of the war on the Union authorities and thus aid, at the elections, the party in the country opposed to the war.¹ Nothing, however, came of this suggestion of Lee.

Fernando Wood, who had kept himself in some sort of relations with President Lincoln, though at all times suspected by the latter, pretended in a letter to him, dated December 8, 1862, to have "reliable and truthful authority" for saying the Southern States would send representatives to Congress provided a general amnesty would permit them to do so. The President was asked to give immediate attention to the matter, and Wood suggested "that gentlemen whose former social and political relations with the leaders of the *Southern revolt* may be allowed to hold unofficial correspondence with them on this subject."

Mr. Lincoln, whose power to discern a sham, or a false pretense, exceeded that of any other man of his time, promptly responded: "I strongly suspect your information will prove groundless; nevertheless, I thank you for communicating it to me." He said further to Mr. Wood that if "the *people* of the Southern States would cease resistance, and would re-inaugurate, submit to, and maintain the national authority within the limits of such States, the war would cease on the part of the United States, and that if, within a reasonable time, a full and general amnesty were necessary to such end, it would not be withheld." The President declined to suspend military operations "to try any experiment of negotiation." He expressed a desire for any "exact information" Mr. Wood might have, saying it "might be more valuable before than after January 1, 1863," referring, doubtless, to the promised Emancipation Proclamation. Wood's scheme, evidently having no substantial basis, aborted.²

¹ *Manassas to Appomattox*, p. 204.

² *Lincoln* (Nicolay and Hay), vol. vii., pp. 367-8.

Others, about the same time, pestered Mr. Lincoln with plans and schemes for the termination of the war. One Duff Green, a Virginia politician, wrote from Richmond in January, 1863, asking the President for an interview "to pave the way for an early termination of the war." He asked the same permission from Jeff. Davis. His efforts came to nothing.

Alexander H. Stephens, Vice-President of the Confederacy, conceiving, in the early summer of 1863, that the times were auspicious for peace negotiations, wrote Mr. Davis, asking to be sent to Washington, ostensibly to negotiate about the exchange of prisoners, but really to try to "turn attention to a general adjustment, upon such basis as might be ultimately acceptable to both parties, and stop the further effusion of blood." He assured Mr. Davis he had but one idea of final adjustment—"the recognition of the sovereignty of the States." Mr. Davis wired Stephens to repair to Richmond, and he arrived on June 22, 1863. Davis and his Cabinet appeared to have seconded, with some heartiness, Stephens' scheme; all thinking it might result in aiding the "peace party" North. The Confederate leaders had been greatly encouraged by the gains of the Democratic party in the elections of 1862; by repeated attacks on the Administration by some of Lincoln's party friends; by public meetings held in New York City at which violent and denunciatory speeches were listened to from Fernando Wood and others, and by the nomination of Vallandigham for Governor of Ohio. The military situation was critical to both governments when Stephens reached Richmond. Pemberton was besieged and doomed to an early surrender at Vicksburg. On the other hand Lee was invading Pennsylvania, having just gained some successes in the Shenandoah Valley; and there was a great battle imminent on Northern soil. Stephens was directed to proceed by the Valley to join Lee, and from his headquarters try to reach Washington. Heavy rains and bad roads deterred the frail Vice-President. At length the Secretary of the Confederate Navy sent him in a small steamer (the *Torpedo*) under a flag of truce, accompanied by Commissioner Robert Ould as his

secretary, to Fortress Monroe. He wrote from this place a letter to Admiral S. P. Lee in Hampton Roads, of date of July 4, 1863, saying he was "bearer of a communication in writing from Jefferson Davis, *Commander-in-Chief* of the land and naval forces of the Confederate States, to Abraham Lincoln, *Commander-in-Chief* of the land and naval forces of the United States," and that he desired to go to Washington in his own vessel. The titles by which Mr. Lincoln and Mr. Davis were designated had been previously determined on by Davis and his advisers. Anticipating there might be objection to the latter being referred to as President of the Confederacy, the foregoing was adopted as likely to be least objectionable. It was, however, solemnly agreed at Richmond that if the designations or titles adopted were such as to cause Mr. Stephens' communication to be rejected, he was to say that he had a communication to "President Lincoln from the President of the Confederacy." If this were objectionable as an apparent recognition of Davis as President of an independent nation, then Mr. Stephens' mission was to forthwith terminate. Admiral Lee wired to Mr. Lincoln Mr. Stephens' arrival, his mission, and desire to proceed to Washington. Mr. Lincoln did not stand on punctilio. He was, at first, inclined to send a long dispatch refusing Mr. Stephens' permission to go to Washington, and saying that nothing would be received "assuming the independence of the Confederate States, and anything will be received, and carefully considered by him, when offered by any influential person or persons, in terms not assuming the independence of the so-called Confederate States." This was, however, decided to be too much in detail, and the Secretary of the Navy was ordered to telegraph Admiral Lee:

"The request of A. H. Stephens is inadmissible. The customary agents and channels are adequate for all needful communication and conference between the United States and the insurgents."

This ended Mr. Stephens' first plans to secure peace. He,

in his book written since the war, admits or pretends that the ulterior purpose of his proposed trip to Washington was, through a correspondence that would be published, "to deeply impress the growing constitutional (*sic* !) party at the North with a full realization of the true nature and ultimate tendencies of the war, . . . that the surest way to maintain their liberties was to allow us the separate enjoyment of ours."¹

Great events took place the day Mr. Stephens reached Fortress Monroe. Vicksburg fell and Lee was, on that memorable Fourth of July, sending off his wounded, preparatory to a retreat from the fated field of Gettysburg.

Horace Greeley, a sincere enemy to slavery, who had somehow become imbued with the notion that the Administration was responsible for a prolongation of the war, became restless and complaining. He, at the head of the New York *Tribune*, gave vent to much criticism, which encouraged those in rebellion, and their friends in the North. He listened to all sorts of pretenders and, finally, was duped into the belief that a peace could be made through some Southern emissaries in Canada. An adventurer calling himself "William Cornell Jewett of Colorado," from Niagara Falls, July 5, 1864, wrote Mr. Greeley:

"I am authorized to say to you . . . that two ambassadors of Davis & Co. are now in Canada with full and complete powers for peace, and Mr. Sanders requests that you come on immediately to me at Cataract House to have a private interview; or, if you will send the President's protection for him and two friends, they will come on and meet you. He says the whole matter can be consummated by *me, you, them, and President Lincoln*."²

Mr. Greeley was seemingly so impressed with this as an opening for peace that he wrote a dictatorial letter to Mr. Lincoln reminding him of the long continuance of the war; asserting the country was dissatisfied with the manner in which

¹ *War Between the States*, vol. ii., pp. 557-62, 780; *Lincoln* (Nicolay and Hay), vol. vii., pp. 371-4.

² Jewett must have attended school where the master required the class to parse the sentence, "*Dog, I, and father went a-hunting*."

it was conducted and averse to further calls for troops; avowing that there was a widespread conviction that the government did not desire peace; rebuking the President for not having received Mr. Stephens the year before, and prophesying that unless there were steps taken to show the country that honest efforts were being made to secure an early settlement of our difficulties the Union party would be defeated at the impending Presidential election. Greeley suggested this wholly impracticable and impossible plan of adjustment: (1) The Union to be restored and declared perpetual; (2) slavery abolished; (3) complete amnesty; (4) payment of \$400,000,000 to slave States for their slaves; (5) the slave States to have representation based on their total population, and (6) a national convention to be called at once. With a tirade on the condition of the country and its credit and more warning as to the coming election, Mr. Greeley concluded by demanding that negotiations should be opened with the persons at Niagara.

Mr. Lincoln, though without faith in either the parties in Canada or Greeley's plan, wrote the latter, July 9th, saying:

"If you can find any person, anywhere, professing to have any proposition of Jefferson Davis in writing, for peace, embracing the restoration of the Union, and abandonment of slavery, whatever else it embraces, say to him he may come to me with you, and that if he really brings such proposition he shall at the least have safe conduct with the paper (and without publicity if he chooses) to the point where you shall have met him. The same if there be two or more persons."

The President, thus prompt and frank, utterly surprised and disconcerted Mr. Greeley. Mr. Lincoln had accepted two main points in Greeley's plan—restoration of the Union and abandonment of slavery, and waived all others for the time being. The next day Mr. Greeley replied by repeating reproaches over what he called the "rude repulse" of Stephens, saying he thought the negotiators would not "open their budgets"; referring to the importance of doing something to aid the elections, and indicating that he might try to get a

look into the hand of the Niagara parties. Again, on the 13th, he wrote Mr. Lincoln he had reliable information that Clement C. Clay of Alabama and Jacob Thompson of Mississippi were at Niagara Falls duly empowered to negotiate for peace, adding that he knew nothing as to terms, and saying it was high time the slaughter was ended.' The President, still without the slightest faith in Greeley or his Canada negotiators, but stung with the unjust assumption that he was averse to peace, wired Mr. Greeley, on the 15th:

"I was not expecting you to send me a letter, but to bring me a man or men," and saying a messenger with a letter was on the way to him.

The letter of Mr. Lincoln was brief, but met the case:

"Yours of the 13th is just received, and I am disappointed that you have not already reached here with those commissioners, if they would consent to come, on being shown my letter to you of the 9th inst. Show that and this to them, and if they will come on the terms in the former, bring them. I not only intend a sincere effort for peace, but I intend you shall be a personal witness that it is made."

Mr. Greeley, on this letter being placed in his hands, expressed much embarrassment, but decided to go in search of the Canada parties provided he had a safe conduct for C. C. Clay, Jacob Thompson, James P. Holcombe, and George N. Sanders to Washington, in company with himself. The safe conduct was obtained through John Hay, the messenger. On Mr. Greeley's arrival at Niagara he fell into the hands of "Colorado Jewett," his vainglorious correspondent, and through him addressed Clay, Thompson, and Holcombe this letter:

"I understand you are duly accredited from Richmond as the bearer of propositions looking to the establishment of peace; that you desire to visit Washington in fulfilment of your mission; and that you further desire that George N. Sanders shall accompany you. If my information be thus far substantially correct, I am

authorized by the President of the United States to tender you his safe conduct on the journey proposed, and to accompany you at the earliest time that will be agreeable to you."

Mr. Greeley, in this communication, ignored all the conditions in Mr. Lincoln's letters to him. Notwithstanding this, two of the persons named responded (Thompson not having been with Clay and Holcombe), saying they had no credentials to treat on the subject of peace, and hence could not accept his offer. Clay and Holcombe did say something about being acquainted with the views of their government, and if permitted to go to Richmond could get, for themselves or others, proper credentials. Mr. Greeley reported the situation, asking of the President further instructions. It now became apparent to everybody connected with the farce that if it was kept up further, Mr. Lincoln would be put in the attitude of suing the Confederacy for a peace. Lincoln determined to end the situation and at the same time define his position before the world, clearly. He dispatched John Hay to Niagara with this famous letter:

"TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN: Any proposition which embraces the restoration of peace, the integrity of the whole Union, and the abandonment of slavery, and which comes by and with an authority that can control the armies now at war with the United States, will be received and considered by the Executive of the United States, and will be met by liberal terms on other substantial and collateral points, and the bearer or bearers thereof shall have safe conduct both ways.

"ABRAHAM LINCOLN."

This explicit letter was communicated to Holcombe at the Clifton House by Greeley and Hay. Mr. Greeley seems to have expressed to Jewett his regret over the "sad termination of the initiatory steps taken for peace, from the change made by the President in his instructions given him." Nothing could have been more unjust. The Confederate emissaries wrote a long letter to Mr. Greeley, which they gave to the public, arraigning Mr. Lincoln for bad faith. They assumed

Mr. Greeley had been sent by the President, on Mr. Lincoln's own motion, to invite them to Washington to confer as to a peace. It does not appear that Mr. Greeley tried to disabuse the public mind of this error or to make known the truth. He claimed to regard the safe conduct of July 16th as a waiver of all the President's precedent terms; also of his own previously expressed terms. The President did not think best to publish the whole correspondence, preferring to suffer the injustice in silence. Mr. Greeley continued in a bad state of mind. He refused to visit Mr. Lincoln, as requested, for a conference. He wrote the President on the 8th and again on the 9th of August, 1864, abusing certain Cabinet officers, reiterating his reproaches of Mr. Lincoln for not receiving Mr. Stephens, censuring him for not sending, after Vicksburg, a deputation to Richmond to ask for peace, complaining of him for not sending the "three biggest" Democrats in Congress to sue for peace, saying, however, little of his Niagara Falls fiasco, but adding: "Do not let the month pass without an earnest effort for peace," and closing his last letter thus:

"I beg you, implore you, to inaugurate or invite proposals for peace forthwith. And in case peace cannot now be made, consent to an *armistice for one year*, each party to retain, unmolested, all it now holds, but the rebel ports to be opened. Meantime, let a national convention be held, and there will surely be no more war at all events."

This suggestion of an armistice for one year and the opening of the rebel ports, was equivalent to proposing to give one year for the Confederacy to recuperate at home and from abroad; to strengthen its credit, to arrange new combinations, and to tie the hands of the friends of the Union and the Administration, to say nothing of the confession of failure to suppress the insurrection.

While Mr. Greeley was a Union man and had, throughout his public life, opposed slavery, he had no faith in war, nor did he have any of the instincts of a soldier to enable him to discern its tendencies. He was personally friendly, it may be

assumed, to the President, but hostile to Mr. Seward, Secretary of State, and probably intensely jealous of all the distinguished generals of the army. Greeley had long been, through the *Tribune*, a recognized factor in moulding public opinion, and now that war had come to absorb all other interests, his power and influence through the press had waned. He was wholly impracticable in executive matters. His failure to inaugurate a peace and to attain prominence in administrative affairs during the war embittered him through life towards his old-time party friends.

A review of Mr. Lincoln's course relating to Mr. Greeley's attempts to negotiate a peace shows the former acted with the utmost candor, and submitted, for the time, to the latter's dictatorial course and the unjust charge of wavering and acting in bad faith, rather than crush his old friend or endanger the general cause for selfish glory.¹

Though in a sense inaugurated in 1863, another quite as futile attempt to bring about peace was in progress in July, 1864. James F. Jacquess, Colonel of the 73d Illinois, serving in Rosecrans' army—a Methodist Episcopal clergyman, a D.D.—in May, 1863, wrote James A. Garfield, Chief of Staff, calling attention to the fact that his church had divided on the slavery question; saying that the Methodist Episcopal Church South had been a leading element in the Rebellion and prominent in the prosecution of the war; that a considerable part of the territory of that church South was in possession of the Union Army; that from its ministers, once bitterly opposed to the Union, he had learned in person:

“That they consider the Rebellion has killed the Methodist Episcopal Church South; that it has virtually obliterated slavery, and all the prominent questions of difference between the North and the South; that they are desirous of returning to the ‘Old Church’; that their brethren of the South are most heartily tired of the Rebellion; and that they most ardently desire peace, and the privilege of returning to their allegiance to church and state, and that they will

¹ *Lincoln* (Nicolay and Hay), vol. ix., pp. 184–200.

do this on the first offer coming from a reliable source. . . . And from these considerations, but not from these alone, but because God has laid the duty on me, I submit to the proper authorities the following proposition, viz.: *I will go into the Southern Confederacy and return within ninety days with terms of peace that the government will accept.*"

He further stated :

"I propose no compromise with traitors—but their immediate return to allegiance to God and their country. . . . I propose to do this work in the name of the Lord ; if He puts it in the hearts of my superiors to allow me to do it, I shall be thankful ; if not, I have discharged my duty."

This letter Rosecrans forwarded to Mr. Lincoln, approving Jacquess' application. The President, seeing the difficulties, wrote Rosecrans saying Jacquess " could not go with any government authority," yet left to Rosecrans the discretion to grant the desired furlough. The furlough was granted. Jacquess, finding a mere furlough or church influence would not aid him in getting into the Confederate lines, repaired to Baltimore and besought General Schenck to send him *via* Fort Monroe to Richmond. Schenck wired the President (July 13th) Jacquess' wishes and was answered: " Mr. Jacquess is a very worthy gentleman, but I can have nothing to do, directly or indirectly, with the matter he has in view." The Colonel, however, persuaded Schenck to send him to Fort Monroe, from whence he reached Richmond through the connivance of officers conducting the exchange of prisoners. In eleven days he was again in Baltimore asking the President by letter to grant him permission to report the " valuable information and proposals for peace " he had obtained. This permission was not granted. Mr. Lincoln well understood that he could have nothing official to report, and that in the brief time he was South he could have gained no reliable information concerning public sentiment. After lingering in Baltimore a little, this preacher-colonel rejoined his regiment. It does not appear

that he ever made, even to Rosecrans or Garfield, any detailed report of this his first trip to Richmond. Though his efforts had so far failed, he was not discouraged, but with faith characteristic of his class, resolved upon another effort. He now associated with him one J. R. Gilmore, a lecturer and literary character known as "Edmund Kirke," who had spent some time in the Western armies. Both were enthusiastic, but their zeal constituted their principal merit in the matter attempted. The President declined a personal interview with Jacquess, but gave, July, 1864, Gilmore a pass, over his own signature, to Grant's headquarters, with a note to Grant to allow both "to pass our lines with ordinary baggage and go South." Mr. Gilmore had previously (June 15, 1864) written Mr. Lincoln telling him something of what Jacquess would propose. In substance he would say: "Lay down your arms and resume peaceful pursuits; the Emancipation Proclamation tells what will be done with the blacks; amnesty will be granted the masses, and no terms with rebels. The leaders to be allowed to seek safety abroad, and at the end of sixty days not one of them must be found in the United States." On the 16th, these two men passed from Butler's lines and were allowed to proceed, under surveillance, to Richmond. Next day they asked, through Secretary of State Judah P. Benjamin, for an interview with "President Davis," which was accorded them at nine o'clock that night, both Davis and Benjamin being present.

The volunteer envoys were politely received, and the interview lasted two hours. It seem that Jacquess and Gilmore did not even mention the plan referred to in the latter's letter to Mr. Lincoln. This was, however, immaterial, as they had no authority to submit anything. They asked Mr. Davis if the "*dispute*" was not "narrowed down to this: Union or Disunion." Davis answered: "Yes, or independence or subjugation." The "envoys" suggested that the two governments should go to the people with two propositions: (1) "Peace with disunion and Southern independence," (2) "Peace with Union, emancipation, no confiscation, and

universal amnesty." A vote to be taken on these propositions within sixty days, in which the citizens of the whole United States should participate; the proposition prevailing to be abided by. Pending the vote there should be an armistice. Mr. Davis promptly said:

"The plan is wholly impracticable. If the South were only one State it might work; but as it is, if only one State objected to emancipation, it would nullify the whole thing: for you are aware the people of Virginia cannot vote slavery out of South Carolina, nor the people of South Carolina vote it out of Virginia."

The interview proceeded on these lines without approaching any agreement. It is evident the "envoys" were overmatched by Davis and Benjamin, and were subjected to a charge of ignorance of the form of their own government. Davis indulged in some *bluff* about caring nothing for slavery, as his slaves were already freed by the war; and he declared the Southern people "will be free"—will govern themselves, if they "have to see every Southern plantation sacked and every Southern city in flames." Davis also announced that he would be pleased, at any time, to receive proposals "for peace on the basis of independence. It will be needless to approach me on any other."

The interview being over, Jacquess and Gilmore got quickly back into the Union lines, and North. The latter published an account of the interview in the *Atlantic Monthly* for September, 1864. His account does not materially differ from Benjamin's sent to the Confederate diplomatic agents in Europe, or Davis' in his *Rise and Fall of the Confederacy*.¹

On the whole the publication of the story of this visit to Richmond did much good to the Union cause in the pending Presidential campaign. The story closed the mouths of the peace factionists, though a few of Mr. Lincoln's party friends, fearing the result of the election, continued to demand more tangible testimony of his disposition to negotiate a peace; this largely for the purpose of its effect on the November election.

¹ Vol. ii., p. 610. Also see *Lincoln* (N. and H.), vol. ix., pp. 201-2.

Henry J. Raymond, Chairman of the Republican National Executive Committee, at a meeting of the committee in New York, apprehensive of McClellan's nomination and possible election as President, August 22, 1864, indited a panicky letter to Mr. Lincoln, expressing great fear of the latter's defeat at the polls, giving some unfavorable predictions as to the result of the election by E. B. Washburn, Governor Morton, Simon Cameron, and others, deploring the failure of the army to gain victories, and assigning as a cause for reaction in public sentiment:

"The impression in some minds, the fear and suspicion in others, that we are not to have peace in any event under this Administration until slavery is abandoned."

Continuing:

"In some way or other the suspicion is widely diffused that we can have peace with Union if we would. It is idle to reason with this belief—still more idle to denounce it. It can only be expelled by some authoritative act, at once bold enough to fix attention and distinct enough to defy incredulity and challenge respect."

Raymond was bold enough to ask that a commission be appointed to offer "peace to Davis, as the head of the rebel armies, on the sole condition of acknowledging the supremacy of the Constitution—all other questions to be settled in a convention of the people of all the States." He stated that if the proffer were accepted the people would put the execution of the details in loyal hands; if rejected "it would plant seeds of disaffection in the South and dispel all delusions about peace that prevail in the North." He demanded the proposal should be made at once, as Mr. Lincoln's "spontaneous act." Mr. Raymond seemed to express the concurrent views of his Republican associates.¹ Three days later he and his

¹ The attitude of the Democratic party caused the political friends of President Lincoln the deepest anxiety. In its National platform adopted at Chicago, August 30, 1864, it demanded, "that after four years of failure to restore the Union by the experiment of war, immediate efforts should be made for a cessation

committee reached Washington to personally urge prompt action on the President. In the light of recent attempts at Niagara and Richmond the Raymond proposition was inadmissible, yet Mr. Lincoln resolved, if the step must be taken, to again make the proposer the instrument to demonstrate its folly. The President wrote a letter of instructions, which he felt he might have to give to Mr. Raymond, authorizing him to proceed to Richmond, and propose to "Honorable Jefferson Davis that upon the restoration of the Union and the national authority, the war shall cease at once, all remaining questions to be left for adjustment by peaceful modes." If this proposition were not accepted, Mr. Raymond was then "to request to be informed what terms, if any, embracing the restoration of the Union, would be accepted." "If the presentation of any terms embracing the restoration of the Union" were declined, then Mr. Raymond was directed to "request to be informed what terms of peace would be accepted; and on receiving any answer report the same to the Government."

It will be noticed that in the Raymond letter the President left out all reference to slavery. In previous ones he had insisted on the *abandonment of slavery by the South* as well as the restoration of the Union. On questions of amnesty, confiscation, and all other matters the President was ready to grant everything to the South.¹

This letter was never delivered. Mr. Raymond, in personal interviews with Mr. Lincoln, became convinced the latter understood the situation and the sentiment of the country better than he and his committee did, and the matter was dropped.

It must not be assumed that the President for a moment gave up his long settled purpose to insist on the abolition of slavery as a condition of peace. In his annual Message to Congress, December, 1864, in expressing his views and purposes on the subject of terminating the war, he says:

of hostilities, with a view to an ultimate convention of the States, or other peaceable means, to the end that at the earliest practicable moment peace may be restored on the basis of the Federal Union of the States."

¹ *Lincoln* (Nicolay and Hay), vol. ix., pp. 216-21.

"In presenting the abandonment of armed resistance to the national authority on the part of the insurgents as the only indispensable condition to ending the war on the part of the government, I retract nothing heretofore said as to slavery. I repeat the declaration made a year ago, that 'While I remain in my present position I shall not attempt to retract or modify the Emancipation Proclamation nor shall I return to slavery any person who is free by the terms of that proclamation, or by any of the acts of Congress.' If the people should, by whatever mode or means, make it an Executive duty to re-enslave such persons, another, and not I, must be their instrument to perform it. In stating a single condition of peace, I mean simply to say that the war will cease on the part of the government whenever it shall have ceased on the part of those who began it."

Mr. Lincoln was triumphantly re-elected, but notwithstanding this and the foreshadowed collapse of the Confederacy, Francis P. Blair, Senior, a veteran statesman who had flourished in Jackson's time, came forward in the hope that he might become a successful mediator between the North and the South. He personally gave the President hints of his wishes in this respect, but received from the latter no encouragement, save the remark: "Come to me after Savannah falls." Sherman took Savannah, December 22, 1864. Mr. Lincoln, without permitting Mr. Blair to reveal to him his plans in detail, on December 28th, wrote and signed a card: "Allow the bearer, F. P. Blair, Sr., to pass our lines, go South, and return."

With this credential Mr. Blair went to Grant at City Point, and under a flag of truce sent communications to "Jefferson Davis, President," etc., etc. The effect of one of these messages was to request an interview with Mr. Davis to confer upon plans that might ultimately "lead to something practicable"—peace. After some vexatious delay, Mr. Blair was allowed to go to Richmond, where, January 12, 1865, Davis accorded him an interview.

Mr. Blair explained to Mr. Davis that he came without President Lincoln's knowledge of his plans but with the latter's

knowledge of his purpose to try to open peace negotiations. After some preliminary talk Mr. Blair read to Mr. Davis an elaborate paper containing his "suggestions." These covered a reference to slavery, "the cause of all our woes," saying it was doomed and hence no longer an insurmountable obstruction to pacification, adding that as the South proposed to use slaves to "conquer a peace," and to secure its independence, "their deliverance from bondage" must follow.¹ With slavery abandoned, Mr. Blair suggested the war against the Union became a war for monarchy. Reference was then made to Maximilian's reign in Mexico, under Austrian and French protection, and of its danger to free institutions by establishing a "Bonaparte-Hapsburg dynasty on our Southern flank." Mr. Davis was complimented over his position being such as to be the instrument to avert the danger. It was suggested that Juarez at the head of the "Liberals of Mexico" could be persuaded to "devolve all the power he can command on President Davis—a dictatorship if necessary—to restore the rights of Mexico." Mr. Davis was to use his veteran Confederates and Mexican recruits, with, if necessary, "multitudes of the army of the North, officers and men" to drive out the invaders, uphold the Monroe Doctrine, and thus "restore the Mexican Republic." Mr. Blair further suggested that if Mr. Davis accomplished all this it would "ally his name with Washington and Jackson as a defender of the liberty of the country," and if "in delivering Mexico he should model its States in form and principle to adapt them to our Union and add a new Southern constellation to its benignant sky," he would attain further glory. This and more talk of like kind seemed to command Davis' attention, for Mr. Blair says he pronounced the scheme "possible to be solved." Mr. Davis declared he was "thoroughly for popular government."

There was nothing agreed upon, though the interview

¹ If the reader is curious to know what effort was made by the Confederate authorities to enlist slaves and free negroes as soldiers, he will find interesting correspondence on the subject between Davis, Lee, Longstreet, and others. *War Records*, vol. xlvii., Part III., pp. 1315, 1339, 1356, 1348, 1366, 1370.

covered much ground as reported by Mr. Blair. Mr. Davis was evidently anxious for some arrangement, for on the 12th of January he addressed to Mr. Blair, who was still in Richmond, a note saying among other things he had "no disposition to find obstacles in forms," and was willing "to enter into negotiations for peace; that he was ready to appoint a commissioner to meet one on the part of the United States to confer with a view to secure peace to the *two countries*." This note was carried to Washington by Mr. Blair and shown to President Lincoln, who, January 18th, addressed him a note saying, he had constantly been and still was ready to appoint an agent to meet one appointed by Mr. Davis, "with the view of securing peace to the people of *our one common country*." With Mr. Lincoln's note Mr. Blair returned to Richmond, and without any authority from any source, shifted to a new project, namely, that Grant and Lee should be authorized to negotiate. This failed to ripen into anything. Mr. Lincoln's note proffering negotiations looking alone to "peace to the people of *our one common country*" placed Mr. Davis in a great dilemma. The situation was critical in the extreme. The Confederate Congress had voted a lack of confidence in Mr. Davis; Sherman had not only marched to the sea, but was moving up the Atlantic coast through the Carolinas; Lee reported his army had not two days' rations; and many of Davis' advisers had declared success impossible. At last Mr. Davis, on consultation with Vice-President Stephens and his Cabinet, decided to appoint a commission, composed of Mr. Stephens, Senator R. M. T. Hunter, and ex-Secretary of War John A. Campbell. This commission was directed (January 28, 1865) to go to Washington for informal conference with President Lincoln "*upon the issues involved in the existing war, and for the purpose of securing peace to the two countries*." Mr. Davis was advised by his Secretary of State, Mr. Benjamin, to instruct the commissioners to confer upon the subject of Mr. Lincoln's letter. The instructions were not in accordance with Mr. Lincoln's note, nor were they warranted by anything he had ever said. Notwithstanding this, the commissioners appeared at the Union

lines and asked permission to proceed to Washington as "Peace Commissioners." On this being telegraphed to Washington, Major Eckert of the War Department was sent to Grant's headquarters, with directions to admit them, provided they would say, in writing, they came to confer on the basis of the President's note of January 18th. Before Major Eckert arrived, they had, in violation of their instructions, asked permission "to proceed to Washington to hold a conference with President Lincoln upon the subject of the existing war, and with a view of ascertaining upon what terms it may be terminated, in pursuance of the course indicated by him in his letter to Mr. Blair of January 18, 1865." They were admitted to Grant's headquarters and Mr. Lincoln was advised of their last request. The latter sent Secretary Seward to Fortress Monroe to meet them. Seward was, in writing, instructed to make known to the commissioners that three indispensable things were necessary: "(1) The restoration of the national authority throughout all the States. (2) No receding by the Executive on the slavery question from the position assumed thereon in the late annual Message. (3) No cessation of hostilities short of the end of the war, and the disbanding of all forces hostile to the government." On other questions the Secretary was instructed to say the President would act "in a spirit of sincere liberality." Mr. Seward was not definitely to consummate anything. He started to meet the commissioners on February 1st. Meantime, on the same day, Major Eckert had met them at City Point and informed them of the President's requirements, to which they responded by presenting Davis' written instructions. Major Eckert at once notified them that they could not proceed unless strictly in compliance with Mr. Lincoln's terms. This seemingly put an end to the mission of Stephens, Hunter, and Campbell. Grant, being impressed with their anxiety to secure a peace, wired Stanton his impression, and expressed regret that Mr. Lincoln could not have an interview with Stephens and Hunter, if not all three, before their return. The President on reading Grant's dispatch decided to meet the commissioners in person at Fortress

Monroe. Mr. Lincoln joined Mr. Seward at this place on the *River Queen*, where they were met by the commissioners the morning of February 3d. The conference which ensued was wholly without significance. The President was frank and firm, standing by his hitherto announced ultimatum. Stephens tried to talk about Blair's Mexican scheme; about an armistice and some expedient to "give time to cool." Mr. Lincoln met all suggestions by saying: "The restoration of the Union is a *sine qua non*"; and that there could be no armistice on any other terms. It is not absolutely certain what was, in detail, proposed or rejected on either side, as no concurrent report was made of the conference and reporters were excluded from it. Mr. Lincoln, according to the commissioners, declared the road to reconstruction for the insurgents was to disband "their armies and permit the national authorities to resume their functions." The President stated he would exercise the power of the Executive with liberality as to the confiscation of property. He is reported to have said also that the effect of the Emancipation Proclamation was to be decided by the courts, giving it as his opinion that as it was a war measure, it would be inoperative for the future as soon as the war ceased; that it would be held to apply only to such slaves as had come under its operation. Mr. Seward called attention to the very recent adoption by Congress of the Thirteenth Amendment to the Constitution. The commissioners report him as saying that if the seceding States would agree to return to the Union they might defeat the ratification of the amendment.

It is apparent that some coloring entered into the statements of Mr. Stephens and party. About the only good point made in the talk about which there is no controversy was made by Mr. Lincoln. Mr. Hunter, in attempting to persuade the latter that there was high precedent for his treating with people in arms, cited the example of Charles I. of England treating with his subjects in armed rebellion. To this the President answered: "*I do not profess to be posted in history. On all such matters I will turn you over to Mr. Seward. All that I*

distinctly recollect about the case of Charles I. is that he lost his head."

The commissioners reached Richmond much disappointed, and reported their failure. The effect on the South was depressing. Mr. Stephens seemed to give up the Confederate cause at this time; he departed from Richmond, abandoned the Rebellion and went into retirement.¹ Mr. Davis transmitted his commissioners' report to the Confederate Congress, stating that no terms of settlement could be obtained "other than the conqueror might grant." The last flicker of the Hampton Roads conference was seen in a public meeting held at the African Church in Richmond, February 6, 1865, at which bravado speeches were made by Mr. Davis and others. Mr. Davis announced a belief that they would "compel the Yankees, in less than twelve months, to petition us for peace on our own terms."²

General E. O. C. Ord, commanding the Army of the James, about February 20th, attempted to inaugurate another peace conference to be conducted through military channels, aided by the wives of certain officers of the two armies. To this end he secured, on a trivial pretext, an interview with General James Longstreet, then commanding the Confederate forces immediately north of Richmond. Ord, in the interview, referred to the Hampton Roads' conference, stating (according to Longstreet) that the politicians North were afraid to touch the question of peace; that there was no

¹ Alexander H. Stephens had a small body, small head, and his whole appearance was that of a most emaciated person. For many years of his life he was in most delicate health; so feeble he could not stand or walk. He was moved about in a chair with wheels. His intellect, however, was strong and elastic, and his voice was sufficient to enable him to make a public speech. He wrote much. He was not always consistent in his views. He opposed secession, then advocated it; then again denied that secession was warranted by the Constitution. I knew him well in Congress after the war. He asserted when some of his Democratic brethren were denying Mr. Hayes' title to the Presidency, that it was superior to the title of any President who had preceded him—that by virtue of the decision of the commission, it had become *res adjudicata*.

² *Lincoln* (Nicolay and Hay), vol. x., pp. 113-31; *Lost Cause* (Pollard), pp. 684-5; *War between States* (Stephens), vol. ii., pp. 597, 608-12.

way to open the subject save through officers of the armies; that on the Union side the war had gone on long enough, and that the army officers "should come together as former comrades and friends and talk a little." Ord is reported as saying that the "work as belligerents" should cease: Grant and Lee should have a talk; that Longstreet's wife with a retinue of Confederate officers should first visit Mrs. Grant within the Union lines; that then Mrs. Grant should return the call at Richmond under escort of Union officers, and that thus the ladies could aid Generals Grant and Lee in fixing up peace on terms honorable to both sides. Longstreet took kindly to Ord's talk. Lee met Longstreet at President Davis' house in Richmond. Breckinridge (then Secretary of War) was present. At this meeting it was decided that Longstreet was to seek a further interview with Ord and see how the subject could be opened between Grant and Lee. Longstreet summoned his wife from Lynchburg to Richmond by telegraph. About the last day of February, Ord and Longstreet had another meeting at which Ord suggested that if Lee would write Grant a letter, the latter was prepared to receive it, and thus a military convention could be brought about. Longstreet reported the result of the talk with Ord, and Lee, March 2d, wrote Grant that he was informed that Ord, in a conversation relating to "the possibility of arriving at a satisfactory adjustment of the present *unhappy difficulties* by means of a military convention," had stated that if Lee desired an interview with Grant on the subject the latter would not decline, provided Lee had authority to act. Lee, in his letter, said he was fully authorized in the premises, and proposed a meeting at the place proposed by Ord and Longstreet, on Monday the 6th. Accompanying Lee's letter was the usual "by-play" letter on an immaterial subject. Grant, on receiving Lee's communication, wired its substance to Secretary Stanton, who laid the matter before President Lincoln at his room at the Capitol, whither he had gone to sign bills the last night of a session of Congress. Mr. Lincoln, without advice from any person, took his pen, and with his usual precision wrote:

"The President directs me to say that he wishes you to have no conference with General Lee unless it be for capitulation of General Lee's army, or on some minor or purely military matter. He instructs me to say that you are not to decide, discuss, or confer upon any political questions. Such questions the President holds in his own hands, and will submit them to no military conferences or conventions. Meantime you are to press to the utmost your military advantages."

This perfectly explicit dispatch was shown to Mr. Seward, then handed to Mr. Stanton, who signed and sent it the night of March 3, 1865. Grant, the next day, answered Lee in the light of the dispatch, saying:

"In regard to meeting you, I would state that I have no authority to accede to your proposition for a conference on the subject proposed. Such authority is vested in the President of the United States alone."¹

Thus ended the Ord-Longstreet attempt to patch up a peace.

There was one more remarkable attempt made (before Lee surrendered) to bring about a peace in part of the Confederacy. General Lew Wallace was ordered, January 22, 1865, "to visit the Rio Grande and Western Texas on a tour of inspection." Shortly after his arrival at Brazos Santiago, by correspondence with the Confederate General J. E. Slaughter, commanding the West District of Texas, and a Colonel Ford, he arranged for a meeting with them at Point Isabel (General Wallace to furnish the refreshments), nominally to discuss matters relating to the rendition of criminals, but really to talk about peace. The conference took place March 12th. General Wallace assumed only to negotiate a peace for States west of the Mississippi. He did not profess to have any authority from Washington, nor did he offer to make the terms final. He must have been wholly ignorant of the President's dispatch to Grant of March 3d. Wallace's plan was, at Slaughter and Ford's instance, reduced to writing, and addressed to them,

¹ *Manassas to Appomattox* (Longstreet), pp. 584-7; *Lincoln* (Nicolay and Hay), vol. x., pp. 157-8.

to be submitted to the Confederate General J. G. Walker, commanding the Department of Texas. Here it is:

“ Proposition.

“ I. That the Confederate military authorities of the Trans-Mississippi States and Territories agree voluntarily to cease opposition, armed and otherwise, to the re-establishment of the authority of the United States Government over all the region above designated.

“ II. The proper authorities of the United States on their part guarantee as follows :

“ 1. That the officers and soldiers at present actually composing the Confederate Army proper, including its *bona fide attaches* and employees, shall have, each and all of them, a full release from and against actions, prosecutions, liabilities, and legal proceedings of every kind, so far as the government of the United States is concerned : *Provided*, That if any of such persons choose to remain within the limits of the United States, they shall first take an oath of allegiance to the same. If, however, they or any of them prefer to go abroad for residence in a foreign country, all such shall be at liberty to do so without obligating themselves by an oath of allegiance, taking with them their families and property, with privileges of preparation for such departure.

“ 2. That such of said officers and soldiers as thus determine to remain in the United States shall, after taking the oath of allegiance to the United States Government, be regarded as citizens of that government, invested as such with all the rights, privileges, and immunities now enjoyed by the most favored citizens thereof.

“ 3. That the above guaranties shall be extended to all persons now serving as civil officers of the national and State Confederate governments within the region above mentioned, upon their complying with the conditions stated, viz., residence abroad or taking the oath of allegiance.

“ 4. That persons now private citizens of the region named shall also be included in and receive the same guaranties upon their complying with the same conditions.

“ 5. As respects rights of property, it is further guaranteed that there shall be no interference with existing titles, liens, etc., of whatever nature, except those derived from seizures, occupancies, and procedures of confiscation, under and by virtue of Confederate

laws, orders, proclamations, and decrees, all which shall be admitted void from the beginning.

"6. It is further expressly stipulated that the right of property in slaves shall be referred to the discretion of the Congress of the United States.

"Allow me to say, in conclusion, that if the above propositions are received in the spirit they are sent, we can, in my opinion, speedily have a reunited and prosperous people.

"Very truly, gentlemen, your friend and obedient servant,

"LEW WALLACE,

"Major-General of Volunteers, U. S. Army."¹

General Wallace forwarded this pretentious proposition, with an elaborate letter, through General Dix to General Grant, who received both about March 29, 1865, but probably made no response thereto.

The Confederate officers submitted the plan to their chief, who, besides severely reprimanding them for entertaining it, wrote General Wallace, March 27, rejecting the proposition, "as to accede to it would be the blackest treason"; adding, that "whenever there was a willingness to treat as equal with equal, an officer of your high rank and character, clothed with proper authority, will not be reduced to the necessity of seeking an obscure corner of the Confederacy to inaugurate negotiations."²

The whole story of attempts to negotiate a peace is grotesque, yet the conditions surrounding the North and the South and the stress of the times speak in defence of the ambitious spirits who came to the front and essayed, by negotiation, to put an end to the war. Providence had another, more fitting and consummate, ending in store, whereby the war should produce results for the good of mankind commensurate with its cost in tears, treasure, and blood.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlviii., Part I., p. 1281.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 1276, 1448; Part II., pp. 457-463.



CHAPTER XII

SIEGE OF RICHMOND AND PETERSBURG—CAPTURE AND RECAPTURE OF FORT STEDMAN, AND CAPTURE OF PART OF ENEMY'S FIRST LINE IN FRONT OF PETERSBURG BY KEIFER'S BRIGADE, MARCH 25, 1865—BATTLE OF FIVE FORKS, APRIL 1ST—ASSAULT AND TAKING OF CONFEDERATE WORKS ON THE UNION LEFT, APRIL 2D—SURRENDER OF RICHMOND AND PETERSBURG, APRIL 3D—PRESIDENT LINCOLN'S VISIT TO PETERSBURG AND RICHMOND, AND HIS DEATH

THE Sixth Corps, as we have seen, returned from its memorable campaign in Maryland and the Shenandoah Valley to the front of Petersburg about December 5, 1864. It relieved a portion of the Fifth Corps. The right of my brigade rested on the Weldon Railroad, extending to the left to include Forts Wadsworth and Keene. On the night of the 9th, with other troops, the brigade went on an expedition to Hatcher's Run, returning the next day. Again the Sixth Corps constructed winter quarters. The brigade was moved, February 9, 1865, to the extreme left of the army, near the Squirrel Level road, where it took up a position including Forts Welch, Gregg, and Fisher, of which the first two were unfinished and the last named was barely commenced. The brigade completed the construction of these forts. Colonel McClennan, with the 138th Pennsylvania, also occupied Fort Dushane on the rear line.

The brigade, a third time for the winter, constructed quarters.

Discipline in the army continued in all its severity. During my entire service but one instance occurred where I was required to execute a Union soldier of my command. Private James L. Hicks, of the 67th Pennsylvania, a boy about nineteen years old, was found guilty of desertion. He had deserted to go to Philadelphia, his home, in company with a soldier of another command, much his senior, who had forged a furlough for himself and Hicks. Both were arrested, returned to the army, and convicted and sentenced to be shot. General Meade ordered me to execute the sentence as to Hicks, February 10, 1865. The man who was largely responsible for Hicks' desertion succeeded, through friends, in inducing President Lincoln to commute his sentence to imprisonment at the Dry Tortugas. I was aware of efforts being made to have Hicks' sentence likewise commuted, and I tried to reach the President with communications asking the same leniency for Hicks. So certain was I that Lincoln had or would relieve Hicks that I failed to have him shot on the day named. Some officious person reported my dereliction to Meade, who thereupon (with some censure) ordered me to shoot Hicks on the next day, and to report in person the fact of the shooting. This order I was obliged to obey. The brigade was drawn up on three sides of a square, with ranks opened facing each other, and in the centre of the fourth and open side a grave was dug and a coffin was placed beside it. The condemned soldier was marched between the ranks of the command, preceded by a drum and fife band, playing the "dead-march," and then was taken to the coffin, where he was blindfolded and required to stand in front of six men armed with rifles, five only of which were loaded with ball. At the command "*Fire!*" from a designated officer, the guns were discharged and poor Hicks fell dead. He was placed in the coffin and forthwith buried. On the same day word came that Lincoln had pardoned Hicks.

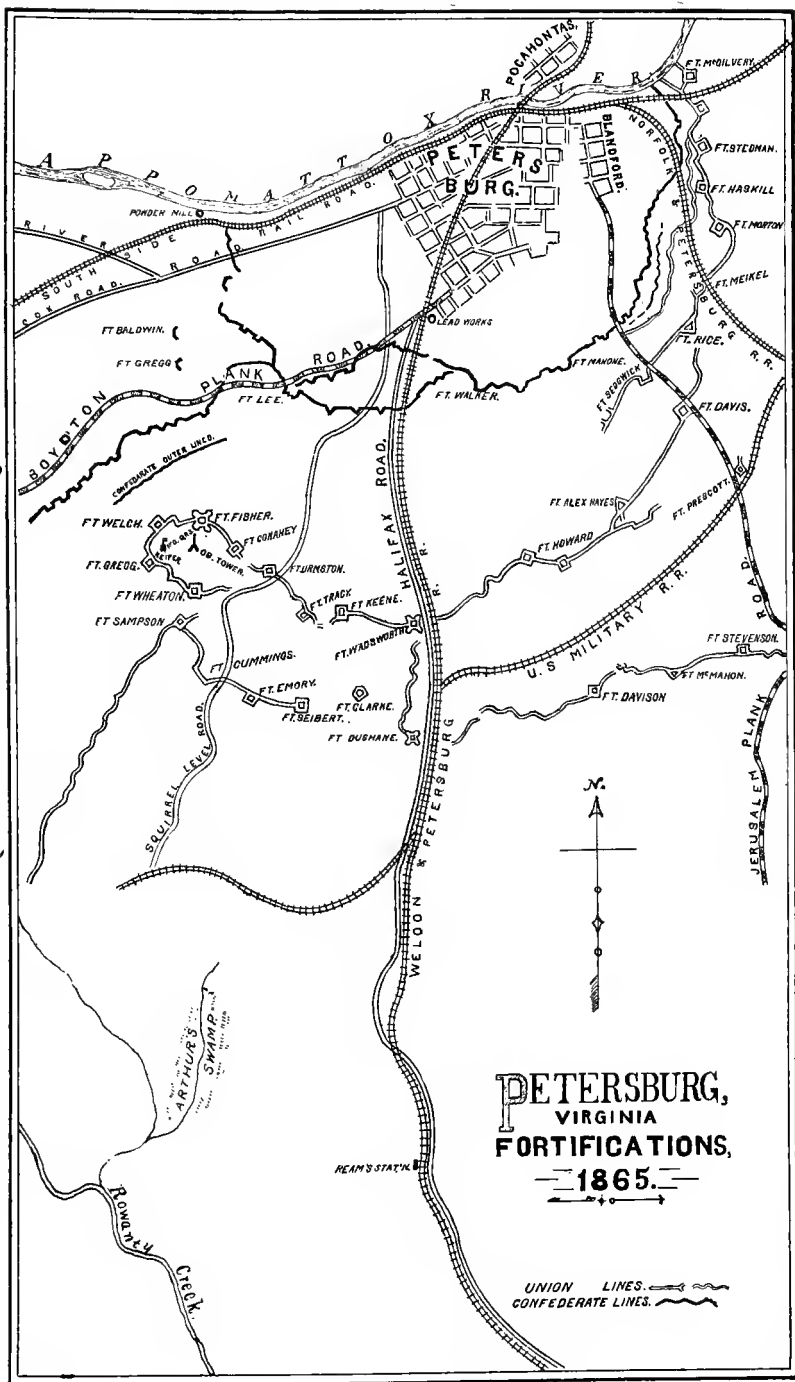
Wright's corps became the left of the besieging army, and all the troops were constantly on the alert, never less than one tenth of them on guard or in the trenches.

The several corps of the Army of the Potomac were then

commanded as follows: Second, by General A. A. Humphreys; Fifth, by General G. K. Warren; Sixth, by General H. G. Wright; the Ninth, by General J. G. Parke. The last named was on the right and in part south of the Appomattox. The Army of the James was north of Richmond and the James, commanded by General B. F. Butler, until relieved, on the request of General Grant, January 8, 1865, when General E. O. C. Ord succeeded him.

The army under Grant had been engaged since June, 1864, besieging Richmond and Petersburg with no signal success. It had, however, held the main army of the Confederacy closely within intrenchments where it could do little harm, and was difficult to provide with supplies. Prior to this siege the Army of the Potomac had met the enemy, save at Gettysburg, on his chosen battle-fields, and in its forward movements had been forced to attack breastworks, assail the enemy in mountain passes or gaps, force the crossings of deep rivers, always guarding long lines of communications over which supplies must be brought, and it was at all times the body-guard of the Capital—Washington.

The Confederate Army under Lee, when the last campaign opened, was strongly fortified from the James River above Richmond, extending around on the north to the James below Richmond; thence to and across the Appomattox; thence south of Petersburg extending in an unbroken line westward to the vicinity of Hatcher's Run, with interior lines of works and forts for use in case the outer line was forced. Longstreet commanded north of the James. Generals R. S. Ewell, R. H. Anderson, A. P. Hill, and John B. Gordon commanded corps of the Army of Northern Virginia south of Petersburg and the James, the whole under Lee. At the last, Ewell commanded in Richmond and its immediate defences. The Confederates had water-batteries and naval forces on the James immediately below Richmond. Their forts and connecting breastworks had been laid out and constructed by skilled engineers, on a gigantic scale, with months and, in some places, years of labor. On most of the main line there were enclosed field-forts, a



distance of a quarter to a half mile apart, connected by strong earthworks and some masonry, the whole having deep ditches in front, the approaches to which were covered by *abattis* composed of pickets sunk deep in the ground close together, the exposed ends sharpened, and placed at an angle of about forty-five degrees, the points of the pickets about the height of a man's face. There were, in place *chevaux-de-frise* and other obstructions. These fortifications could not be battered down by artillery; they had to be scaled. They contained many guns ranging from 6 to 200-pounders, all well manned. The Union lines conformed, generally, to the Confederate lines and were near to them, but, being the outer, were necessarily the longer. Richmond and Petersburg were twenty miles apart. The Union works were substantially of the same structure and strength as the Confederate.

Forts Welch, Gregg, and Fisher, and connecting works, held by six of my regiments, formed a loop on the extreme left, to prevent a flank attack. These forts were about nine miles from City Point, Grant's headquarters. In the centre of the loop was a high observation tower.¹ In our front the Confederates had an outer line of works to cover their pickets, and we had a similar one to protect ours. The main lines were, generally, in easy cannon range, in most places within musket range, and the pickets of the two armies were, for the most part, in speaking distance, and the men often indulged in talking, for pastime. Except in rare instances the sentinels did not fire on each other by day, but sometimes at night firing was kept up by the Confederates at intervals to prevent desertion. During the last months of the siege, circulars were issued by Grant offering to pay deserters for arms, accoutrements, and any other military supplies they would bring with them, and to give them safe conduct north. The circulars were gotten into the enemy's lines by various devices, chief among which was, by flying kites at night when the wind blew in the right direction, to the tail of which the circulars were attached. When the kites were over the Confederate lines the

¹ See map, and *Battles and Leaders of the War*, vol. iv., p. 538.

strings were cut, thus causing them to fall where the soldiers might find them.¹ So friendly were the soldiers of the two armies that by common consent the timber between the lines was divided and cut and carried away for fuel. Petersburg was in plain view, to the northeast, from my headquarters. In front of my line an event took place which brought about the speedy overthrow of the Confederacy.

With Sherman moving triumphantly northward through the Carolinas the time was at hand for the final campaign of the Army of the Potomac. President Lincoln and General Grant were each anxious that army should, without the direct aid of the Western army, overcome and destroy the Army of Northern Virginia, which it had fought during so many years with varying success.²

Grant issued orders, March 24, 1865, for a general movement to commence the 29th; the objective of the movement to be the Confederate Army as soon as it could be forced out of its fortifications.

At the time Grant was writing these orders, Lee was planning an assault to break the Union lines, hoping he might gain some material success and thereby prevent an aggressive campaign against him. General Gordon, accordingly, at early dawn, March 25th, assaulted Fort Stedman, and, by a surprise, captured it and a portion of our line adjacent to it; but Union troops, from the right and left, assailed and recaptured the works and about four thousand of Gordon's command, the Union loss in killed, wounded, and captured being about twenty-five hundred. This daring attack, instead of delaying, precipitated the preparatory work of opening the campaign. About 1 P.M. I received an order to send two regiments to my advanced line with orders to charge and carry the outer line of the enemy. This latter was strongly intrenched and held by a large number of men, besides being close under the guns of the Confederate main works. The 110th and 122d Ohio

¹ One enterprising Confederate managed to escape to our lines with a wagon and six mules from a party gathering wood. His outfit was valued at \$1200.

² Grant's *Memoirs*, vol. ii., p. 460.

were moved outside the forts, and Colonel Otho H. Binkley was ordered to take command of both regiments and the picket guard. He charged the enemy, but being unsupported on the flanks and exposed to a fierce fire from guns in the enemy's main works, was forced to retire after suffering considerable loss. I protested, vehemently, against the renewal of the attack with so small a force. General Wright thereupon ordered me to assemble the number of men necessary to insure success, take charge of them in person, and make the desired capture. I added to the Ohio regiments mentioned the 67th Pennsylvania, portions of the 6th Maryland and 126th Ohio, and a battalion of the 9th New York Heavy Artillery, and under a severe fire, at 3 P.M., without halting or firing, charged over the enemy's first intrenched line, capturing over two hundred prisoners. Notwithstanding a heavy artillery fire concentrated upon us the captured works were held. Our loss was severe and hardly compensated for by the number of the enemy killed and captured. For my part in this affair I was complimented by Meade in general orders.

It turned out that the section of works taken was more important to us than at first estimated.

Sheridan, with his cavalry, having recently arrived from the Shenandoah Valley *via* the White House, moved to the left on the 29th of March in the direction of Dinwiddie Court-House, where he encountered a considerable force. A battle ensued on the 30th and 31st, in which Sheridan with his cavalry, in part dismounted, fought some of the best cavalry and infantry of Lee's army, the former commanded by Fitzhugh Lee and the latter by Pickett of Gettysburg fame. By using temporary barricades, Sheridan, though outnumbered, repulsed the attacks of Fitz Lee and Pickett, and at nightfall of the 31st was in possession of the Court-House.

In consequence of incessant rain for two days Grant, from his headquarters, then on Gravelly Run, issued orders the evening of the 30th to suspend all further movements until the roads should dry up; but he was visited by Sheridan and persuaded to continue the campaign. Sheridan asked that

the Sixth Corps should be ordered to follow and support him.¹ He claimed this corps had served under him in the Valley and its officers were well known to him. His request was not acceded to, as other work was already assigned to Wright. Grant ordered Meade to send the Fifth Corps under General G. K. Warren to reinforce Sheridan. Meade was directed to "*urge Warren not to stop for anything.*" Sheridan, April 1st, determined to press the enemy, regardless of bad roads and his isolated position. Pickett and Fitz Lee, heavily reinforced from Lee's main army, concentrated in front of Five Forks, where they intrenched.

Warren was ordered to push rapidly on the left of the enemy. Sheridan promptly opened battle, but he was hard pressed throughout the day. Warren, for some not satisfactorily explained cause, did not arrive on the field and bring his three infantry divisions into action until late in the day, but yet in time to strike the enemy on his left and rear, as had been planned. Just at night a combined assault of all arms completely overthrew Pickett and Fitz Lee, taking six of their guns, thirteen battle-flags, and nearly six thousand prisoners. The Confederates who escaped were cut off from the remainder of Lee's army and thrown back on the upper Appomattox.

Warren, in the full flush of the victory, was, by Sheridan, with Grant's previous authority, relieved on the battle-field from the command of his corps for the alleged dilatory march to the relief of the imperilled cavalry. Warren had long commanded the Fifth Corps, and was beloved by it. But the fates of war were inexorable. The removal of Warren was perhaps unjust, in the light of the previous conduct of the war. He had not been insubordinate. He had imbibed the notion too often theretofore acted on, that in the execution of an important order, even when other movements depended on it, the subordinate officer could properly exercise his own discretion as to the time and manner of its execution. Warren was a skilled engineer officer and held too closely in an emergency to purely scientific principles. He had none of Sheridan's

¹ *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., pp. 145-7.

precipitancy, and did not believe in violating, under any circumstances, principles of war taught by the books. Before a subsequent court of inquiry Warren produced what appeared to be overwhelming testimony from experienced and distinguished officers of the army to the effect that he had moved his corps to Five Forks with the energy and celerity usually exhibited by an officer of ordinary skill and ability.

Sheridan was called as a witness before the same court, and when interrogated, corroborated the other officers' testimony, adding, that it was not an officer of *ordinary* skill and ability that was required to meet an emergency when a battle was on, but one of *extraordinary* skill and ability; that officers of the former class were plenty, but they were not fit to command an army corps in time of battle. Sheridan wanted an officer like Desaix, who, by putting his ear to the ground, heard the thunder of the guns at Marengo, though far off, and marched to their sound without awaiting orders, and to the relief of Napoleon, arriving in time to turn defeat into victory, though losing his own life. Warren had many friends and sympathizers, but he died many years after the war of a broken heart.

In anticipation of Sheridan's success, orders were issued for the Sixth Corps to assault Lee's main fortifications on Sunday morning, April 2d. The place selected for the assault was in front and a little to the left of Forts Fisher and Welch and directly opposite the intrenched line taken by me on March 25th.¹ Other corps to the right of the Sixth were ordered to be ready to assault also. It was originally intended the troops should be formed in the quiet of the night, and that the

¹ General Wright, speaking of this position in his report of the storming of the fortifications at Petersburg, says:

"It should here be remarked that, but for the success of the 25th ultimo, in which was carried the intrenched line of the enemy, though at a cost in men which at the time seemed hardly to have warranted the movement, the attack of the 2d inst. on the enemy's main lines could not have been successful. The position then gained was an indispensable one to the operations on the main lines, by affording a place for the assembling of assaulting columns within striking distance of the enemy's main intrenchments." *War Records*, vol. xlvi., Part I., p. 903.

assault should be made, as a surprise, at four o'clock in the morning. Grant, fearing that Lee, in the desperation of defeat at Five Forks, would strip his fortified lines of troops to overwhelm and destroy Sheridan, now fairly on Lee's right flank, at 10 P.M. on the night of the 1st ordered all his guns turned loose from the James to the Union left, to give the appearance of a readiness to do just what had been ordered to be done. This fire brought a return fire all along the lines. The night was dark and dismal, and the scene witnessed amid the deafening roar of cannon was indescribably wild and grand. Duty called some of us between the lines of cross-fire when the screaming shot and bursting shell from perhaps four hundred heavy guns passed over our heads. The world's war-history describes no sublimer display. Being near the end of the Rebellion, the Confederacy, and the institution of slavery, it was a fitting closing scene. It was supposed that in consequence of this artillery duel, which lasted about two hours, the assault ordered would be abandoned, as a surprise was not possible. But at 12, midnight, the order came to take position for the attack. The Sixth Corps, in the gloom of the damp, chilly night, silently left its winter quarters and filed out to an allotted position within about two hundred yards of the mouths of the enemy's cannon, there to await the discharge of a gun from Fort Fisher, the signal for storming the works. There were no light hearts in the corps that night, but there were few faint ones. The soldiers of the corps knew the strength and character of the works to be assailed. They had watched their completion; they knew of the existence of the *abattis* and the deep ditches to be passed, as well as the high ramparts to be scaled. The night added to the solemnity of the preparation for the bloody work.

The Second Division was formed on the right, the Third Division on the left, each in two lines of battle, about two hundred feet apart. The First Division (Wheaton's) was in echelon by brigades, in support on Getty's right.¹ The corps was formed on ground lower than that on which the enemy's

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part I., p. 954.



BREVET COLONEL CLIFTON K. PRENTISS,
SIXTH MARYLAND VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1865.)



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL WM. N. FOSTER,
110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph taken 1863.)

fortifications were constructed. There was an angle in the enemy's line in front of the corps as formed at which there was a large fort. Getty's division was to assault to the right and Seymour's to the left of this fort. My brigade was to assault between it and the fort about a third of a mile to its left. The connecting breastworks were strong, as has been explained, with a deep ditch and formidable *abattis* in their front, and well manned and supplied with artillery. The enemy was alert and opened fire on us with artillery and musketry before we were completely formed, inflicting some loss. Long before the hour for the signal the corps was ready. Much preparation is necessary for a well delivered assault. Every officer should be personally instructed as to his particular duties, as commands can rarely be given after the troops are in motion. The pioneer corps with axe-men were required to accompany the head of the column, to cut down and remove obstructions and to aid the soldiers in crossing trenches and scaling the works. The *abattis* was to be cut down or torn up, and, wherever possible, used in the ditches to provide means of crossing them.

A narrow opening, just wide enough for a wagon to pass through, was known to exist in the enemy's line in front of my brigade, though it was skilfully covered by a shoulder around it. The existence of this opening was discovered from the observation tower, and deserters told of it. I determined to take advantage of it, and therefore instructed Colonel Clifton K. Prentiss of the 6th Maryland when the time for the attack came to move his regiment by the flank rapidly through this opening without halting or firing, and when within, open on the Confederates behind the works, taking them in flank, and, if possible, drive them out and thus leave for our other troops little resistance in gaining an entrance over the ramparts.

At 4.40 A.M., while still dark, a gray light in the east being barely discernible, Fort Fisher boomed forth a single shot. All suspense here ended. Simultaneously the command, "*Forward*," was given by all our officers, and the storming column moved promptly; the advance line, with bayonets

fixed, guns not loaded, the other line with guns loaded to be ready to fire, if necessary, to protect those in advance while passing the trenches. A few only of the officers were on horseback. The enemy opened with musketry and cannon, but the column went on, sweeping down the *abattis*, making use of it to aid in effecting a passage of the deep ditches and to gain a footing on the berme of the earthworks. Muskets and bayonets were also utilized by thrusting them into the banks of the ditches to enable the soldiers to climb from them. Men made ladders of themselves by standing one upon another, thus enabling their comrades to gain the parapets. The time occupied in the assault was short. Colonel Prentiss with his Marylanders penetrated the fortifications at the opening mentioned. They surprised the enemy by their presence and a flank fire, and, as anticipated, caused him to fall back. The storming bodies swarmed over the works, and the enemy immediately in their front were soon killed, wounded, captured, or dispersed. Ten pieces of artillery, three battle-flags, and General Heath's headquarter's flag were trophies of my command. The Third Division gained an entrance first, owing to the shortness of the distance it had to pass over. Getty's division (Second), however, promptly obtained a foothold within the fortifications to the right of the angle, followed on its right closely by Wheaton's division. The fort at the salient angle was quickly evacuated, and the corps charged forward, taking possession of the enemy's camps. Some hand-to-hand fighting occurred on the ramparts of the fortifications and in the camps, in which valuable lives were lost. A Confederate soldier emerged from a tent, shot and killed Captain Henry H. Stevens (110th Ohio), and immediately offered to surrender. One week before a like incident occurred in my presence, where a Confederate officer shot, with his pistol, a Union soldier, then threw down his arms and proposed to surrender. Officers seldom restrained soldiers from avenging, on the spot, such cowardly and unsoldierly acts. Such incidents were, happily, very rare.

Though thus far the assault had been crowned with success,

the greatest danger was still before us. Experience had taught that the fate which one week before befell Gordon at Fort Stedman was a common fate of troops who, in a necessarily broken state, gained an entrance inside of an energetic enemy's lines. Our position was not dissimilar to Gordon's after he had taken Fort Stedman. To our left was a strong, closed star-fort, well manned and supplied with cannon. It was impossible at once to restore order. Many of our men passed, without orders, far to the north, some as far as the Southside Railroad leading into Petersburg, which they began to tear up.

One important incident must be mentioned.

Corporal John W. Mouk (138th Pennsylvania), with one comrade, having penetrated in the early morning some distance in advance of our other troops, was met by a Confederate general officer, accompanied by his staff. The general demanded his surrender, whereupon the corporal fired and killed him. He proved to be Lieutenant-General A. P. Hill, then in command of Lee's right wing, and one of the ablest officers the Confederacy produced. The corporal and his comrade escaped, and Hill's staff bore his body away. It has been claimed the corporal deceived Hill by pretending to surrender until the General was in his power, then shot him. I investigated this incident at the time and became convinced the corporal practised no deception, and that his deliberate conduct—natural to him—led Hill and his staff to assume he intended to surrender.

But to return to the captured works. I entered them on horseback, with some of my staff, close after Colonel Prentiss. Up to this time no general orders had been given, save those promulgated prior to the assault. The ranks were much broken, regiments were intermingled, and excitement prevailed. I was charged with the duty of carrying the next fort to our left. The steady fire on us from this fort helped to recall the troops to a sense of danger. Day was just dawning. I ordered Major S. B. Lamoreaux (9th New York Heavy Artillery) to man such of the captured artillery as was available. He soon had four guns firing on the fort, under cover of which I ordered a general rush of the still disordered Union troops

on the fort. This charge resulted in its capture with six more guns and a number of prisoners. The real danger was still not passed. It was soon discovered that a Confederate division was advancing on us from a camp to our left. As the men now in the captured fort were in a disorganized state I made, with the aid of other officers, every effort to withdraw the surplus men for the purpose of formation and to relieve it of a too crowded condition for defence. We also tried to man the guns of the fort. Before we were prepared the enemy was upon us in a counter charge, and the fort, with its guns, was lost, and some of our men were taken; the greater number, however, escaped to a position still within the captured lines. In this affair not many were killed or wounded. The final ordeal was now on us. From the fort again came shot, shell, and rifle-balls on our unprotected men. Under cover of the fire of the before-mentioned captured artillery (having, by that time, discovered an ample supply of ammunition) we succeeded in making a somewhat confused formation, and again charged the fort. The resistance was obstinate, but it was now light enough to distinguish friend from foe. Though of short duration, the most determined and bloody fight of the day took place on the ramparts of and in this fort, resulting in our again taking it, and with it its guns and most of the Confederate division. The brave Colonel Prentiss as he led a storming column over the parapet of the fort, was struck by a ball which carried away a part of his breast-bone immediately over his heart, exposing its action to view. He fell within the fort at the same moment the commander of the Confederate battery fell near him with what proved to be a mortal wound. These officers, lying side by side, their blood commingling on the ground, there recognized each other. They were brothers, and had not met for four years. They were cared for in the same hospitals, by the same surgeons and nurses, with the same tenderness, and in part by a Union chaplain, their brother. The Confederate, after suffering the amputation of a leg, died in Washington in June, 1865, and Colonel Prentiss died in Brooklyn, N. Y., the following August.

Our hard fighting and bloody work for the day ended with the struggle just described. We, a little later, with others of the corps, swept to the left to the vicinity of Hatcher's Run, carrying everything before us. We then, with the other divisions of the corps, turned back towards Petersburg, reaching an inner line of works by 10 A.M.

General Parke with the Ninth Corps made a vigorous attack in front of Fort Sedgwick near the Jerusalem plank-road at the same time the Sixth made its assault, and with some success, but failed to gain a permanent footing inside of the enemy's main fortifications. The Sixth Corps alone made a secure lodgment within Lee's lines. It made a rift in the Confederacy.

The army then believed the end of the war was near, but blood enough had not yet been spilled to destroy human slavery.

General Ord, who had been transferred from the front of Richmond, met and drove back some troops on Hatcher's Run, and Sheridan advanced from Five Forks to the Appomattox, thence, uniting with Ord, proceeded down it towards Petersburg. The left of Grant's army was thrown across the Southside Railroad to the Appomattox above Petersburg, and some isolated inner forts were taken, and the enemy was crowded into his last line in the suburbs of Petersburg. Grant ordered a general assault to be made at 6 A.M. of the 3d. Thus far, since the general movement commenced, Lee had lost about 12,000 prisoners and about 50 guns. The killed and wounded were not proportionately great. Lee had been forced to withdraw Longstreet from north of Richmond, leaving his lines there very slimly defended.¹ General Weitzel had been left with a division north of the James to threaten Richmond. Lee, early on the 2d, realized the critical situation, and at 10.30 of that memorable Sabbath morning wired Mr. Breckinridge, Secretary of War, at Richmond:

"I see no prospect of doing more than holding our position here

¹ *Manassas to Appomattox*, pp. 603-5.

until night. I am not certain I can do that. If I can I shall withdraw to-night north of the Appomattox, and, if possible, it will be better to withdraw the whole line to-night from James River. I advise that all preparations be made for leaving Richmond to-night. I will advise you later according to circumstances."

This was handed to Mr. Davis while at church. He arose quietly and retired, but the portent of the message was soon known and caused great consternation among the inhabitants of the Confederate Capital. For almost four years Richmond had been the defiant centre of the rebellion. Now it was to be abandoned on less than twelve hours' notice.

Jefferson Davis wired Lee:

"The Secretary of War has shown me your dispatch. To move to-night will cause the loss of many valuables, both for the want of time to pack and of transportation. Arrangements are progressing, and unless you otherwise advise the start will be made."

Lee responded:

"I think it absolutely necessary that we should abandon our position to-night. I have given all the necessary orders on the subject to the troops, and the operation, though difficult, I hope will be performed successfully. I have directed General Stevens to send an officer to your Excellency to explain the routes to you by which the troops will be moved to Amelia Court-House, and furnish you with a guide and any assistance you may require for yourself."¹

Richmond and Petersburg were evacuated the night of April 2d. The troops in and around the two cities commenced to retire at 8 P.M., and were directed to concentrate at Amelia Court-House, about sixty miles distant, where Lee had ordered supplies for his army to be collected. Ewell withdrew the troops north of Richmond and the marines from the James. There was insufficient transportation for the archives and other valuables of the several departments of the

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part III., p. 1378.

Confederacy, to say nothing of other public and private property. Army supplies had to be destroyed or abandoned. A panic seized the city, and in burning some public stores it took fire in two places, and but for the arrival, about 8 A.M. of the 3d, of Union troops from Weitzel's command, it would have burned down. Petersburg suffered little in the evacuation. Its mayor and council surrendered it about 4 A.M. of the 3d. The besieging army, so long striving for its possession, was not permitted to enter it.

President Lincoln was at City Point when the movement of Grant's army commenced, and remained until Richmond and Petersburg fell. Grant, on the 2d, in anticipation of further success, suggested that the President visit him at the front next day. Mr. Lincoln accordingly met Grant in Petersburg the morning of its surrender and held an interview with him of an hour and a half. Secretary Stanton, learning that the President contemplated going to the front, wired from Washington on the morning of the 3d, protesting against his exposing "the nation to the consequence of any disaster to himself in the pursuit of a dangerous enemy like the rebel army."

The President answered from City Point at 5 P.M. :

"Yours received. Thanks for your caution, but I have already been to Petersburg. Staid with Grant an hour and a half and returned here. It is certain now that Richmond is in our hands, and I will go there to-morrow. I will take care of myself."¹

Mr. Lincoln made his entry into Richmond on the 4th (on foot from a boat), almost without personal protection, and excited the highest interest of the people, especially of the slaves, who looked upon and adored him as their savior. There were no bounds to their rejoicing. He, while there, in consultation with Judge J. A. Campbell and other former Confederate leaders, talked of plans of reconstruction, and went so far as to sanction the calling of the Confederate Legislature of Virginia together with a view to its withdrawing the Virginia troops from the army.²

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part III., p. 509. ² *Ibid.*, pp. 612, 655-7, 724-5.

He was in a generous mood, willing to concede much to secure a speedy restoration of the Union.

Mr. Campbell reports the President's position thus:

"His indispensable conditions are the restoration of the authority of the United States and the disbanding of the troops, and no receding on his part from his position on the slavery question as defined in his message in December and other official documents. All other questions to be settled on terms of sincere liberality. He says that to any State that will promptly accept these terms he will relinquish confiscation, except where third persons have acquired adverse interests."¹

Abraham Lincoln returned from Richmond to Washington filled to overflowing with hope, joy, and thoughts of generous treatment of his rebellious countrymen. He, too, was soon to become a sacrifice in atonement for his nation's sins. He fell, at the apex of human glory, by the hands of a disloyal assassin, April 14, 1865.² The great and the humble friends of freedom, not only of his own country but of the world, wept. He had been permitted, however, to look through the opening portals of peace upon a restored Union with universal freedom, under one flag.

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part III., p. 723.

² Abraham Lincoln, on the evening of March 14, 1865, attended Ford's Theatre in Washington in company with Mrs. Lincoln, Miss Harris, and Major Henry R. Rathbone (daughter and stepson of Senator Ira Harris of New York), and while in a private box (at 10 P.M.) was shot by John Wilkes Booth. The bullet entered his head on the left side, passed through the brain, and lodged behind the left eye. He was carried to a house across the street, where he died (never being conscious after the shot) at twenty-two minutes after seven the morning of April 15, 1865. Secretary Stanton, standing by as his life went out, more than prophetically said: "*Now he belongs to the ages.*"

An attempt was made the same night to assassinate Secretary Wm. H. Seward, which came near being successful. He was, also his son Frederick, terribly wounded and beaten.



JOHN W. WARRINGTON,

PRIVATE, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.

(From a photograph taken 1899.)



JOHN B. ELAM,

PRIVATE, 110TH OHIO VOLUNTEERS.

(From a photograph taken 1899.)



CHAPTER XIII

BATTLE OF SAILOR'S CREEK, APRIL 6TH—CAPITULATION OF
GENERAL ROBERT E. LEE'S ARMY AT APPOMATTOX
COURT-HOUSE, APRIL 9, 1865—SURRENDER OF OTHER
CONFEDERATE ARMIES, AND END OF THE WAR OF THE
REBELLION

RICHMOND and Petersburg being evacuated, the Army of the Potomac, at early dawn, April 3, 1865, under orders, marched westward. Its sole objective now was the Confederate Army. Grant directed some corps of his army to pursue on the line of Lee's retreat, and others to march westward on roads farther to the south to strike other roads necessary for Lee to pursue in gaining North Carolina where he might form a junction with General Joe Johnston who was then trying to stem the advance of Sherman.

It was soon known Jefferson Davis and his Cabinet had reached Danville, Virginia, and had proclaimed it the seat of the Confederate Government.

To reach Danville Lee bent all his energy.

The sagacious and energetic movements of the several corps of the Union army from the morning of April 3d to the surrender of Lee will stand as a lasting testimonial to Grant's military genius, ranking him with the great strategists of the world. Lee's officers were familiar with the roads; the inhabitants were their friends; his retreat was upon the shorter line, and he had a night's start. Generals Meade, Sheridan, Ord, and the corps commanders also, won just fame for the successful handling of their several commands.

Meade kept his forces in hand and pushed them precipitously on the desired points. Sheridan was indomitable and remorseless in his pursuit with the cavalry. Grant accompanied the army, sometimes with one part of it and then with another, always knowing what was going on and the position of all the troops. His orders were implicitly obeyed. Rest or sleep was impossible for any length of time. Recent and continuing rains rendered the roads almost impassable for artillery trains. Teams were doubled and one half the artillery and wagons were left behind. Lee undertook to order supplies sent to Burkeville, where he expected to meet them. Sheridan's cavalry captured, April 4th, a messenger with dispatches in his boots which he was conveying to Burkeville to be wired to Danville and Lynchburg, directing 300,000 rations to be forwarded to Burkeville. Sheridan, by scouts disguised as rebels, had the dispatches taken to Burkeville and sent, with the expectation he would capture the rations on their arrival. They did not reach Burkeville, but several train loads were sent forward from Lynchburg. Sheridan's cavalry met them at Appomattox Station on the 8th, and received them in bulk, locomotives, trains, and all.¹

Late on the 5th, Lee leisurely moved his army from Amelia Court-House towards Burkeville. Sheridan's cavalry, with some infantry, had possession of Jetersville on a road Lee attempted to pursue. Sheridan assailed Lee's advance furiously and drove it back, forcing him to form his army for battle. This occupied so much time that when it was ready to attack, night was approaching, and the Fifth and Sixth Corps had arrived or were arriving. Lee's escape to Danville by the way of Burkeville was no longer possible. The day was too far spent to fight a battle. Grant was still pushing his corps upon different roads to intercept Lee's retreat. Lee's prime mistake was in not concentrating his army, on the 4th, at Burkeville, the junction of the two railroads, instead of at Amelia Court-House. It was supposed that a decisive battle would be fought at Jetersville, but Lee withdrew during the night.

¹ *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., pp. 175, 189.

General Lee claimed he lost one day at Amelia Court-House gathering subsistence, because his orders to collect them there in advance of his retreat had been disregarded.¹

Jefferson Davis reached Danville, Virginia, with members of his Cabinet, on the 3d of April, and, on the 5th, he issued a proclamation which he subsequently characterized thus: "Viewed in the light of subsequent events, it may be fairly said it was over-sanguine." In it he used such expressions as:

"Let us but will it and we are free. I announce to you, fellow countrymen, that it is my purpose to maintain your cause with my whole heart and soul; that I will never consent to abandon to the enemy one foot of the soil of any of the States of the Confederacy; that Virginia—noble State, whose ancient renown has been eclipsed by her still more glorious recent history; whose bosom has been bared to receive the main shock of this war; whose sons and daughters have exhibited heroism so sublime as to render her illustrious through all time to come—that Virginia with the help of the people, and by the blessings of Providence, shall be held and defended, and no peace ever be made with the infamous invaders of her territory.

"If by the stress of numbers, we should be compelled to a temporary withdrawal from her limits or those of any other border State, we will return until the baffled and exhausted enemy shall abandon in despair his endless and impossible task of making slaves of a free people."²

In consequence of Hill's death, Lee divided his army into two wings, Ewell commanding one and Longstreet the other, his cavalry being under Fitzhugh Lee and his artillery under Pendleton.

The Confederate Army, on the night of April 5th, abandoned

¹ This statement is taken from Lee's official report, though Jefferson Davis, in his work, takes pains to viciously deny its truth. *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part I., p. 1265; *Battles and Leaders*, etc., vol. iv., p. 724; *Rise and Fall of the Confederacy*, vol. ii., pp. 668-76.

² *Rise and Fall of the Confederacy*, Davis, vol. ii., p. 677. I picked up at Danville a copy of this document at the press where it had recently been printed.

Amelia Court-House, and by circuitous country roads endeavored to pass around the Union left through Deatonville and Painesville to Prince Edwards Court-House, hoping still to be able to escape to Danville.

At daylight of the 6th the Union forces at Jetersville advanced in battle array on Amelia Court-House, and some precious hours were lost in ascertaining the direction of Lee's retreat. Our army was, however, soon counter-marched to Jetersville, and thence, by different roads and regardless of them, by forced marches, it sought to intercept Lee. It must be remembered Lee's troops had one day or more rest since leaving Petersburg and Richmond, and Grant's army had none, and the latter had been moved by night as well as by day, and irregularly fed. The most appealing orders were issued by General Meade to his army to make the required sacrifices and efforts to overtake and overthrow Lee's army. I quote from Meade's order of the night of April 4th:

"The Major-General commanding feels he has but to recall to the Army of the Potomac the success of the oft repeated gallant contests with the Army of Northern Virginia, and when he assures the army that, in the opinion of so distinguished an officer as General Sheridan, it only requires these sacrifices to bring this long and desperate conflict to a triumphant issue, the men of this army will show that they are as willing to die of fatigue and starvation as they have ever shown themselves ready to fall by the bullets of the enemy."¹

This order, when read to the regiments, was loudly cheered. There was perfect harmony of action among Grant's generals; all putting forth their best efforts. On the 4th, Sheridan dispatched Grant, "If we press on we will no doubt get the whole army." And again on the 6th, "*If the thing is pressed I think Lee will surrender.*"² On these dispatches being forwarded to President Lincoln, still at City Point, he is reported to have wired Grant, "Let the thing be pressed."³

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlvi., Part III., p. 549.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 556, 610.

³ *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., p. 187.

Grant, personally, gave more attention to the movements of his forces to important places than to fighting battles. He was especially anxious for Ord's command to be hastened forward on a line south of Lee. Grant was always in touch with Meade and Sheridan, but on the 5th and 6th he was with Ord. At night of the 5th he dispatched from Nottoway Court-House to Meade:

"Your movements are right. Lee's army is the objective point, and to capture that is all we want. Ord has marched fifteen miles to-day to reach here, and is going on. He will probably reach Burkeville to-night. My headquarters will be with the advance.¹

Sheridan, in command of the cavalry, was often, temporarily, also given command of a corps of infantry.

In the pursuit on the 6th from Jetersville, Wright's corps followed Merritt's cavalry, and about 3 P.M., after a forced march of eighteen miles, partly without roads and over a hilly country and under a hot sun, came up with a portion of it heavily engaged trying to seize a road at a point about two miles from Sailor's Creek on the left and about the same distance from Deatonville on the right, on which Ewell's wing of Lee's army was retreating. Ewell was heading towards Rice's Station to form a junction with Longstreet, both intending to move *via* Prince Edward's Court-House south. Ord, with the Army of the James, late on this day confronted Longstreet at Rice's Station. The Third Division of the Sixth was in advance, and my brigade went into line of battle and rapidly into action, with scarcely a halt for formation, and, together with the cavalry, charged and drove the enemy across the road, capturing many prisoners, wagons, and some pieces of artillery, including General Heth's headquarters wagons.

An incident occurred soon after we gained this road. Another road from the west intersected at this point the one we had just seized, and on which the enemy had a battery which opened on us furiously. I hastened to the intersecting road

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlvii., Part III., p. 576.

to direct some of my regiments to charge and capture the battery or drive it away. Generals Sheridan and Wright, with their staffs, soon galloped up. Sheridan was accompanied by a large mounted brass band that commenced playing *Hail to the Chief*, or some other then unwelcome music. This drew the fire from the battery with increased fury on the whole party. Both Sheridan and Wright were too proud spirited to retire in the presence of the troops or each other, though not needed at that place. The dry limbs of pine trees rattling down around us and the bursting of shells rendered the situation embarrassing in the extreme, and the lives of others were being sacrificed or imperilled by the presence of the distinguished party. Being in immediate charge of the forces there, I invited the Generals to get out of the way, but as they did not retire I ordered a charge upon the "*noisy band*," and thus caused the whole party to retire to a place of greater safety. Some of them were quite willing to go.

I gave Colonel Binkley such an imperative order to silence the battery, that he pursued it with a detachment to such a distance that he did not rejoin the brigade in time to participate in the principal battle of the day yet to be fought.

Ewell's wing of the Confederate Army had mainly passed on towards its destination. Pursuit was promptly ordered by Sheridan and conducted by Wright. Ewell's rear-guard fought stubbornly and fell back slowly through the timber until it reached Sailor's Creek. Wheaton's division arrived and joined the Third on the left in the attack and pursuit. Merritt's cavalry passed rapidly around Ewell's right to intercept the retreat. Merritt crossed Sailor's Creek with Custer and Devin's divisions south of the road on which the enemy retreated.

General R. S. Ewell crossed Sailor's Creek, and about 5 P.M. took up a strong position on heights on its west bank. These heights, save on their face, were covered with forest. There was a level, cultivated bottom about one half mile in width, wholly on the east bank of the stream. Sailor's Creek, then greatly swollen, washed the foot of the heights on which Ewell

had posted his army. He hoped to be able to hold his position until night, when, under cover of darkness, he might escape towards Danville.

Our troops were temporarily halted on the hills on the eastern edge of the valley, in easy range of the enemy's guns, and the lines were hastily adjusted.¹ Artillery went into position and at once opened a heavy fire. An effort was made to bring up Getty's division of the Sixth and the detachment of my brigade under Binkley, but the day was too far spent to await their arrival. It was plainly evident that Ewell outnumbered our forces in line, and our men had been on foot for twelve hours. Wright hesitated under the circumstances, but Sheridan, coming to the front, advised an assault.² Wright then promptly ordered the infantry on the field to make one, under cover of the artillery. Colonel Stagg's cavalry brigade was ordered to attack the enemy's right flank, and Merritt and Crook's cavalry were to attack still farther around his right and on his rear.

Ewell covered his front with a strong line of infantry, and massed a large body in column, in rear of his centre, to be used as the exigencies of the battle might require. Ewell's cavalry covered his right and rear. Generals R. H. Anderson and J. B. Gordon, with their corps, had preceded Ewell in crossing Sailor's Creek, and Sheridan, who had now personally passed from the front around to Merritt, encountered them some distance to the rear of Ewell's position. The Confederate trains

¹ While riding along the face of the hills with Colonel Andrew J. Smith of the division staff, to get a good view of the enemy's position, I dispatched the Colonel to bring up and put a battery in a designated position. He met and sent Major O. V. Tracy of the same staff on his errand, and soon rejoined me. Some movements displayed large numbers of the enemy, whereupon Smith characteristically exclaimed: "Get as many boys as ever you can; get as many shingles as ever you can; get around the corner as fast as ever you can,—a whole hogshhead of molasses all over the walk!" Before this outburst ceased a bullet whistled past my bridle reins and struck Smith in the right leg. While yet repeating his lingo, he threw his arms around his horse's neck and swung to the ground.

² Grant wrote Sheridan informing him the Sixth Corps was following him, saying: "The Sixth Corps will go in with a vim any place you may dictate."—*Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., p. 182.

were on the road to Rice's Station, where Longstreet was confronting Ord, neither, however, willing to attack the other.

The plan was for Anderson and Gordon to attack and clear the rear, while Ewell stopped the infantry at the Creek.¹ The latter had three infantry divisions, with parts of others, under the command of Generals Kershaw, G. W. Custis Lee, Pickett, Barton, DuBose, Corse, Hunton, and others of the more distinguished officers of the Confederate Army. Commodore John Randolph Tucker, formerly of the United States Navy, commanding the Marine Brigade, was posted on the face of the heights on Ewell's front. Colonel Crutchfield, who had been recently in charge of the artillery at Richmond, commanded a large brigade of artillerymen serving as infantry.

About 5 P.M. the two divisions of the Sixth descended from the hills, in single line, and moved steadily across the valley in the face of a destructive fire, and, with muskets and ammunition boxes over the shoulder, the men waded the swollen stream. Though the water was from two to four feet deep, the creek was crossed without a halt. Many fell on the plain and in the water, and those who reached the west bank were in some disorder. The command was, however, given by the officers accompanying the troops to storm the heights, and it was obeyed. Not until within a few yards of the enemy, while ascending the heights, did our men commence firing. The enemy's advance line gave way, and an easy victory seemed about to be achieved, but before the crest was reached, Ewell with his massed troops made an impetuous charge upon and through our line. Our centre was completely broken and a disastrous defeat for us seemed imminent. The large column of Confederate infantry now, however, became exposed to the renewed fire from Wright's massed artillery on the hills east of the valley.

The right and left of the charging line met with better success, driving back all in their front and, wholly disregarding the defeat of the centre, persisted in advancing, each wheeling as upon a pivot in the centre, until the enemy's troops were

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlvi., Part I., pp. 1284, 1298.



BREVET MAJOR-GENERAL J. WARREN KEIFER AND STAFF, 1865.

THIRD DIVISION, SIXTH ARMY CORPS.

completely enveloped and subjected to a deadly fire on both flanks, as well as from the artillery in front. The flooded stream forbade an advance on our unguarded batteries. The cavalry, in a simultaneous attack, about this time overthrew all before them on the Confederate right and rear. Ewell's officers gallantly exerted themselves to avert disaster, and bravely tried to form lines to the right and left to repel the now furious flank attacks. This, however, proved impossible. Our men were pushed up firing to within a few feet of the massed Confederates, rendering any reformation or change of front by them out of the question, and speedily bringing hopeless disorder. A few were bayoneted on each side. The enemy fell rapidly, while doing little execution. Flight became impossible, and nothing remained to put an end to the bloody slaughter but for the Confederates to throw down their arms and become captives. As the gloom of approaching night settled over the field, now covered with dead and dying, the fire of artillery and musketry ceased, and General Ewell, together with eleven general officers and about all the survivors of his gallant army, were prisoners. Ewell, Kershaw, G. W. Custis Lee (son of General R. E. Lee), and others surrendered to the Sixth Corps. Barton, Corse, Hunton, DuBose, and others were taken by the cavalry. Crutchfield of the Artillery Brigade was killed near me, and his command captured or dispersed. Generals Anderson and Gordon got away with part of B. R. Johnson's division, and Pickett escaped with about six hundred men.¹ Tucker's Marine Brigade, numbering about two thousand, surrendered to me in a body a little later.² It had been passed by in the onset of the charge. About thirty-five of the officers of this brigade had served in the United States Navy before the war. The brigade was made up of naval troops who had recently served on gunboats and river batteries on the James below Richmond. As infantrymen they cut a sorry figure, but they were brave, and stood to their assigned position after all others of their army

¹ Longstreet, *Manassas to Appomattox*, p. 614.

² *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part I., p. 980.
VOL. II.—14.

had been overthrown. They knew nothing about flight, and were taken as a body. By reason of their first position they suffered heavily. When disarmed there was found to be a wagon load or more of pistols of all patterns which had been collected from all the countries of the civilized world. Certain incidents relating to the surrender of this brigade may be of interest.¹

Tucker's command was not at once engulfed in the general disaster. Tucker had, after making a gallant charge, withdrawn it from its exposed position into the dense timber in a depression in the bluffs. Near the close of the battle, just at dusk, it was reported to me that a force of Confederates was in this timber. I made two vain attempts to get into communication with it and to notify its commanding officer that he was in our power. At last, having some doubts of its presence where reported, and my staff and orderlies being engaged reforming troops and caring for prisoners, I rode alone to investigate. After proceeding in the woods a short distance, to my surprise I came upon Tucker's brigade in line of battle, partly concealed by underbrush. To avoid capture I resorted to a ruse. In a loud voice I gave the command, "*Forward*," and it was repeated by the Confederate officers all along the line. I turned to ride towards my own troops. The dense thicket prevented speed and the marines therefore kept at my horse's heels. As an open space was approached the nearest Confederates discovered that I was a Union officer, and cried "Shoot him." As I turned to surrender, some confusion arose and a few shots were fired, but Tucker and Captain John D. Semmes, being near me, knocked up the ends of the nearest rifles with their swords and saved my life. From this situation, lying close on my horse's neck, I escaped to my own command. With a detachment I at once returned to the

¹ Captains John F. Hazelton and T. J. Hoskinson, serving respectively as my Quartermaster and Commissary of Subsistence, reported to me at a critical juncture in the battle of Sailor's Creek and volunteered for field duty, and for their exceptional gallantry each was, on my recommendation, brevetted a Major by the President.

timber, where I met Tucker and explained to him a situation of which he was ignorant, and forthwith received his surrender with his brigade. Later, when Tucker and Semmes were prisoners at Johnson's Island, near Sandusky, they appealed to me to intercede for their release, which I most gladly and successfully did. They had each been, at the beginning of the war, in the United States Navy, which caused them to be exceptionally detained as prisoners under President Johnson's orders.¹

The infantry, under Wright, engaged in the battle at Sailor's Creek at no time exceeded ten thousand men. The number participating in the charge across the plain and in storming the heights did not exceed seven thousand, being fewer in number than the enemy captured on the field. It has been claimed that Humphreys' Second Corps participated in the battle, and some Confederate officers assert that the attack was made with thirty thousand men under Wright. Humphreys did have a lively skirmish the evening of the 6th, and captured a considerable train, far off to the right of the battle-field, and in this the detachment under Colonel Binkley from my brigade participated.²

Getty's division of the Sixth did not reach the field in time to become engaged.³ The results, being so great, naturally led interested parties to exaggerate the number of the attacking forces.⁴

Sheridan, in his report, May 16, 1865, speaking of the infantry attack, says: "It was splendid, but no more than I had reason to expect from the gallant Sixth Corps." And he speaks of the fighting of the cavalry and the captures thus:

"The cavalry in the rear of the enemy attacked simultaneously, and the enemy, after a gallant resistance, were completely surrounded, and nearly all threw down their arms and surrendered.

¹ Tucker after the war expatriated himself from the country for a time, and became an Admiral in the Peruvian navy, but as our naval officers refused to salute his flag on the sea, Peru was forced to dismiss him.

² *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part I., pp. 683, 980.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 906.

⁴ As to numbers engaged, see correspondence, Appendix C.

Campaigns of the Civil War

General Ewell, commanding the enemy's forces, a number of other general officers, and about 10,000 other prisoners were taken by us. Most of them fell into the hands of the cavalry, but they are no more entitled to claim them than the Sixth Corps, to which equal credit is due for the result of this engagement."

Our loss in killed and wounded was comparatively small; that of the enemy was great, but not in proportion to his loss in prisoners. One week after the battle I visited the field, and could then have walked on Confederate dead for many successive rods along the face of the heights held by the enemy when the battle opened.

The capture of Ewell and his generals, with the larger part of the forces under them, and the dispersion of the remainder of Ewell's wing of Lee's army were irreparable disasters to the Confederacy. Lee could no longer hope to cope with the pursuing army. The Sixth Corps had the distinguished honor of striking the decisive blows at Petersburg on the 2d, and at Sailor's Creek on the 6th of April, 1865.

Sailor's Creek may fairly be called the last field battle of the war. A distinguished Confederate General, Wade Hampton, in a *Century Magazine* article, pronounced the battle of Bentonville, North Carolina, the "last important one of the war, . . . the last general battle of the Civil War." There may be room for controversy as to where and when the last "general battle" of the war was fought. Certain it is that it was not at Bentonville that the conflict ended on a large scale and blood ceased to flow in the great Rebellion. Bentonville was mainly fought March 19, 1865, and while it may properly be called a field engagement and of no insignificant proportions, it was not the last one. This is not the place to enter into any controversy about last battles, their character and significance, yet it may not be out of place to call attention to the most prominent battles, etc., fought after March 19, 1865.

Fort Stedman, in front of Petersburg, Virginia, was assaulted and temporarily taken by the Confederate General Gordon,

March 25, 1865, and while the fighting which ensued in retaking the fort and in driving out the attacking forces may not be denominated a general battle, yet it was a bloody one. Other severe fighting took place in front of Petersburg the same day.

Five Forks, Virginia, fought by General Sheridan's cavalry and the Fifth Corps, Army of the Potomac, April 1, 1865, was fought outside of fortifications by cavalry, infantry, and artillery combined, and there were charges and counter-charges, lasting several hours, the losses being heavy in killed and wounded. Many prisoners were there taken by Sheridan's command. Five Forks was a general field engagement.

The assaults and conflicts on, over, and around the ramparts of the forts and fortifications (incomparably bloody) in front of Petersburg, Virginia, April 2, 1865, which tore open the strong lines of defence held by General Lee's army, forced it to flight, and lost Petersburg and Richmond to the Confederacy, may not be entitled to be classed as general field battles.

Sailor's Creek came next in order, fought April 6, 1865.

The assault and capture of Fort Blakely, near Mobile, Alabama, took place April 9, 1865. If Blakely can be called a general battle it was the last one of the war. It was, however, mainly an assault by the Union forces under General E. R. S. Canby on fortifications, though rich in results. The killed and wounded at Blakely in both armies aggregated about 2000 men. Canby's forces captured 3423 men, 40 pieces of artillery, 16 battle flags, etc. The prize fought for and won was Mobile, its surrounding forts and the Confederate Navy in the harbor of Mobile.

At Palmetto Rancho, Texas, on May 13, 1865, near the battle-field of General Zachary Taylor at Palo Alto (May 8, 1846), the first of the Mexican War, and about two thousand miles from Big Bethel, the scene, on June 10, 1861, of the first considerable battle of the Rebellion, a lively engagement took place, hardly, however, rising above the dignity of a skirmish or an *affair*, though it was by no means bloodless. (The magnitude of the battles of the Rebellion dwarfed to

affairs or skirmishes what were formerly in this and other countries called battles.)

Colonel Theodore H. Barrett commanded the Union forces at Palmetto Ranche, and General J. E. Slaughter the Confederates.

The 62d United States Colored Infantry, in this fight, probably fired the last angry volley of the war, and Sergeant Crocket of that regiment (three days after Jefferson Davis' capture) received the last wound from a rebel hostile bullet, and hence shed the last fresh blood in the war resulting in the freedom of his race in the United States. The observation irresistibly comes, that on the scene of the first battle of the Mexican War—a war inaugurated for the acquisition of slave territory—and of the *first* battle participated in by Lieutenant-General (then Second Lieutenant) U. S. Grant, almost exactly nineteen years later, the last conflict took place in the war for the preservation of the Union, and in which slavery was totally overthrown in our Republic.

But to return from the digression and to conclude the story of Sailor's Creek, or the "Forgotten Battle." It may truthfully be said that it was not only the last general field battle of the war, but the one wherein more officers and men were captured in the struggle of actual conflict than in any battle of modern times.

There was some fighting between the cavalry of the two armies and many minor affairs between the advance- and rear-guards, but the four years' heavy fighting between the Army of Northern Virginia and the Army of the Potomac ended at Sailor's Creek.

During the battle Lee was with Longstreet at Rice's Station, two miles distant, impatiently awaiting news from Lieutenant-Generals Ewell and Anderson. General Mahone states what transpired when Colonel Venable of Lee's staff reported to his chief something of the disaster at Sailor's Creek:

"General Lee exclaimed, 'Where is Anderson? Where is Ewell? It is strange I can't hear from them.' Then turning to me, he said,

'General Mahone, I have no other troops, will you take your division to Sailor's Creek?' and I promptly gave the order by the left flank, and off we were for Sailor's Creek, where the disaster had occurred. General Lee rode with me, Colonel Venable a little in the rear. On reaching the south crest of the high ground at the crossing of the river road overlooking Sailor's Creek, the disaster which had overtaken our army was in full view, and the scene beggars description,—hurrying teamsters with their teams and dangling traces (no wagons), retreating infantry without guns, many without hats, a harmless mob, with the massive columns of the enemy moving orderly on. At this spectacle General Lee straightened himself in his saddle, and, looking more the soldier than ever, exclaimed, as if talking to himself, 'My God! has the army dissolved?' As quickly as I could control my own voice I replied: 'No, General, here are troops ready to do their duty'; when, in a mellowed voice, he replied: 'Yes, General, there are some true men left. Will you please keep those people back?' As I was placing my division in position to 'keep those people back,' the retiring herd just referred to had crowded around General Lee while he sat on his horse with a Confederate battle-flag in his hand. I rode up and requested him to give me the flag, which he did.

"It was near dusk, and he wanted to know of me how to get away. I replied: 'Let General Longstreet move by the river road to Farmville, and cross the river there, and I will go through the woods to the High Bridge (railroad bridge) and cross there.' To this he assented."

Longstreet retired at nightfall to Farmville and there crossed the Appomattox the morning of the 7th, and Mahone and broken detachments, with such trains and artillery as Lee still possessed, crossed at the High Bridge. All bridges were wholly or partially destroyed by the enemy on being passed.

The result of the operations of April 6th forced Lee off of all roads leading to Danville, and Lynchburg became his objective.

Grant's plans did not justify a halt on the field of Sailor's Creek long enough to bury the dead, or even long enough to care for our wounded, and, though night had come, the battle-stained soldiers, hungry and exhausted, were marched on.

The Sixth Corps camped at 10 P.M. near Rice's Station, about three miles from the battle-field. Other corps on different lines were kept to their work, and their operations also contributed towards baffling Lee's plans for escape.

A single serious disaster occurred on the 6th to a detachment of our army. Ord, whose orders were to obstruct all lines of retreat, detached Colonel Francis Washburn with the 123d Ohio and portions of the 54th Pennsylvania and 4th Massachusetts Cavalry, about eight hundred in all, to destroy High Bridge over the Appomattox below Farmville. Later in the day, Colonel Thomas Read of Ord's staff with eighty cavalymen was sent to recall Washburn. The detachments met, and having penetrated to within about two miles of the bridge, encountered Lee's advance cavalry and infantry. Washburn and Read put up one of the most gallant fights of the war, but were soon surrounded. They led repeated charges until both fell, mortally wounded. Not until most of the command had fallen did it surrender. The Confederate loss was severe, especially in officers. This affair caused Lee to lose precious time, he being led to believe from the obstinacy of the fight that a large Union force was in his front.

The Sixth Corps, after Sailor's Creek, was ordered to pursue Lee's army directly. Its flanking work was done; its mission was to assail Lee's rear, delay him, and if possible bring him to battle.

Sheridan, with Merritt's cavalry divisions, followed by Ord and the Fifth Corps, continued westward, with orders not to stop for bad roads, nor wait for subsistence or for daylight. They were not to halt until planted across Lee's front.

Humphreys, who also had orders to press Lee's rear, succeeded with his corps and a cavalry division under Crook in crossing the Appomattox close on Mahone's rear. Wright, the morning of the 7th, followed Longstreet to Farmville, where the latter had passed to the north of the river.

Grant and his staff, with a small escort, rode by us about noon. The roads were muddy from recent rains and much

cut up by the Confederate Army. Grant was dressed, to all appearance, in a tarpaulin suit, and he was, even to his whiskers, so bespattered with mud, fresh and dried, as to almost prevent recognition. He then, as always, was quiet, modest, and undemonstrative. A close look showed an expression of deep anxiety on his countenance.

Farmville is in a narrow, short valley on the south bank of the Appomattox, surrounded on the south by high bluffs. As the Sixth arrived on the heights above the town I was riding with General Wright. All were anxious to ascertain the exact whereabouts of the enemy, when, to our amazement, apparently the whole Confederate Army came into view on the high plain north of the river. It was drawn up in battle array and seemingly about to envelop and destroy Crook's cavalry, that was furiously assailing it to delay it. From the heights it seemed to us Crook's command would speedily be annihilated. Wright was an unimpassioned man, little given to excitement, but this scene threw him into a vehement state. His corps was too far off to render assistance; the Appomattox, deep, though narrow, lay between, and pontoons were not up. He ordered his corps hastened forward, and plunged down the bluffs into Farmville, looking for a crossing. He soon came in front of a Virginia tavern with the usual "stoops" or low porches in front, above, and below. Grant was seated on the upper "stoop," resting his chin on his folded arms, which were on the rail of a baluster. He was smoking a cigar, and doubtless casting his eyes on the situation across the river. He then looked happy, contented, and unconcerned. He did not change when Wright exhibited, by word and act, great solicitude for the fate of the cavalry. When Wright had finished, Grant withdrew his cigar from his lips, raised his head only a little, and pleasantly said: "The cavalry are doing well, and I hope General Lee will continue to fight them, as the delay will lessen his chances of escape." Grant also, pointing in the direction of the river, added: "General Wright, you will find the débris of a railroad bridge down there, on which you can construct a passage for your infantry

and get them over the river during the night." Grant resumed smoking and we went about our business.

A crossing was soon made on the irons and timbers of a broken-down bridge, over which foot soldiers could pass in single file. As the structure was liable to get out of order, each officer, from division to company commander, was required to stand at its end and see that the soldiers of his command marched on it at proper intervals and with steady step. It was 3 A.M. of the 8th before the last of the corps had crossed and bivouacked. Mounted officers and escorts swam the stream at a swollen ford near-by.

Crook lost heavily in his unequal combat, one of his brigades especially, its commanding officer, General J. Irwin Gregg, being captured, but the purpose of the attack was accomplished. Crook withdrew his recently imperilled cavalry to the south of the river about 9 P.M. of the 7th, and reached Prospect Station the same night, under orders to rejoin Sheridan.

Lee, late on the evening of the 7th, seems to have been personally seized with a panic on hearing some threatening reports of being cut off or flanked, and he caused his trains to retreat in a wild rush and the infantry under Longstreet to march at double-quick to Cumberland Church, where he formed for battle.¹

General Ewell, at supper with Wright the night after his capture on the 6th, made some remarks about the hopeless condition of the Confederate Army, and suggested that Lee might be willing to surrender. This and other like talk of Ewell, being communicated by a Dr. Smith to Grant, suggested the idea to him of demanding the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia.² A note to this effect was accordingly sent to Lee, under a flag of truce, at 5 P.M. of the 7th. Lee immediately answered, saying he did not entertain the opinion that further resistance was hopeless on the part of his army, yet asked Grant to name the terms he would offer on

¹ Longstreet, *Manassas to Appomattox*, p. 616.

² *Memoirs of Grant*, vol. ii., pp. 477-8.

condition of surrender. Grant, on the 8th, replied that there was but one condition he would insist on, viz.:

"That the men and officers surrendered shall be disqualified for taking up arms against the government of the United States until properly exchanged."

Lee, the same day, responded, saying that in his note of the day before, he "did not intend to propose the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia," but only to ask the terms of Grant's proposition, adding that he could not meet Grant with the view of surrendering that army, but as far as Grant's proposal might affect the Confederate States forces under his command and tend to the restoration of peace, he would be pleased to meet Grant the next day at 10 A.M. Very early on the 9th Grant sent Lee a note saying: "I have no authority to treat on the subject of peace; the meeting proposed for 10 A.M. to-day could lead to no good."

At the earliest dawn of the 8th, the Sixth Corps pushed after Lee, compelling him to abandon some of his heaviest artillery and a further part of his trains. Longstreet covered Lee's rear, and his troops had not been seriously engaged on the retreat. Ord and the Fifth Corps struggled westward, cutting off all chance of Lee turning southward and of thus extricating himself. The 8th was not a day of battles but of the utmost activity in both armies.

I note an incident. While halted, about noon on the 8th, in some low pines to drink a cup of coffee and eat a cracker, Colonel Horace Kellogg, of the 123d Ohio, who had been captured with Washburn's command on the 6th, near High Bridge, came to us through the bushes from a hiding-place to which he escaped soon after his capture. He looked cadaverous, was wild-eyed, and in a crazed condition, caused by starvation and want of water for two days. We had to restrain him, and give him water, coffee, and food in small quantities at first, to prevent his killing himself from over-indulgence.

Sheridan, who had concentrated his cavalry at Prospect

Station under Crook, Merritt, and Custer, at daybreak of the 8th hastened westward, south of Lee, to Appomattox Station. Sergeant White, of the scouts, in advance, in disguise, west of the Station, met four trains from Lynchburg with supplies sent in obedience to the Burkeville dispatch already mentioned. The trains were feeling their way eastward, in ignorance of Lee's whereabouts. The Sergeant had the original dispatch with him, and exhibited it and, by dwelling on the starving condition of Lee's army, easily persuaded the officers in charge to run the trains east of Appomattox Station, he having, meantime, sent word to Sheridan where they could be found. Custer hastened forward, sending two regiments by a détour, in a gallop, to seize and break the railroad behind the trains. The trains were captured. One was burned, and the other three sent eastward towards Farmville. This capture took place just as the head of Lee's column came in sight.¹ Custer attacked Lee's advance, and was soon joined by Devin's division and a brigade from Crook. Together they drove it back, capturing twenty-five pieces of artillery, a hospital train, and a large park of wagons which were being sent ahead of Lee's main army. Sheridan's headquarters, at night, were at a farm-house, just south of Appomattox Station, and about three miles southwest of the Court-House of that name. Neither he nor his command slept that night. Sheridan was now across Lee's front, and if he could hold on, Lee must surrender. Ord, with the Fifth Corps following, was hastening to Sheridan. The supreme hour was at hand. Ord was no laggard, and it was known that he would put forth all human effort, yet Sheridan dispatched through the night staff officer after staff officer to apprise Ord of the imminent danger the cavalry was in, if unsupported, and to assure him that his presence with his column would end the Rebellion. Before day-dawn the cavalry was in the saddle, in battle array, bearing down on the Confederate advance, then at the Court-House. Ord arrived in person before sun-up of the 9th, and hastily consulted Sheridan where to put in his troops on their

¹ *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., pp. 191, 199.

arrival. Ord then returned to hurry on his weary, hungry, foot-sore men, who had marched all the night, having little sleep for many days. Sheridan turned from the consultation with Ord to take charge of the battle already raging near the Court-House.

Let us look within the lines of the Confederate Army and see what was transpiring there. That army had, since Sailor's Creek and Farmville, been directed, of necessity, along the north of the river on Appomattox Court-House and Lynchburg. It had been assailed, night and day, flank and rear, from the time it left Petersburg. Provisions were scarce, and many of its best officers had, in the last week, fallen or been captured. It, however, had held out bravely and with more spirit than would be expected. It was an old and once splendidly organized and equipped army, and its discipline had been good. Pendleton and others of Lee's generals (not including Longstreet) secretly, on the 7th, held a council, and with a view of lightening Lee's responsibilities, decided to inform him that they thought the time had come to surrender his army. The next day Longstreet was requested to bear the report of this council to Lee. He declined, and Pendleton made the report to Lee himself. The latter, if correctly reported, said: "I trust it has not come to that," adding, among other things: "If I were to say a word to the Federal commander, he would regard it as such confession of weakness as to make it the condition of demanding an *unconditional* surrender."¹

Gordon, with Fitz Lee at the head of the cavalry, commanded the advance, and Longstreet the rear. The night of the 8th found Lee's advance at Appomattox Court-House forced well back, and Longstreet's rear pressed close on his main body. General Lee called in council, at a late hour that night, Lieutenant-General James Longstreet, Major-Generals John B. Gordon, Fitzhugh Lee, and Wm. N. Pendleton.² This was the last council of war of the Army of Northern

¹ *Manassas to Appomattox*, pp. 618, 620; *Memoirs of Lee* (Long), p. 416.

² Letter of General Gordon to the writer, of October 1, 1894.

Virginia, if it could be called one. The meeting was in a secluded spot, in a gloomy pine woods, without shelter. The night was damp and chilly, and there was a small, smoky green-pine fire, affording little light. The whole surrounding was calculated to dispirit the five officers, to say nothing of the occasion. Little was said or done. Lee made some inquiry as to the position of the troops. At the end of an hour the council broke up, Lee directing Gordon to mass his command, including all the cavalry under Fitz Lee and General Long's batteries of thirty guns, and move through Appomattox Court-House, where the advance rested, and to commence the movement at 1 A.M. The trains were to follow closely, covered by Longstreet's corps, which was still Lee's rear-guard. Sheridan's cavalry was to be overwhelmed, and, with this done, the retreat was to continue to Lynchburg. At 3 in the morning General Lee rode slowly forward apparently to join his van-guard in the effort to break through our lines. Not, however, until 5 A.M. of the 9th did Gordon and Fitz Lee get in motion against Sheridan's cavalry, which they then found spread over a wide front near Appomattox Court-House. The battle commenced, the Union cavalry slowly and sullenly falling back. This inspired new hope in the Confederate Army. General Mumford, with a portion of his Confederate cavalry division, found a break in Sheridan's line, and charging through, escaped. This gave rise to a report that the road had been opened.¹

Gordon pushed on with renewed confidence, infantry, cavalry, and artillery, first striking Crook and McKenzie on the Union left, then Merritt in the centre, the latter two yielding as though defeated. Crook, however, held firmly on the extreme left, while Merritt drew from the centre to the right, there to unite Custer and Devin's cavalry divisions,

¹ Longstreet relates that information came to him from Gordon that a break had been found through which the Confederate Army "could force passage," and that he dispatched a Colonel Haskell "on a blooded mare" after Lee, who had gone to the rear expecting to meet Grant, as requested by Lee by note previously sent, Longstreet telling the Colonel "to kill his mare, but bring Lee back."—*Manassas to Appomattox*, pp. 623, 626.

leaving the centre apparently abandoned. Gordon hastily dispatched word of his success, and, inspired with a hope of complete victory, hurled his hosts into the great gap thus made, capturing two pieces of artillery, and moved forward to the crest of a ridge. But, alas! From this crest Gordon and his officers saw a new scene. They beheld through the mists and the morning gray, on the plain before them, Ord's column, formed and forming, in full array, ready for strong battle. Hope vanished from the minds of the Confederate generals. The Fifth Corps, under General Charles Griffin, was also then arriving on Ord's extreme right in support of the cavalry already there. The cavalry in the centre had been but a curtain. Gordon halted and sent word of the situation to his chief, notifying him that further effort was hopeless, and would cause a useless sacrifice; that he had "fought his corps to a frazzle."¹

Ord was Sheridan's superior in rank, but both decided to end matters at once, so, with battle flags and guidons bent to the front, the combined forces advanced to their work. Some artillery shots passed through their lines, but did not arrest them. The Confederates retired to another ridge immediately fronting the Court-House. Gordon there displayed a white flag, indicating a willingness to negotiate. Custer first saw it. He notified Sheridan, who notified Ord, and the attack was suspended. Sheridan galloped to the front, though fired on by soldiers of a South Carolina brigade,² and soon joined Gordon. A truce looking to a surrender was made. Colonel J. W. Forsyth of Sheridan's and Colonel Fairfax of Longstreet's staff passed through the Confederate Army to Meade, and notified him of the truce, and thus stopped the Second and Sixth Corps then attacking Longstreet. Colonel Newhall, Sheridan's Adjutant-General, rode to meet Grant and advise him that Lee desired a meeting with a view to surrendering his army.

Little has been said of the great soldier, Meade, in this

¹ *Memoirs of Lee* (Long), p. 421.

² *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., pp. 194-8.

campaign. Much credit is due him. He aided in organizing a victory at Five Forks ¹ and in planning the assaults on Petersburg. Though ill at Jetersville, and much of the time thereafter to the end of the campaign, he was always up with one or the other of his corps, doing all it was possible for him to do to accomplish the great result finally attained.

Let us return again to Grant—the silent soldier. On the 5th of April Grant and his staff with a small escort became separated from his headquarters camp equipage and wagons. He was even without his sword. He and his staff thereafter slept on porches of farm-houses or bivouacked in the woods or fields without cover. They picked up scant fare at any camp they could find it, and often went hungry, as did many other officers. As a result of exposure to frequent rains, poor food, fatigue, loss of sleep, and, doubtless, extreme prolonged anxiety, Grant, on the afternoon of the 8th, had a violent attack of sick-headache. At a farm-house at night he was induced to bathe his feet in hot water and mustard and to have mustard plasters applied to his wrists and the back of his neck, but all this brought him no relief. He lay down to sleep in vain. He, however, during the night, received and sent dispatches relating to the next day's operations. At 4 o'clock his staff found him in a yard in front of the house pacing up and down with both hands to his head and suffering great pain. He wrote a note in the early morning answering Lee's note of the previous day. He rode early to Meade's camp (then in the immediate rear of the two pursuing corps), and there drank some coffee, with little relief. His staff tried to induce him to ride that day in an ambulance, but, sick as he was, he mounted his favorite horse—Cincinnati—and in consequence of dispatches from Sheridan giving an account of the situation at the front, started by a circuitous route to join him. Some five miles from the Court-House a dispatch from Meade was handed Grant, advising him of a two-hours' truce and of the place General Lee would meet him; also this note from Lee:

¹ *Memoirs of Sheridan*, vol. ii., p. 154.

Capture of Army of Northern Virginia 225

"April 9, 1865.

"GENERAL,—I received your note of this morning on the picket line, whither I had come to meet you, and ascertain definitely what terms were embraced in your proposal of yesterday with reference to the surrender of this army. I now ask an interview, in accordance with the offer contained in your letter of yesterday, for that purpose.

"R. E. LEE, General.

"Lieutenant-General U. S. GRANT."

Grant wrote Lee (11.50 A.M.), saying he would meet him as requested. General Porter asked Grant, as they rode on, about the pain in his head. Grant answered: "The pain in my head seemed to leave me as soon as I got Lee's letter."¹ He reached the Court-House about 1 P.M., where he was met by Ord and Sheridan. Lee had already arrived, and was awaiting Grant at the McLean house. The two Generals met face to face. Lee wore a new Confederate uniform and a handsome sword. He was tall, straight, and soldierly in appearance. He wore a full gray beard. Grant, much below Lee in stature, wore only a soldier's blouse and soiled suit, and was without a sword, having only some dingy shoulder-straps denoting the rank of Lieutenant-General.

Lee, on his arrival, dismounted, and was seated for a short time at the roadside, beneath an apple tree. This circumstance alone gave rise to the widely circulated report that the surrender took place under an apple tree.²

Some civilities passed between the Generals at the McLean house. There was substantially no negotiation as to the terms of surrender. Lee asked Grant to write them. Grant said: "Very well, I will write them out." He took a manifold order-book, and without consultation with anybody, in the presence of Lee and others, wrote:

"GENERAL,—In accordance with the substance of my letter to you of the 8th inst. I propose to receive the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia on the following terms, to wit: Rolls of all

¹ *Battles and Leaders*, etc., vol. iv., p. 740; *Memoirs of Grant*, vol. ii., p. 483.

² *Memoirs of Grant*, vol. ii., p. 488.
VOL. II.—15.

the officers and men to be made in duplicate. One copy to be given to an officer designated by me, the other to be retained by such officer or officers as you may designate. The officers to give their individual paroles not to take up arms against the government of the United States until properly [exchanged], and each company or regimental commander sign a like parole for the men of their commands. The arms, artillery and public property to be parked and stacked, and turned over to the officer appointed by me to receive them. This will not embrace the side-arms of the officers, nor their private horses or baggage. This done, each officer and man will be allowed to return to their homes, not to be disturbed by United States authority so long as they observe their paroles and the laws in force where they may reside.

•
“Very respectfully,

“U. S. GRANT, Lt.-Gen.”

This was immediately handed to General Lee, who, after reading it, observed the word “*exchanged*” had been inadvertently omitted after the words “until properly.” The word was inserted. Lee inquired of Grant whether the terms proposed permitted cavalymen and artillerists who, in his army, owned their horses, to retain them. Grant answered that the terms, as written, would not, but added, that as many of the men were small farmers and might need their animals to raise a crop the coming season, he would instruct his paroling officers to let every man who claimed to own a horse or mule keep it. Lee remarked that this would have a good effect.

Grant’s draft was handed to be copied to an *Indian*, Colonel Ely S. Parker (Chief of the Six Nations) of Grant’s staff, he being the best scribe of Grant’s officers present. Lee mistook Parker for a negro, and seemed to be struck with astonishment to find one on Grant’s staff.

Lee then wrote this note:

“HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA, April 9, 1865. •

“GENERAL,—I received your letter of this date containing the terms of the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia as proposed by you. As they are substantially the same as those expressed

Capture of Army of Northern Virginia 227

in your letter of the 8th inst. they are accepted. I will proceed to designate the proper officers to carry the stipulations into effect.

“R. E. LEE, General.

“Lieut.-General U. S. GRANT.”

Generals Gibbon, Griffin, and Merritt were designated by Grant, and Generals Longstreet, Gordon, and Pendleton by Lee, to carry into effect the terms of surrender.

Before separating, Lee stated to Grant his army was badly in want of food and forage; that his men had lived for some days on parched corn, and that he would have to ask for subsistence. Grant promised it at once, and asked how many men there were to supply. Lee replied, “About twenty-five thousand.” Grant authorized him to send to Appomattox Station and get a supply out of the recently captured trains. At that time our army had few rations, and only such forage as the poor country afforded.

Some detachments and small bands of Lee’s army escaped, but there were paroled 2781 officers and 25,450 men, aggregate 28,231.¹

Lee’s army was not required to march out, stack arms, and surrender according to the general custom of war, but the men, quietly, under their officers, stacked their guns and remained in camp until paroled. They soon dispersed, never to reassemble. The Army of Northern Virginia then ceased to exist.

The Union Army, on learning of the surrender, commenced firing a salute of a hundred guns. Grant ordered the firing stopped, not desiring to exult over his captured countrymen. General Meade and others protested in vain that it was due to the Army of the Potomac for its sacrifices and gallantry in the years of war that it should have the honor of a formal surrender and a day of military demonstrations.

The wildest scenes of rejoicing, however, took place in the Union Army on learning of the surrender. It did not take on the form of boasting over the captured. It was a genuine

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part I., p. 1279.

exultation over the prospect of the end of the war, the overthrow of the Confederacy, the restoration of the Union, and the destruction of slavery in the Republic. Officers, however high of rank, were not safe from the frenzied rush of the excited soldiers. Some eloquent, joyous speeches were made.

The little wild-cherry tree under which myself and staff were seated, drinking a cup of coffee and chewing "hard tack" when word of the surrender came, was torn down for mementos. Meade and Wright did not escape, being almost dragged from their horses in the mad rejoicing.

The enlisted men of the two armies met on the guard lines, where many of the Union soldiers gave their last cracker to hungry Confederates. The gentlest and kindest feeling was exhibited on both sides. Not an ungenerous word was heard.

Grant at 4.30 P.M. telegraphed the Secretary of War: "*General Lee surrendered the Army of Northern Virginia this afternoon on terms proposed by myself.*"

President Lincoln had the news of Lee's surrender to cheer his great soul for five days before the assassin's bullet laid him low.

Grant retired to an improvised camp, and immediately announced his intention to leave the army in the field and start for Washington the next day. He rode within the Confederate lines at 9 A.M. on the 10th, and held a half hour's talk with Lee about the possibility of other Confederate armies surrendering and the speedy ending of the war, but Lee, though expressing himself satisfied further effort was vain, would take no responsibility, even to advising other armies to surrender, without consulting Jefferson Davis.¹ Grant left for Washington at noon.

General Lee retired to his home at Richmond.

The Union Army counter-marched to Burkeville. While there the death of Abraham Lincoln was announced to it. The army loved him, and his assassination excited the bitterest feeling. A memorial meeting was held at my headquarters at

¹ *Memoirs of Grant*, vol. ii., p. 497.

Burkeville, and like meetings were held in some other commands, at which speeches were made by officers.

The casualties in the Union Army in all the operations from March 29 to April 9, 1865 (Dinwiddie Court-House to Appomattox inclusive) were, in killed and wounded :¹

Army of the Potomac.....	6,609
Army of the James.....	1,289
Cavalry (Sheridan).....	1,168
Grand total.....	9,066

The killed and wounded in the Sixth Corps were 1500, and in my brigade 379 (above one fourth in the corps), and in the campaign, including March 25th at Petersburg, 480.

The brigade in the campaign, besides taking sixteen pieces of artillery and many prisoners in battle, captured six battle-flags, including General Heth's division headquarters flag.²

Sheridan with the cavalry and Wright with the Sixth Corps were ordered from Burkeville to North Carolina, to co-operate with Sherman against J. E. Johnston's army. The Sixth left Burkeville the 23d of April, 1865, and arrived, *via* Halifax Court-House, at Danville, a hundred miles or more distant, on the 27th, where, on learning that Johnston had capitulated, it was halted.

I obtained leave to continue south without my command (with two staff officers and a few orderlies), to visit old friends in Sherman's army with whom I had served in the West in 1861 and 1862. I travelled through bodies of paroled Confederates for fifty miles, to Greensboro, North Carolina, and there came into the lines of the Twenty-Third Corps, commanded by my old and distinguished friend, General J. D. Cox. After

¹ *War Records*, vol. xlv., Part I., p. 597.

² The individual captors of flags were F. M. McMillen, Co. C, and Isaac James, Co. A, 110th Ohio; Milton Blickensderfer, Co. E, 126th Ohio; George Loyd, Co. A, 122d Ohio (Heth's battle flag); John Keough, Co. E, 67th Pennsylvania; and Trustim Connell, Co. I, 138th Pennsylvania. Each was awarded a Medal of Honor.—*War Records*, vol. xlv., Part I., pp. 909, 981.

a few days' sojourn as his guest, and having seen the surrendered army of Joe Johnston, I returned to Danville and my proper command, feeling the war was about over.

The Army of the Potomac marched to Washington, and there (Sixth Corps excepted), uniting with Sherman's army, held the Grand Review of May 23, 1865. The Sixth Corps, with many detachments, numbering about 30,000 in all, arrived later, and was reviewed by President Johnson and his Cabinet and Generals Grant, Sherman, and Meade, June 8, 1865. The Army of the Potomac was disbanded June 28, 1865. All the armies of the Union were soon broken up and the volunteers composing them mustered out and sent to their homes to take up the pursuits of peace.¹ The prisons of the South had given up their starving victims.

On the recommendations of Wright, Meade, and Grant I was appointed a Brevet Major-General of Volunteers, the commission of the President reciting that it was "for gallant and distinguished services during the campaign ending in the surrender of the insurgent army under General R. E. Lee."

I was mustered out at Washington June 27, 1865, having served continuously as an officer precisely four years and two months, and fought in about the first (Rich Mountain) and

¹ An incident will illustrate how Secretary Stanton sometimes did business. The first order to muster out volunteers excepted those whose term of enlistment expired after October 1, 1865. This would have left in the service some men of each company of my Ohio regiments and caused dissatisfaction. Through a written application I obtained authority to muster out all the men of these regiments. Later, complaints came from regiments of other States similarly affected, and an application was made by me for like authority as to them, which was refused. This was invidious. In company with General Meade I called on the Secretary of War to ask a reconsideration. On the bare mention of our mission Mr. Stanton flew into a rage and denounced Meade for making the request, saying no such order had been or would be issued. Meade was deeply hurt and started to withdraw, and the wrath of the Secretary was turned on me. I interrupted him and, displaying the order relating to the Ohio regiments, told him his statement was not true. Stanton thereupon became still more violent and abusive and declared the order I had was issued by mistake or through fraud and would be revoked. I replied that it had been executed; that the men were discharged, paid off, and on their way home. He then became calm, relented, apologized for his intemperate language, and kindly issued the desired order.

the last (Sailor's Creek) battles of the war, and campaigned in six of the eleven seceding States, and in West Virginia, Kentucky, and Maryland.¹

The regiments of my brigade (110th, 122d and 126th Ohio, 67th and 138th Pennsylvania, 6th Maryland, and 9th New York Heavy Artillery) lost, killed on the field, 54 officers and 812 enlisted men, wounded 101 officers and 2410 enlisted men, aggregate 3377, only *six* less than the killed and wounded under Scott and Taylor in their conquest of Mexico, 1846-1848,² and more than the like casualties under the direct command of Washington in the Revolutionary War—Lexington to Yorktown.

The terms of capitulation accorded to Lee's army were granted to other armies.

With Lee's surrender came the capture of Fort Blakely, Alabama, April 9th, followed by the surrender of Mobile, April 12th; Joe Johnston's army in North Carolina, April 26th; Dick Taylor's in Mississippi, May 4th; and Kirby Smith's in Texas, May 26th. Jefferson Davis, with members of his Cabinet, was captured at Irwinville, Georgia, May 10, 1865.

As the curtain fell before the awful drama of war, 174,233 Confederates surrendered, who, with 98,802 others held as prisoners of war (in all 273,035), were paroled and sent to their homes, and 1686 cannon and over 200,000 small arms were the spoils of victory.

The war was over; it was not in vain.

State-rights and secession—twin heresies, as promulgated by Calhoun and his followers and maintained by Jefferson Davis and the civil and military powers of the would-be Confederacy, and human slavery, a growth of the ages, fostered

¹ I was, in 1866, on the joint request of Generals Grant and Meade, appointed Lieutenant-Colonel in the 26th Infantry, U. S. A. I declined the commission.

² There were 26,690 regulars and 56,926 volunteers—83,616, employed in the invasion of Mexico, not mentioning the navy.—*History of Mexican War* (Wilcox), p. 561. For the author's farewell order to the brigade, and table of casualties in it by regiments, see Appendix C.

by avarice, and a blot on our civilization for two hundred and fifty years — were likewise overthrown or destroyed; and the integrity of the Union of the States and the majesty of the Constitution as a charter of organized liberty were vindicated, and the American Republic, full-orbed, was perpetuated, under one flag, and with one destiny.

The Thirteenth Amendment to the Constitution, declaring that: "Neither slavery nor involuntary servitude, except as a punishment for crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted, shall exist within the United States or any place subject to its jurisdiction"; submitted, February 1, 1865, by Congress to the States for ratification, and proclaimed ratified December 18, 1865, is but the inevitable decree of war, in the form of organic law, resulting from the triumph of the Union arms, accomplished through the bloody sacrifice of hundreds of thousands of devoted men, together with the concurrent sufferings of yet other hundreds of thousands of wounded and sick and the sorrows of disconsolate and desolate millions more, superadded by billions in value of property laid waste and other billions of treasure expended. Such, indeed, was the penalty paid to eradicate the crime of the centuries—*SLAVERY*.

Freedom was triumphant, and civilization moved higher.



APPENDICES



APPENDIX A

GENERAL KEIFER IN CIVIL LIFE

I

ANCESTRY AND LIFE BEFORE THE CIVIL WAR

I WAS born, January 30, 1836, on a farm on Mad River, north side, six miles west of Springfield, Bethel Township, Clark County, Ohio, a short distance west of Tecumseh Hill, the site of the original Piqua, Shawnee Indian village, destroyed by General George Rogers Clark August 8, 1780.

My ancestors, though not especially distinguished for great deeds, either in peace or war, were of the sturdy kind, mentally, physically, and morally.

My grandfather, George Keifer, was born (1728) in one of the German States, from whence he emigrated to America and settled in the Province of Maryland about the year 1750. Nothing is certainly known of his life or family in Germany. He was a Protestant, and was probably led to quit German-Europe to escape the religious intolerance, if not persecutions, there at the time so common.

He availed himself of the Act of Parliament made in the thirteenth year of the reign of King George the Second, which provided for the naturalization of "Foreign Protestants," settled or who should settle in his Majesty's colonies in America, and was naturalized and became a subject of King George the Third of England, an allegiance he did not long faithfully

maintain, as he became a Revolutionary patriot in 1776.¹ He participated in the Revolution, though there is no known record of his being a regular soldier in the war. He gave some attention to farming, but was by trade a shoemaker. He resided in Sharpsburg, Washington County, Maryland, on Antietam Creek, and there died, April 11, 1809. His wife, Margaret (Schisler) was likewise German, probably born in Germany (1745), but married in Maryland. Her family history is unknown, but she was a woman of a high order of intelligence, and possessed of much spirit and energy. After her husband's death she removed (1812) with her two sons to Ohio (walking, from choice, the entire distance), and died there, February 9, 1827, in my father's family, at eighty-two years of age. George and Margaret Keifer had two sons, George (born October 27, 1769, and died August 31, 1845), and Joseph (my father), born February 28, 1784, at Sharpsburg, Maryland. They followed, when young, the occupation and trade

¹ The certificate of his naturalization reads :

" Maryland ss.

" These are to certify all persons whom it may concern : That George Keifer of Frederick County, within the Province aforesaid, born out of the Allegiance of his most Sacred Majesty King George the Third, etc., did, on the 3d day of September Anno Domini 1765, Personally appear before the Justices of his Lordship's Provincial Court, and then and there, in Term Time, between the hours of nine and twelve in the forenoon of the same day, produced and delivered a certificate in writing of his having received the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper in a Protestant or Reformed Congregation in the said Province of Maryland, within three months next before the exhibiting of such certificate, signed by the person administering such Sacrament, and attested by two credible witnesses, in pursuance of an Act of Parliament made in the thirteenth year of the reign of his late Majesty King George the Second, entitled, An Act for naturalizing such foreign *Protestants*, and others therein mentioned, as are settled or shall settle in any of his Majesty's Colonies in America ; and then and there made appear, that he had been an inhabitant in some of his Majesty's Plantations seven years, and had not been absent out of some of the said Colonies for a longer space than two months at any one time during the said seven years ; and also then and there took the oaths of Allegiance, Abhorrency, and Abjuration, repeated the Test, and subscribed the same, and oath of Abjuration. In testimony whereof, I have hereto set my hand, and affixed the seal of the said court, this 3d day of September in the year of our Lord God, one thousand seven hundred and Sixty-five.

" Test. REVERDY GHISELM, Clk."

of their father. The facilities and opportunities for acquiring an education for persons in limited circumstances were then small, yet Joseph Keifer early determined to secure an education, and by his own persevering efforts, with little, if any, instruction, he became especially proficient in geography and mathematics, and acquired a thorough practical knowledge of navigation and civil engineering. He could speak and read German. He was a general reader, and throughout his life was a constant student of both sacred and profane history, and devoted much attention to a study of the Bible. In September, 1811, he left Sharpsburg, on horseback, on a prospecting tour over the mountains to the West, destination Ohio. He kept a journal (now before me) of his travels, showing each day's journey, the places visited, the topography of the country, the kinds of timber growing, the lay of the land and kinds of soil, the water supply and its quality, etc., and something of the settlers. This journey occupied seven weeks, during which he rode 1140 miles, much of it over trails and bridle paths, his total cash "travelling expenses being \$36.30." He travelled through Jefferson, Tuscarawas, Stark, Muskingum, Fairfield, Pickaway, Ross, Fayette, Champaign (including what is now Clark), Montgomery, Warren, Butler, Hamilton, Guernsey, and Belmont Counties, Ohio. In April, 1812, he started on another like journey over much the same country, returning May 15th.

On his first journey he visited Springfield, Ohio, and vicinity, and bargained for and made an advance payment of \$500 in silver for about seven hundred acres of land, located near (west of) New Boston, from John Enoch, for himself and his brother George Keifer, agreeing to take possession and make further payment in one year. He removed with his brother George (who then had a wife and family of several children), his mother accompanying, by wagon and on horseback to this land, in the fall of 1812, where both brothers made their homes during life, each following the general occupation of farming. The land was chosen with reference to its superior quality, excellent growth of poplar, oak, walnut, hickory, and

other valuable timber for building purposes, and likewise with reference to its fine, healthful, perennial springs of pure limestone water. The tract fronted on Mad River, extending northward into the higher lands so as to include bottom-lands and uplands in combination.

Joseph Keifer, before leaving Maryland, procured to be made at Frederick, Maryland, a surveyor's compass and chain (still in my possession), and when in Ohio, in addition to clearing lands and farming, he surveyed many extensive tracts of land for the early settlers. Later in life he gave up surveying, save for his neighbors when called on. He had some inclination to music. He served for a short time in the War of 1812, joining an expedition for the relief of General Harrison and Fort Meigs on the Maumee when besieged by the British and Indians in 1813. He, however, lived in his Ohio home a quiet, sober, peaceful, contented, studious, moral life, much esteemed for his straightforward, honest, plain character by all who knew him, but always taking a deep interest in public affairs, state and national, his sympathies being with the poor, oppressed, and unfortunate. His detestation of slavery led him to emigrate from a slave State to one where slavery not only did not and could not exist, but where free labor was well requited and was regarded as highly honorable. Though among the early settlers of the then wild West, he did not care much, if at all, for hunting and fishing, then common among his neighbors and associates. He preferred to devote his leisure hours to reading and intellectual pursuits and to the society of those of kindred tastes, especially interesting himself in the education of his large family of children. He was, in theory and practice, a moral and religious man, a church attendant, though never a member of any church, yet one year before his death (1849), at his own request, he was baptized in Mad River, by Rev. John Gano Reeder, of the Christian Church.

He was one of the founders and first directors of the Clark County Bible Society, organized September 2, 1822.

Throughout his life he took a deep interest in politics, but

he never sought or held any important office. He was an Adams-Clay Whig.

He died on his farm, April 13, 1850, and his remains, likewise his mother's and his brother's, are now buried in Ferncliff Cemetery, Springfield, Ohio.

He was married, November 9, 1815, to Mary Smith, daughter of Rev. Peter Smith, a Baptist minister (then resident on a farm near what is now Donnelsonville, Clark County, Ohio), who had some celebrity also as a physician in the "Miami Country." He was a son of Dr. Hezekiah Smith of the "Jerseys," and was born in Wales, February 6, 1753, from whence this branch of the *Smith* family came. He was some relation to Hezekiah Smith, D.D., of Haverhill, Massachusetts, but in what way connected is not known. Peter Smith was educated at Princeton, and married in New Jersey to Catherine Stout (December 23, 1776), and he seems to have early, under his father, given some attention to medicine, and became familiar with the works of Dr. Rush, Dr. Brown, and other writers of his day on "physic." He also, during his life, acquired much from physicians whom he met in New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Virginia, North and South Carolina, Georgia, Kentucky, and Ohio. He called himself an "Indian Doctor" (because he sometimes used in his practice herbs, roots, etc., and other remedies known to the Indians), though he was in no proper sense such a doctor. He was an early advocate, much against public prejudice, of inoculation for smallpox; this before Dr. Jenner had completed his investigations and had introduced vaccination as a preventive for smallpox.¹

Dr. Peter Smith, in his little volume (printed by Brown & Looker, Cincinnati, 1813), speaks of inoculating 130 persons,

¹ Dr. Jenner's primary investigation of the principles of vaccination began in 1775, but was not satisfactorily completed in England until five years later. Lady Montagu had, however, introduced from Turkey into England, as early as 1717, inoculation for smallpox, but from the beginning it met the fiercest opposition of physicians, the clergy, and the superstitious public, which was never entirely overcome in England or America.

in New Jersey, for smallpox in 1777, using, to prevent dangerous results, with some of them, calomel, and dispensing with it with others, but reaching the conclusion that calomel was not necessary for the patient's safety.

In this book, entitled *The Indian Doctor's Dispensatory*, etc.,¹ on the title-page he says: "*Men seldom have wit enough to prize and take care of their health until they lose it—And doctors often know not how to get their bread deservedly, until they have no teeth to chew it.*" He seems to have been an original character and investigator, availing himself of all the opportunities for acquiring knowledge within his reach, especially acquainting himself with domestic, German, and tried Indian remedies, roots, herbs, etc. In the Introduction to his book he says: "The elements by Brown seem to me plain, reasonable, and practicable. But I have to say of his prescriptions, as David did of Saul's *armour*, when it was put upon him, '*I cannot go with this, for I have not proved it.*' He then chose his sling, his staff, shepherd's bag and stones, because he was used to them, and could recollect what he had heretofore done with them." The modern germ or bacilli theory of disease, now generally accepted by learned physicians, was not unknown or even new in his time. He speaks of it as an "*insect*" theory, based on the belief that diseases were produced by an invisible *insect*, floating in the air, taken in with the breath, where it either poisons or propagates its kind, so as to produce disease.²

¹ John Uri Lloyd, Ph.M., Ph.D. (Cin.), the distinguished author and scientist and collector of medical, etc., books, in an article printed in the *Am. Jour. of Pharmacy*, January, 1898, on "Dr. Peter Smith and His Dispensatory," says his book was the "first Materia Medica 'Dispensatory' published in the West."

² Owing to its remarkable character we quote from his book:

"In South Carolina I was once in company with old Dr. Dilahoo, who was noted for great skill and experience, *having* traveled into many parts of the world. In the course of our conversation I asked him what he conceived the *plague* to be, which has been so much talked of in the world. He readily told me that it was his opinion the plague is occasioned by an invisible *insect*. This insect floating in the air, is taken in with the breath into the lungs, and there it either poisons or propagates its kind, so as to produce that dreadful disease. This, he was confirmed, was likely to be the truth from the experiments frequently made at

Besides much in general, Peter Smith's book contains about ninety prescriptions for the cure of as many diseases or forms of disease, to be compounded generally from now well-known medicines, roots, herbs, etc., some of them heroic, others quaint, etc. He did not recommend dispensing wholly with the then universal practice of bleeding patients, but he generally condemned it.

About the year 1780, from New Jersey, he commenced his wandering, emigrating life, with his wife and *some* small children. He lingered a little in Virginia, in the Carolinas, and settled for a time in Georgia, and all along he sought out people from whom he could gather knowledge, especially of the theory and practice of medicine. And he preached, possibly in an irregular way, the Gospel, as a devout Baptist of the Old School, a denomination to which he was early attached. Not satisfied with his Georgia home, "with its many scorpions and slaves," he took his family on horseback, some little children (twin babies among them) carried in baskets suitable for the purpose, hung to the horns of the saddle ridden by his wife, and thus they crossed mountains, rivers, and creeks, without roads, and not free from danger from Indians,

Gibraltar. For there, said he, they of the garrison, when they fear the plague, have a way to elevate a piece of fresh meat pretty high in the air; they put it up at night, and if it comes down sound and sweet in the morning, they conclude there is no danger of the plague. But if the plague is in the air, the meat will be tainted and spoiled, and sometimes almost rotten. He was farther confirmed in his opinion of the *insect*, because in and about tobacco warehouses the plague has never been known. I will remark: Now it is well known that tobacco will prevent moth from eating our woollen clothes, if we pack but little of it with them, that is the moth cannot breed nor exist, when there is a sufficient scent of the tobacco. This scent may be death to the invisible *insect* even after they are drawn in with the breath and fastened upon the lungs. This may account for tobacco being burned (as I have heard it), in many old countries, on a chaffing dish in a room, that the people of the house may take in the smoke plentifully with their breath, to preserve their health and prevent pestilential disorders.

"Agreeable to this view, we may conclude that all tainted air may bring disease and death to us. And the plague has never been (properly speaking) in America as we know of. Yet other effluvia taken in with the breath may have occasioned other fearful diseases, such as the yellow fever and other bilious and contagious complaints."—P. 14.

traversing the woods from Georgia through Tennessee to Kentucky, intending there to abide. But finding Kentucky had also become a slave State, he and his family, bidding good-by to Kentucky "headticks and slavery," in like manner emigrated to Ohio, settling on Duck Creek, near Columbia (Old Baptist Church), now within the limits of Cincinnati, reaching there about 1794. He became, with his family, a member of this church, and frequently preached there and at other frontier places, but still pursuing the occupation of farming, and, though perhaps not for much remuneration, the practice of medicine. In 1804 he again took to the wilderness with his entire family, then grown to the number of twelve children, born in the "Jerseys" or on the line of his march through the coast or wilderness States or territories. He settled on a small and poor farm on Donnels Creek, in the midst of rich ones, where he died, December 31, 1816. It seems from his book (page 14) (published while he resided at his last home) that he did not personally cease his wanderings and search for medical knowledge, as he says he was in Philadelphia, July 4, 1811, where he made some observations as to the effect of hot and cool air upon the human system, through the respiration. But it is certain he taught to the end, in the pulpit, and ministered as a physician to his neighbors and friends, often going long distances from home for the purpose. He concluded, near the end of his long and varied experiences, that: "Men have contrived to break all God's *appointments*. But this: '*It is appointed for all men once to die*' has never been abrogated or defeated by any man. And as to medicine we are about to take: *If the Lord will*, we shall do this or that with success; *if the Lord will*, I shall get well by this means or some other." He concluded his "Introduction" by commending the "iron doctrine" for consumptives, and by assenting to Dr. Brown's opinion that "*an old man ought never to marry a young woman.*"

He is buried in a neglected graveyard near Donnelsville, Clark County, Ohio.

Men of the type and character described impressed for

good Western life and character while they lived, and through their example and posterity also the indefinite future.

Peter Smith had four sons, Samuel, Ira, Hezekiah, and Abram, who each lived beyond eighty years, dying in the order of their birth, each leaving a large family of sons and daughters, whose children, grandchildren, etc., are found now in nearly, if not all, the States of the Union, many of them also becoming pioneers to the frontiers, long ago reaching the Rocky Mountains, the Pacific slope and coast.¹

His sons Ira and Hezekiah, much after the fashion of their father, preached the Gospel (Baptists) in Ohio and Indiana, but not neglecting, as did their father, to amass each a considerable fortune. Ira resided and died at Lafayette, Indiana, and Rev. Hezekiah Smith at Smithland, Indiana. Samuel, the eldest (Clark County, Ohio), was always a plain, creditable farmer, but his sons and grandchildren became noted as educators, physicians, surgeons, and divines.

Samuel's son, Peter Smith, besides acquiring a good general education, studied surveying, my father assisting him, and he taught school in Clark and other counties in Ohio, and became celebrated for his success. He was the first in Ohio to advocate higher-graded, or union schools, and through his efforts a first law was passed in Ohio to establish them. He adopted a merit-ticket system for scholars in schools which, for a time, was highly successful and became popular. He removed, about 1850, to Illinois, then became a surveyor and locator of public lands, farmer, etc., and was killed by a railroad train at Sumner, Illinois, when about eighty years of age, leaving a large number of grown children.

Rev. Milton J. Miller (now of Geneseo, Illinois), grandson

¹ His grandson, James Johns, in the 30's, wandered, as a trapper, to the Pacific coast, thence north to the mouth of the Willamette River on the Columbia (Oregon), and there lived a bachelor and alone until his death, about 1890. He was neither a fighting man nor a hunter. He travelled, often alone, wholly unarmed, among wild, savage Indians, his peaceable disposition and defenceless condition being respected. He, it is said, would not sell his lands at the mouth of the river, and thus forced the city of Portland to be located twelve miles from the Columbia.

of Samuel Smith, though a farmer boy, early resolved to acquire an education and enter the ministry. His resolution was carried out. He graduated at Antioch College; attended a theological school at Cambridge, Mass., became a minister of the Christian Church, later of the Unitarian, and was for about one year a chaplain in the volunteer army (110th Ohio), and distinguished himself in all relations of life.

Dr. Hezekiah Smith, also son of Samuel, became somewhat eminent as a physician, and died at Smithland, Shelby County, Indiana, in 1897.

Abram, though once in prosperous circumstances, through irregular habits and the inherited disposition to rove over the world, became poor, and sometimes, when remote from his family and friends, in real want, yet he, the youngest of the four, lived past the traditional family fourscore years, dying poor (near Lawrenceville, Illinois), but leaving children and grandchildren in many States of the West, who had become, at his death, or since became, distinguished as soldiers and eminent citizens. He was of a most cheerful disposition, and whatever his circumstances or lot were he seemed contented and happy.

Five of Dr. Peter Smith's daughters (besides my mother) lived to be married. Sarah married Henry Jennings; Elizabeth, Hezekiah Ferris; Nancy, John Johns; Margaret, Hugh Wallace, and Rhoda, Dr. Wm. Lindsay, but each died comparatively young. They also each left children; and their grandchildren, etc., are now numerous and many of them highly esteemed citizens, also scattered widely over the country.

Two others of Dr. Smith's children (Catherine and Jacob Stout) lived only to the ages of fifteen and seventeen years respectively.

But Peter Smith was not the sole head of this remarkable and long wandering family, nor the repository or source of all its brains or good qualities of head and heart.

He was married, as stated, to Catherine Stout, in New Jersey, whose family was theretofore, then, and since both

numerous and widely dispersed, and many of them more than usually prominent or celebrated in public and private life.

Her ancestry may be traced briefly. Richard Stout, who seems to have been the first of his name in America, was the son of John Stout, of Nottinghamshire, England. When a young man he came to New Amsterdam (now New York City), where he met Penelope Van Princess, a young woman from Holland. She, with her first husband, had been on a ship from Amsterdam, Holland, bound for New Amsterdam. The ship was wrecked in the lower bay and driven on the New Jersey coast below Staten Island. The passengers and crew escaped to the shore, but were there attacked by Indians, and all left for dead; Penelope alone was alive, but severely wounded. She had strength enough to get to a hollow tree, where she is said to have lived unaided for seven days, during which time she was obliged to keep her bowels in place with her hand, on account of a cut across her abdomen. At the end of this time a merciful but avaricious Indian discovered and took pity on her. He took her to his wigwam, cared for her, and thence took her to New Amsterdam by canoe and sold her to the Dutch. This woman Richard Stout married about the year 1650. The couple settled in New Jersey, and raised a family of seven sons and three daughters. The third son, Jonathon, married a Bullen, settled at Hopewell, New Jersey, and had six sons and three daughters. The fifth son, Samuel, married Catherine Simpson, by whom he had one son, Samuel, born in 1732. This Samuel served in the New Jersey Legislature, and was a Justice of the Peace. He married Anne Van Dyke, and had seven sons and three daughters. His daughter Catherine, great-great-granddaughter of Richard and Penelope (born November 25, 1758), married, December 23, 1776, Peter Smith, whose history we have traced. She was the companion of all his journeyings, caring for and directing affairs and the family in his frequent absence and itineraries from home "preaching the Gospel and disbursing *physic* for the salvation of souls and the healing of the body." She, too, was a devout Christian (Baptist), and

ministered to the exposed and often needy pioneers in the wilderness. She survived him fifteen years, dying March 3, 1831. She is buried beside her husband.

Mary (my mother), a daughter of Peter and Catherine Smith, born January 31, 1799, on Duck Creek near Columbia Church, within the present limits of Cincinnati, married (as stated) Joseph Keifer, when not yet seventeen years of age, and became the mother of fourteen children, eight of whom lived to mature years—two sons and six daughters. She died at Yellow Springs, Ohio, March 23, 1879, passing her eightieth birthday, like her brothers named, having survived all of her brothers and sisters. She was next to the youngest of them. She inherited, cultivated, and practised the essential virtues necessary in a successful, useful, pure, happy, and contented life. She had a most cheerful disposition, and was of a confident and buoyant spirit, in sorrow and adversity. She was devoted to all her children, and all owe her much for their fundamental preparation, education, etc., together with the habits of industry and perseverance, essential to whatever of success they have attained in life. And, above all, she early became a member of church (Baptist and Christian), and maintained her church relations for above sixty years, to her death, never doubting in her Christian belief, yet never bigoted or intolerant of the religious views of others.

She was a devoted companion to her husband, and with him ever took a deep interest in their family and neighbors, never neglecting a duty to them. She, born in the Ohio territory, lived within its borders above eighty years, witnessed its transformation from savagery to the highest civilization, and its growth in wealth, power, and population from little to the third of the great States of the Union. She witnessed the coming, through science and inventions, of railroads, telegraphs, steam, and electric power, telephones, etc. She saw the soldiers of the War of 1812, the Mexican war, and the War of the Rebellion, and something of the Indian wars in Ohio. In her childhood she lived in proximity to savages. With her husband she had ministered to escaped slaves, and

saw slavery (always detested by both) abolished. She witnessed with becoming pride a degree of success in the efforts of her children and grandchildren, and she held on her knees her great-grandchildren. She is buried beside her husband in Ferncliff Cemetery, Springfield, Ohio.

The children who grew to maturity were: Margaret, born September 22, 1816, who married Joseph Gaines, and died March 10, 1896, leaving two sons and a daughter; Sarah (still living), born September 29, 1819, who married Lewis James, and, after his decease, Richard T. Youngman, having one son, J. Warren James (Captain 45th Ohio, War of the Rebellion), and *five* children by her last husband; Benjamin Franklin (still living), born April 22, 1821, who married Amelia Henkle, and has three sons and three daughters living; Elizabeth Mary, born February 20, 1823, unmarried, still living; Lucretia, born January 20, 1828, died August 5, 1892, surviving her husband, Eli M. Henkle, and her only son, John E. Henkle; Joseph Warren Keifer, born January 30, 1836, who married, March 22, 1860, Eliza Stout, of Springfield, Ohio. [They have three sons living, Joseph Warren, born May 13, 1861; William White, born May 24, 1866, and Horace Charles, born November 14, 1867. Their only other child, a daughter, Margaret Eliza, was born June 2, 1873, and died August 16, 1890.] Minerva, born July 15, 1839 (died July 22, 1899), married to Charles B. Palmer, and they have two sons and a daughter; and Cordelia Ellen, born July 17, 1842, not married.

From the ancestry described and from the widely diversified strains of blood—German, English, Welsh, Dutch, and others not traced or traceable—meeting, to make, in *composite*, a full-blooded American—came the author of this sketch. He also sprang from a farmer, shoemaker, civil engineer, clergyman, physician, etc., ancestry, no lawyer or soldier of mark appearing in the long line, so far as known.

Born with a vigorous constitution, of strong¹ and remarkably

¹ My father was not a large man, his weight being only about one hundred and sixty pounds and height five feet, ten inches, but my mother, while only of medium height for a woman, was of large frame and weighed about one hundred and eighty pounds.

healthy parents, I, early as strength permitted, became useful, in the varied ways a boy can be, on a farm where the soil is not only tilled, but trees first have to be felled, rails split, hauled, and fences built. Timber had to be cut and hauled to saw-mills, to make lumber for buildings, etc. In the 40's clearing was done still by deadening, felling, and by burning, the greater part of the timber not being necessary or suitable for sawed lumber or rails. In all this work, as I grew in years and strength, I participated. At or before the age of seven years, and long thereafter, I performed hard farm work, hauling, ploughing, sowing, planting, cultivating corn and vegetables, harvesting, etc., and was never idle. I mowed grass with a scythe, and reaped grain with a sickle (the rough marks of the teeth of the latter are seen still on fingers of my left hand as I write this). Later, the cradle to cut small grain was introduced, though at first it was not popular, because it reduced the usual number of harvest hands required to "sickle the crop." Raking and binding wheat, rye, and oats were part of the hard work of the harvest field. Husking corn was a fall and sometimes winter occupation. Stock had to be cared for and fed. Flax for home-made garments was raised, pulled up by hand, spread, rotted, broken, skutched, hackled, etc. All this work of the farm I pursued with regularity and assiduity. My father dying when I was fourteen years of age, and my only living brother (Benjamin F.) being married and on his own farm, much more of the duties and management of a farm of above two hundred acres devolved on me for the more than six succeeding years while my mother continued to reside on the homestead.

My education was commenced at home and at the log district schoolhouse, located on my father's farm. The beginning of a child's schooling, by law and custom, was then at four years of age. Thus early I went to school, but not regularly. It was then rare that a summer school was kept up, and the winter *term* was usually only three or four months at the outside. The farmer boy was needed to work almost the year round, and even while attending school, he arose early

to attend to the feeding of stock, chopping fire-wood, doing chores, etc., and when school closed in the evening he was often, until after darkness set in, similarly engaged. The school hours were from 8 A.M. to 12 M. and from 1 to 5 P.M. Saturdays were days of hard work. The school months were busy ones to the farmer boys and girls. Spelling matches at night were common.

The schools were, however, good, though the teachers were not always efficient or capable of instructing in the higher branches of learning now commonly taught in public schools in Ohio. But in reading, spelling, writing, English grammar, geography within certain limits, and arithmetic, the instruction was quite thorough, and scholars inclined to acquire an education early became proficient in the branches taught.

At school I made progress, though attending usually only about three—sometimes four—months in the year. But I had the exceptional advantage of aid at home from my father and mother; also older sisters, who had all of them become fitted for teachers. My natural inclination was to mathematics and physical geography rather than to English grammar or other branches taught. While engaged in the study of geography my father arranged to make a globe to illustrate the zones, etc., and grand divisions of the world. Though then but twelve years of age I aided him in chopping down a native linden tree, from which a block was cut and taken to a man (Crain) who made spinning-wheels, which was by him turned, globe-shaped, about a foot in diameter, and hung in a frame. My father marked on it the lines of latitude and longitude and laid off the grand divisions, islands, oceans, seas, etc., and with appropriate shadings to indicate lines or boundaries, it was varnished and became a veritable globe, fit for an early student of geography, and far from crude. It now stands before me as perfect as when made fifty years since. In mathematics I soon, out of school, passed to the study of algebra, geometry, natural philosophy, etc. My common school and home advantages were excellent, and while my father lived, even when at work in the fields, problems were

being stated and solved, and interesting matters were discussed and considered. The country boy has an inestimable advantage over the town or city boy in the fact that he is more alone and on his own resources, which gives him an opportunity for independent thought, and forces him to become a *thinker*, without which no amount of scholastic advantages will make him, in any proper sense, learned.

I had the misfortune, before ten years of age, of injuring, by accident, my left foot, and in consequence went on crutches about two years of my boyhood life. The apprehension of again becoming lame early turned my thought to an occupation other than farming. When sixteen years of age I decided to try to become a lawyer, and in this decision my mother seconded me heartily. Though continuing to labor on the farm without intermission, I pursued, as I had long before, a regular study of history, and procured and read some elementary law books, including a copy of Blackstone's *Commentaries*, which I systematically and constantly read and re-read, and availed myself, without an instructor, of all possible means of acquiring legal knowledge. In my eighteenth year I was regularly entered as a student at law with Anthony & Goode, attorneys, at Springfield, Ohio, though my reading was still continued on the farm, noons, nights, and between intervals of hard work.¹

Lyceums or debating societies which met at the villages or schoolhouses were then common. They were usually well conducted, and they were excellent incentives to study, affording good opportunities for acquiring habits of debate and public speaking. They are, unfortunately, no longer common. These lyceums I frequented, and participated in the discussions. I taught public school "a quarter," the winter

¹ Solitary reading law, with time for thought and reflection, has its advantages, more than compensating for the opportunity to consult reports, etc., usually enjoyed by a law student in an office.

The present Chief-Justice (Hon. David Martin) of Kansas, though nominally a law student of mine, yet read and mastered the elementary and principal textbooks while tending, as miller, a dry-water country grist-mill, remote from my office.

of 1852-53, at the Black-Horse Tavern schoolhouse, on Donnels Creek, for sixty dollars pay.

I attended Antioch College (1854-55) in Horace Mann's time, for less than a year, reciting in classes in geometry, higher algebra, English grammar, rhetoric, etc., pursuing no regular course, and part of the time taking special lessons, and while there actively participated in a small debating club, to which some men still living and of high eminence belonged. One member only of the club has, so far, died upon the gallows. This was Edwin Coppoc, who was hanged with John Brown in December, 1859.

In the exciting Presidential campaign of 1856 (though not old enough to vote) I made, in Clark and Greene Counties, Ohio, above fifty campaign speeches for Fremont, the excitement being so high that mobbing or egging was not uncommon. The pro-slavery people called Fremont's supporters *abolitionists*—the most opprobrious name they conceived they could use. Colonel Wm. S. Furay (now of Columbus, Ohio), of about my age, also made many speeches in the same campaign, and we were joint recipients of at least one *egging*, at Clifton, Ohio.

In the midst of my farm work and duties, by employing noon hours, evenings, rainy days, etc., I could make much progress in studies, and besides this I did a little fishing in the season, and some hunting with a rifle, in the use of which I was skilful in killing game. Hunting became almost a passion, hence had to be wholly given up.

At the close of the 1856 Presidential campaign, my mother having, in consequence of my purpose to practise law, removed from the farm to Yellow Springs, Ohio, I became a resident of Springfield, and there pursued, regularly, in Anthony & Goode's office, the study of the law.

Before this I had ventured to try a few law cases before justices of the peace, both in the country, in villages, and in the city, and I had some professional triumphs, occasionally over a regular attorney, but more commonly meeting the "pettifogger," who was of a class once common, and not to

be despised as "rough and tumble," *ad captandum*, advocates in justices' courts. They often knew some crude law, and they never knew enough to concede a point or that they were wrong.

My studies went on in much the usual way until I was admitted to the bar, January 12, 1858, by the Supreme Court of Ohio, at Columbus. I recognize now more than I did then that my preparation for the profession of the law, which demands knowledge of almost all things, ancient, modern, scientific, literary, historical, etc., was wholly defective. All knowledge is called into requisition by a general and successful legal practitioner. My early deficiency in learning, and the many interruptions in the course of about forty years, have imposed the necessity of close and constant application. On being admitted to the bar, I determined to visit other parts and places before locating. I visited Toledo; it was then muddy, ragged, unhealthful, and unpromising. Chicago was then next looked over. It was likewise apparently without promise. The streets were almost impassable with mire. The sidewalks were seldom continuously level for a square. The first floors of some buildings were six to ten feet above those of others beside them. So walking on the sidewalks was an almost constant going up and down steps. There was then no promise of its almost magic future. At Springfield, Illinois, I saw and heard, in February, 1858, before the Supreme Court, an ungainly appearing man, called *Abe* Lincoln. He was arguing the application of a statute of limitations to a defective tax title to land. He talked very much in a conversational way to the judges, and they gave attention, and in a Socratic way the discussion went on. I did not see anything to specially attract attention to Mr. Lincoln, save that he was awkward, ungainly in build, more than plain in features and dress, his clothes not fitting him, his trousers being several inches too short, exposing a long, large, unshapely foot, roughly clad. But he was even then, by those who knew him best, regarded as intellectually and professionally a great man. When I next saw him (March 25, 1865, twenty days

before his martyrdom) he looked much the same, except better dressed, though he was then President of the United States and Commander-in-Chief of its Army and Navy. He appeared on both occasions a sad man, thoughtful and serious. The last time I saw him he was watching the result of an assault on the enemy's outer line of works from Fort Fisher in front of Petersburg, the day Fort Stedman was carried and held for a time by the Confederates.

I also visited St. Louis, and took a look at its narrow (in old part) French streets; thence I went to Cairo, the worst, in fact and appearance, of all. In going alone on foot along the track of the Illinois Central Railroad from Cairo to Burkeville Junction, in crossing the Cash bottoms, or slashes, I was assailed by two of a numerous band of highwaymen who then inhabited those parts, and was in danger of losing my life. In a struggle on the embankment one of the two fell from the railroad bed to the swamp at its side, and on being disengaged from the other I proceeded without being further molested to my destination.

By March 1, 1858, I was again at home, resolved to practise law in my native county, at Springfield, where I opened an office for that purpose. To locate to practise a profession among early neighbors and friends has its disadvantages. The jealous and envious will not desire or aid you to succeed; others, friendly enough, still will want you to establish a reputation before they employ you.

All will readily, however, espouse your friendship, and proudly claim you as their school-mate, neighbor, and dearest friend when you have demonstrated you do not need their patronage.

I did succeed, in a way, from the beginning, and was not without a good clientage, and some good employments. I was prompt, faithful, and persistently loyal to my clients' interests, trying never to neglect them even when they were small. Then litigations were sharper generally than at present, and often, as now understood, unnecessary. The court-term was once looked forward to as a time for a lawyer to earn fees;

now it is, happily, otherwise with the more successful and better lawyers. Commercial business is too tender to be ruthlessly shocked by bitter litigations. Disputes between successful business men can be settled usually now in good lawyers' offices on fair terms, saving bitterness, loss of time, and expensive or prolonged trials. A just, candid, and good attorney should make more and better fees by advice and counsel and in adjusting his client's affairs in his office than by contentions in the trial-court room.

I was an active member of the Independent Rover Fire Company in Springfield, and with it ran to fires and worked on the brakes of a hand-engine, etc.

I gave little attention to matters outside of the law, though a little to a volunteer militia company of which I was a member; for a time a lieutenant, then in 1860 brigade-major on a militia brigadier's staff. We staff officers wore good clothes, much tinsel, gaudy crimson scarfs, golden epaulets, bright swords with glistening scabbards, rode horses in a gallop on parade occasions and muster days, yet knew nothing really military—certainly but little useful in war. We knew a little of company drill and of the handling of the old-fashioned musket.

My wife (Eliza Stout) was of the same Stout family of New Jersey from whence came my maternal grandmother. She was born at Springfield, Ohio, July 11, 1834, and died there March 12, 1899.

Her father, Charles Stout, and mother, Margaret (McCord) Stout, emigrated from New Jersey, on horseback, in 1818, to Ohio, first settling at Cadiz, then at Urbana, and about 1820 in Clark County. The McCords were Scotch-Irish, from County Tyrone. Thus in our children runs the Scotch-Irish blood, with the German, Dutch, Welsh, English, and what not—all, however, Aryan in tongue, through the barbaric, Teutonic tribes of northern Europe.

Thus situated and occupied, I was, after Sumter was fired on, and although wholly unprepared by previous inclination, education, or training, quickly metamorphosed into a soldier in actual war.

Five days after President Lincoln's first call for volunteers I was in Camp Jackson, Columbus, Ohio (now Goodale Park), a private soldier, and April 27, 1861, I was commissioned and mustered as Major of the 3d Ohio Volunteer Infantry, and with the regiment went forthwith to Camp Dennison, near Cincinnati, for drill and equipment. Here real preparation for war, its duties, responsibilities, and hardships, began. Without the hiatus of a day I was in the volunteer service four years and two months, being mustered out, at Washington, D.C., June 27, 1865, on which date I settled all my ordnance and other accounts with the departments of the government, though they covered several hundred thousand dollars.

I served and fought in Virginia, Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama, Georgia, West Virginia, and Maryland, and campaigned in other States. I was thrice slightly wounded, twice in different years, near Winchester, Virginia, and severely wounded in the left forearm at the battle of the Wilderness, May 5, 1864. I was off duty on account of wounds for a short time only, though I carried my arm in a sling, unhealed, until after the close of the war.

The story of my service in the Civil War is told elsewhere.

II

PUBLIC SERVICES SINCE THE CIVIL WAR

On my return from the war I resumed, in Springfield, Ohio, the practice of law, and have since pursued it, broken a little by some official life.¹ I took a deep interest in the political questions growing out of the reconstruction of the States lately in rebellion, and especially in the adoption of the Thirteenth, Fourteenth, and Fifteenth Amendments to the Constitution. The *first* of these abolished slavery in the United States; the

¹ On the recommendations of Generals Grant and Meade I was appointed (1866) by President Johnson a Lieutenant-Colonel in the 26th Infantry, U. S. A., one of the new regular regiments provided for after the close of the war. I declined the appointment because I was of too restless a disposition and not educated for a soldier in time of peace.

second (1) secured to all persons born or naturalized in the United States, citizenship therein and in the State wherein they resided; prohibited a State from making any law that would abridge the privileges or immunities of citizens, and from depriving any person of life, liberty, or property without due process of law, and from denying to any person the equal protection of the laws; (2) required Representatives to be apportioned among the States according to numbers, excluding Indians not taxed, but provided that when the right of male citizens over twenty-one years to vote for electors and Federal and State executive, judicial or legislative officers, was denied or abridged by any State, except for participation in rebellion or other crime, the basis of representation therein should be reduced proportionately; (3) excluded any person who, having previously taken an oath as a member of Congress or of a State Legislature, or as an officer of the United States or of a State, to support the Constitution of the United States, shall have engaged or aided in rebellion, from holding any office under the United States or any State, leaving Congress the right by a two-thirds vote of each House to remove such disability, and (4) prohibited the validity of the public debt, including debts incurred for the payment of pensions and bounties, from being questioned, and prevented the United States or any State from paying any obligation incurred in aid of the Rebellion, or any claim for the emancipation of any slave; and the *third* provided that citizens shall not be denied the right to vote "By any State on account of race, color, or previous condition of servitude."¹ Those amendments completed the cycle of fundamental changes of the Constitution, and were necessary results of the war.

Ohio ratified each of them through her Legislature, but, in January, 1868, rescinded her previous ratification of the Fourteenth Amendment. I voted and spoke in the Ohio Senate against this rescission.

The Constitution of Ohio gave the elective franchise only to

¹ The Thirteenth Amendment was proclaimed ratified Dec. 18, 1865; the Fourteenth, July 28, 1868, and the Fifteenth, March 30, 1870.

“white” persons. In 1867 the people of the State voted against striking the word “white” from the Constitution. In that year I was elected to the Ohio Senate, and participated in the political discussions of those times, both on the stump and in the General Assembly, and favored universal suffrage and the political equality of all persons. The wisdom of such suffrage will hardly be settled so long as there exists a great disparity of learning and morals, public and private, among the people, race not regarded.

I originated some laws, still on the statute books of Ohio, one or two of which have been copied in other States. An amendment to the replevin laws, so as to prevent the plaintiff from acquiring, regardless of right, heirlooms, keepsakes, etc., is an example of this. I served on the Judiciary and other committees of the Ohio Senate in the sessions of 1868–69.

I supported my old war chief for President in 1868 and 1872. I was Commander of the Department of Ohio, Grand Army of the Republic, for the years 1868, 1869, and 1870, during which time, under its auspices, the Ohio Soldiers and Sailors’ Orphans’ Home was established at Xenia, through a board of trustees appointed by me. The G.A.R. secured the land, erected some cottages and other buildings thereon, and carried on the institution, paying the expense for nearly two years before the State accepted the property as a donation and assumed the management of the Home. I was Junior Vice-Commander-in-Chief of the G.A.R., 1871–72; was trustee of the Orphans’ Home from April, 1871, date when the State took charge of it, to March, 1878; have been a trustee of Antioch College since June, 1873; was the first President of the Lagonda National Bank, Springfield, Ohio, (April, 1873), a position I still hold; was a delegate-at-large from Ohio to the National Republican Convention in Cincinnati, in June, 1876, when General Hayes was nominated for President; was first elected to Congress in 1876, and three times successively thereafter, serving in the Forty-fifth, Forty-sixth, Forty-seventh, and Forty-eighth Congresses, ending March 4, 1885, covering the administrations of Presidents Hayes, Garfield, and

Arthur. I served in the Forty-fifth on the Committee on War Claims, and in the Forty-sixth on Elections, and on other less important committees.

I opposed the repeal of the act providing for the resumption of specie payments, January 1, 1879. In a somewhat careful speech (November 16, 1877) I insisted that the act "to strengthen the public credit" (March 18, 1869), and the resumption act of January 14, 1875, reaffirmed the original promise and renewed the pledges of the nation to redeem, when presented, its notes issued during and on account of the Rebellion, thus making them the equivalent of coin. I then, also against the prophecy of many in and out of Congress, demonstrated the honesty, necessity, and ability of the government to resume specie payment.

The act was not repealed, and resumption came under it without a financial shock, and the nation's credit, strength, honor, and good faith were maintained inviolate with its own people.

I advocated the payment of claims of loyal citizens of the insurrectionary States for supplies furnished or seized by the Union Army, necessary for its use for subsistence, but opposed payment, to even loyal citizens, of claims based on the loss or destruction of property incident to the general devastation of the war. Claims for destruction of property were the most numerous, and the most energetically pressed, and, in some instances, appropriations were made to pay them, but the great majority of them failed. The loyalty of claimants from the South was often more than doubtful. For want of a well defined rule, which it is impossible to establish in Congress, very many just claims against the United States never are paid, or, if paid, it is after honest claimants have been subjected to the most vexatious delays, and, in many instances, forced to be victimized by professional lobbyists. Many claimants have spent all they and their friends possessed waiting in Washington, trying to secure an appropriation or to pay blackmailing claim-agents or lobbyists. It is doubtful whether the latter class of persons ever really aided, by influence or otherwise, in

securing an honest appropriation, though they, to the scandal of the members, often had credit for doing so. It is doubtful whether there is any case where members of either House were bribed with money to support a pending bill, yet many claimants have believed they paid members for their influence and votes.

An illustrative incident occurred when Wm. P. Frye of Maine was serving on the War Claims Committee of the House. A lobbyist in some way ascertained that Mr. Frye was instructed by his committee to report a bill favorably by which a considerable claim would be paid. The rascal found the claimant, and told him that for five hundred dollars Mr. Frye would make a favorable report, otherwise his report would be adverse. The claimant paid the sum. But for an accident Mr. Frye never would have known of the fraud, and the claimant would have believed he bribed an honest member.

I opposed the payment of a large class of claims presented for institutions of learning or church buildings destroyed by one or the other army, not so much on account of their disloyal owners, but because their destruction belonged to the general ravages of war, never compensated for, as of right, according to the laws and usages of nations.

Besides making many reports on various war claims, I spoke (December 13, 1878) at some length against a bill to reimburse William and Mary College, Virginia, for property destroyed during the war, in which I collated the precedents and reviewed the law of nations in the matter of the payment of claims for property destroyed in the ravages of war by either the friendly or opposing army. I also frequently participated in the debates on the floor of the House involving war claims and other important matters.

The necessity for presenting claims for the judgment of Congress results in the most grievous wrong to honest claimants, and often results in the payment of fraudulent claims through the persistency of claimants and the lack of time and adequate means for investigation. In the absence of judicial investigation according to the usual forms of procedure it quite

frequently happens that fraudulent claims are made to appear honest, and hence paid. Want of time causes others, however just, to fail of consideration, thus doing incalculable injustice. The government of the United States suffers in its reputation from its innumerable failures to pay, at least promptly, its honest creditors. Thousands of bills to pay claims are annually introduced which go to committees and to the calendars, never to be disposed of for want of time. To remedy this, on April 16, 1878, I proposed in the House an amendment to the Constitution in these words:

Article —

“Section 1. Congress shall have no power to appropriate money for the payment of any claim against the United States, not created in pursuance of or previously authorized by law, international treaty, or award, except in payment of a final judgment rendered thereon by a court or tribunal having competent jurisdiction.

“Section 2. Congress shall establish a court of claims to consist of five justices, one of whom shall be chief-justice, with such original jurisdiction as may be provided by law in cases involving claims against the United States, and with such other original jurisdiction as may be provided by law, and Congress may also confer on any other of the courts of the United States inferior to the Supreme Court, original jurisdiction in like cases.

“Section 3. All legislation other than such as refers exclusively to the appropriation of money in any appropriation act of Congress shall be void, except such as may prescribe the terms or conditions upon which the money thereby appropriated shall be paid or received.”—*Con. Record*, Vol. vii., Part III., p. 2576.

The adoption of this amendment would have relieved Congress of much work; have given claimants at all times a speedy and certain remedy for the disposition of their claims and at the same time secured protection to the government against unfounded claims. A statute of limitations could have put at rest old and often trumped-up claims, still constantly being brought before Congress. It is impossible for Congress to

make a statute of limitations for its own guidance.¹ It never will obey a law against its own action.

In the Forty-sixth Congress there were many contested election cases, growing out of frauds and crimes at elections, especially in the South. The purpose of the dominant race South to overthrow the rule of the blacks or their friends was then manifest in the conduct of elections. The colored voter was soon, by coercion and fraud, practically deprived of his franchise. The plan of stuffing ballot-boxes with tissue ballots (printed often on tissue paper about an inch long and less in width) was in vogue in some districts. The judge or clerk of the election would, when the ballot-box was opened, shake from his sleeve into the box hundreds of these tickets. In these districts voters were encouraged to vote, but the tissue ballot was mainly counted to the number of the actual voters; those remaining were burned. The party in the majority in the House, however, generally voted in its men, regardless of the facts.

As early as June 7, 1878, I proposed to amend the postal laws so as to extend the free-delivery letter-carrier system to post offices having a gross revenue of \$20,000. This amendment subsequently became a law, and gave many cities the carrier system. Prior to this, population alone was the test for establishing such offices.

I opposed the indiscriminate distribution of the remaining \$10,000,000 of the \$15,500,000 paid by Great Britain, as adjudged by the Geneva Arbitration, for indemnity for losses occasioned by Confederate cruisers which went to sea during the Rebellion from English ports with the connivance or through the negligence of the British Government. I insisted in a speech (December 17, 1878) that the fund should be distributed in payment of claims allowed by the arbitrators in

¹ In the Florida Indian War of 1812 some depredations were committed on Fisher's corn fields. For this he made a claim originally for \$8000. Congress has since paid on it \$66,803, and there was still a claim in the Forty-Third Congress for \$66,848, on which a committee of the House reported in favor of paying \$16,848, leaving \$50,000 of the claim to bother future Congresses.—*Rep.* (No. 134) *on Law of Claims*, H. of R., Forty-Third Cong., p. 18.

making the award, or retained by the government as general indemnity. Many of the losers whose claims were taken into account in making the award could not be proper claimants to the fund, as they had been fully paid by marine insurance companies. It was insisted by some members that the companies had no equitable right to be subrogated to the rights of the claimants who were thus paid, because the companies had charged war-premiums, and hence did not deserve reimbursement.¹

The Forty-sixth Congress will long be memorable in the history of our country. It was Democratic in both branches, for the first time since the war.

The previous Congress (House Democratic) adjourned March 4, 1879, without having performed its constitutional duty of appropriating the money necessary to carry on, for the coming fiscal year, the legislative, executive, and judicial departments of the government, and for the pay of the army. The avowed purpose of this failure was to coerce a Republican President to withhold his veto and approve bills prohibiting the use of troops "to keep the peace at the polls on election days"; taking from the President his power to enforce all laws, even to the suppression of rebellion, except on the motion first taken by the State authorities; repealing all election laws which secured the right, through supervisors of elections and special deputy marshals, to have free, fair elections for electors and members of Congress; and also that made it a crime for an officer of the army to suppress riots or disorder or to preserve the peace at elections.

The President called the Forty-sixth Congress in extra session, March 18, 1879, to make the necessary appropriations. The effort was at once made, through riders to appropriation bills and by separate bills, to enact the laws mentioned. Excitement ran high. For the first time in the history of the United States (perhaps in the history of any government) it

¹ Later the Forty-Seventh Congress passed an act authorizing the distribution of about two-thirds of the whole fund to persons whose claims were rejected by the Geneva Arbitrators in making up the award.

was announced by a party in control of its law-making power, and consequently responsible for the proper conduct and support of the government, that unless the Executive would consent to legislation not by him deemed wise or just, there should not be provided means for maintaining the several departments of the government—that the government should be “starved to death.” In vain were precedents sought for in the history of England for such suicidal policy. The debate in both branches of Congress ran high, and there was much apprehension felt by the people. Mr. Blackburn of Kentucky, speaking for his party, said :

“For the first time in eighteen years past the Democracy are back in power in both branches of this Legislature, and she proposes to signalize her return to power ; she proposes to celebrate her recovery of her long-lost heritage by tearing off these degrading badges of servitude and destroying the machinery of a corrupt and partisan legislation. We do not intend to stop until we have stricken the last vestige of your war measures from the statute-book, which, like these, were born of the passions incident to civil strife and looked to the abridgment of the liberty of the citizen.”

Others threatened to refuse to vote appropriations until the “Capitol crumbled into dust ” unless the legislation demanded was passed. President Hayes’ veto alone prevented the legislation. It is not here proposed to give a history of the struggle, fraught with so much danger to the Republic, but only to call attention to it. The contest lasted for months.

Senators Edmunds, Conkling, Blaine, Chandler of Michigan, and other Republicans, and Thurman, Voorhees, Beck, Morgan, Lamar, and other Democrats participated in the debates. In the House Mr. Garfield, Mr. Frye, Mr. Reed, and other Republicans, and Mr. Cox, Mr. Tucker, Mr. Carlisle, and other Democrats took a more or less prominent part in the discussion. I spoke against the repeal of the election laws on April 25, 1879, and against the prohibition of the use of troops at the polls to keep the peace on election days, on June 11,

1879. The necessity for the pay of members for the fiscal year ending June 30, 1880, had the effect, finally, after many vetoes of the President, to cause the Democratic members to recede, for a time, from the false position taken. The whole question was, however, renewed in the first regular session of the same Congress. Precisely similar riders to appropriation bills and new bills relating to the use of troops at the polls, to repeal laws authorizing the appointment of supervisors and special deputy marshals for elections, and to make it a crime for an officer of the army to aid in keeping the peace at the polls on election days were brought forward and their enactment into laws demanded. I spoke on the 8th and the 10th of April, 1880, against inhibiting the use of the army at the polls and restricting the President's power to keep the peace at elections when riots and disorder prevailed, and on March 18th, and again on the 11th of June, 1880, in opposition to a bill intended to repeal existing laws relating to the use of deputy marshals at elections. In these debates I sought to make clear the power of the government to protect the voter in Federal elections; to demonstrate the necessity for doing so; to show that it was as important to have peace on election day at the polls as on the other days of the year and at other places; that it was not intended, and had never been the purpose, to use troops or supervisors or deputy marshals to prevent a voter from voting for officers of his choice, but only to secure him in that right; and that the right to a peaceful election had always been sacredly maintained, and for this purpose the army had been used in England and in all countries where free elections had been held. I maintained that the citizen was as much entitled to be protected in his right peacefully and freely to exercise the elective franchise, as to be protected in any other right, and that it was as much the duty and as clearly within the power of the Federal Government to use, when necessary, the army as a police force on an election day as to use it on other days of the year to suppress riots and breaches of the peace; and I further insisted that it was the duty of the United States to protect its citizens at home as

well as abroad in all their constitutional rights.¹ I also showed that the coercive policy of forcing legislation under threats of destroying the government was not only indefensible, treasonable, and unpatriotic, but wholly new. The precedents alleged to be found in the history of the British Parliament were shown not to exist in fact: that the farthest the English Parliament had ever gone was to refuse subsidies to the Crown, the princes, or to maintain royalty, or to vote supplies to carry on a foreign war not approved by the House of Commons; that in no case had the life of the nation been threatened as the penalty for the Crown's not approving laws passed by the House of Commons, and that English statutes provided for preserving peace and order by the army, especially at elections.

In some cases during this memorable contest in the Forty-sixth Congress I took issue in the House with the majority of my party colleagues when they, through timidity, or for other causes, yielded their opposition to proposed legislation touching the use of the army and special deputy marshals and supervisors of elections to secure peaceable and fair elections. In one notable instance (June 11, 1879), Mr. Garfield of Ohio, Mr. Hale of Maine, and the other Republican members of the appropriation committee so far surrendered their previously expressed views as to concur in the adoption of a section in the army appropriation bill which prohibited any of the money appropriated by it from being "paid for the subsistence, equipment, transportation, or compensation of any portion of the army of the United States to be used as a police force to keep the peace at any election held within any State."

The application of the previous question cut off general debate, and I was only able to get five minutes to state my objections to the proposed measure.

Though the section was plainly intended to deprive the President of his constitutional power as Commander-in-Chief of the army, eleven Republicans only of the House joined me in

¹ For an authoritative decision on the right of the National Government to use physical force to compel obedience to its laws, etc., see *Ex parte Seibold*, 100 *U. S. Rep.*, 371.

voting against it. The Republican Senators, however, generally opposed the section when the bill reached the Senate. Later in the same Congress the Republicans of the House unitedly supported the position taken by me. This and other like incidents led, however, to a charge being made later by some weak, jealous, and vain Republicans that I was not friendly to Mr. Garfield as a leader and not always loyal to my party.

In the last army appropriation bill of the same Congress, after full discussion, a similar provision was omitted, and no such limitation on the use of the army has since been or is ever again likely to be attempted to be enacted into law.

The political heresies of the Forty-fifth and Forti-sixth Congresses have apparently passed away, and a more patriotic sentiment generally exists in all parties, and, fortunately, the necessity for troops, supervisors of elections, and special deputy marshals at the polls no longer exists in so marked a degree.

I spoke, December 7, 1880, and again, February 9, 1881, at length, against the adoption of a joint rule of Congress relating to counting the electoral vote, which rule, among other things, undertook to give Congress the right to settle questions that might arise on objection of a member as to the vote of the electors of a State. I maintained that, under the Constitution, Congress neither in joint session nor in separate sessions had the right to decide that the vote of a State should or should not be counted, or that there was any power anywhere to reject the vote of any State after it had been cast and properly certified and returned; that the two Houses only met, as provided in the Constitution, to witness the purely ministerial work of the Vice-President in opening and counting the electoral vote as returned to him. I cited the precedents from the beginning of the government under the Constitution in support of my position, excepting only the dangerous one of 1877, growing out of the Electoral Commission.

I spoke on many other important subjects, especially on the true rule for apportionment of representation in the House; on election cases, and parliamentary questions. I was not

always in harmony with my party leaders. I denied the policy of surrendering principle in any case, even though apparent harmony was, for the time being, attainable thereby.

At the November election of 1880, James A. Garfield was elected President, and the Republicans had a bare majority in the House at the opening of the Forty-seventh Congress over the Democrats and Greenbackers, but not a majority over all. There were three Mahone re-Adjusters elected from Virginia. I formed no purpose to become a candidate for Speaker of the House, until at the close of the Forty-sixth, and then only on the solicitation of leading members of that Congress who had been elected to the next one.

Shortly after Mr. Garfield was inaugurated President of the United States, a violent controversy arose over appointments to important offices in New York, which led to the resignations of Senators Conkling and Platt. This was followed by President Garfield being shot (July 2, 1881) by a crazy crank (Guiteau) who, in some way, conceived that he, through the controversy, was deprived of an office. In company with General Sherman I saw and had an interview with Mr. Garfield in his room at the White House the afternoon of the day he was shot. His appearance then was that of a man fatally wounded. He lingered eighty days, dying September 19, 1881. (He is buried at Cleveland, Ohio.) Garfield was a man of great intellect, and attracted people to him by his generous nature. I have spoken of him in an oration delivered, May 12, 1887, at the unveiling of a statue of him at the foot of Capitol Hill, Washington, D. C., erected by the Society of the Army of the Cumberland.¹

Over such competitors as Mr. Reed, of Maine, Mr. Burrows of Michigan, Mr. Hiscock of New York, and others, I was chosen Speaker of the Forty-seventh Congress, December 5, 1881. The contest was sharp before the caucus met, but when my nomination became reasonably apparent, Mr. Hiscock, Mr. Reed, and Mr. Burrows, my three leading competitors, generously voted and had their friends vote for my nomination.

¹ *Proceedings Society of the Army of the Cumberland*, 1887, pp. 115-40.

Chester A. Arthur, as Vice-President, succeeded to the Presidency on the death of Mr. Garfield. There came, later, an acute division in the Republican party, Blaine and Conkling (both then out of office by a singular coincidence) being the assumed heads of the opposing factions. President Arthur tried, faithfully, to bring the elements together by recognizing both, but in this, as is usually the case, he was not successful and had not the active support of either faction, though he was an excellent, able, and amiable President. Mr. Blaine was too inordinately ambitious and jealous of power to patiently bide his time, and Mr. Conkling was too imperious and vengeful to tolerate, through his political friends, fair treatment of his supposed enemies. Mr. Conkling was a man of honesty and sincerity, true to his friends to a degree, of overtowering intellect, with marvellous industry. Notwithstanding his many unfortunate traits of character, Mr. Conkling was a great man.

Mr. Blaine was essentially a politician, and possessed of a vaulting and consuming ambition, and was jealous of even his would-be personal and political friends. Mr. Conkling advised some of his friends in Congress to support me for Speaker, as did also his former senatorial colleague, Mr. Platt of New York. The members from New York State, however, though many of them were followers of Mr. Conkling, unitedly supported Mr. Hiscock until the latter decided, during the caucus, himself to vote for me. Mr. Blaine, though to me personally professing warm friendship, held secret meetings at the State Department and at his house to devise methods of preventing my election.¹ He had been a member, for many terms, of the House, and thrice its Speaker, had been a Senator, and for a few months Secretary of State under Presidents Garfield and Arthur. He had an extended acquaintance and many enthusiastic friends. He lacked breadth and strength of learning,

¹ Mr. Blaine was nominated for President in 1884, but was defeated by Mr. Cleveland. Notwithstanding his duplicity towards me, I supported him. He was disloyal to Mr. Reed, of his own State, though he then also professed to support him.

as well as sincerity of character. He, however, came near being a great man, especially in public, popular estimation.

The Forty-seventh Congress met December 5, 1881, and being elected its Speaker over Mr. Randall, the candidate of the Democrats, I made this inaugural address:

“GENTLEMEN OF THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES,—I thank you with a heart filled with gratitude for the distinguished honor conferred on me by an election as your Speaker. I will assume the powers and duties of this high office with, I trust, a due share of diffidence and distrust of my own ability to meet them acceptably to you and the country. I believe that you, as a body and individually, will give me hearty support in the discharge of all my duties. I invoke your and the country’s charitable judgment upon all my official acts. I will strive to be just to all, regardless of party or section. Where party principle is involved, I will be found to be a Republican, but in all other respects I hope to be able to act free from party bias.

“It is a singular fact that at this most prosperous time in our nation’s history no party in either branch of Congress has an absolute majority over all other parties, and it is therefore peculiarly fortunate that at no other time since and for many years prior to the accession of Abraham Lincoln to the Executive chair have there been so few unsettled vital questions of a national character in relation to which party lines have been closely drawn.

“The material prosperity of the people is in advance of any other period in the history of our government. The violence of party spirit has materially subsided, and in great measure because many of the reasons for its existence are gone.

“While the universal tendency of the people is to sustain and continue to build up an unparalleled prosperity, it should be our highest aim to so legislate as to permanently promote and not cripple it. This Congress should be, and I profoundly hope it will be, marked peculiarly as a business Congress.

“It may be true that additional laws are yet necessary to give to every citizen complete protection in the exercise of all political rights. With evenly balanced party power, with few grounds for party strife and bitterness, and with no impending Presidential election to distract us from purely legislative duties, I venture to

suggest that the present is an auspicious time to enact laws to guard against the recurrence of dangers to our institutions and to insure tranquillity at perilous times in the future.

"Again thanking you for the honor conferred, and again invoking your aid and generous judgment, I am ready to take the oath prescribed by law and the Constitution and forthwith proceed, with my best ability, guided by a sincere and honest purpose, to discharge the duties belonging to the office with which you have clothed me."

The duties of Speaker were arduous, varied, and delicate. Under the law, rules, and practice of the House he had control of the Hall of the House, and of the assignment of committee rooms; signed orders for the monthly pay of each member, and the pay of employees; approved bonds of officers; appointed and removed stenographers; examined and approved the daily journal of the proceedings of the House before being read; received and submitted messages from the President and heads of departments; appointed three regents to the Smithsonian Institution, and three members annually as visitors to the Military Academy, and a like number to the Naval Academy, and performed many other duties cast upon him, besides appointing all the committees of the House. The Speaker is naturally the person to whom members, employees, and others having business with the House flock for advice, assistance, and with their real or imaginary grievances. An extensive correspondence and social duties demand much of the Speaker's time. All this, independent of his real duties as a presiding officer of the House, in performing which he is expected, without time for deliberation, to decide correctly all parliamentary questions and inquiries. And he is obliged, in addition, to discharge the ordinary duties of a member for his district and constituents. The members from all parts of the Union have diverse and often conflicting interests to press upon the attention of the House, and the jealousy of members in matters of precedence or recognition by the Speaker renders his duties severely trying. It constantly occurred that several members with equal rights, urging matters of equal merit, were dependent on the recognition

of the Speaker in a "morning hour," when not more than one or two of them at most could, for want of time, be recognized. The Speaker has to be invidious, relying on the future to even matters up. The recognition of a member by the Speaker is final, and from which there is no appeal. Members and often personal friends not infrequently feel aggrieved at the Speaker, for a time at least. All this regardless of political party lines. It is the Speaker's duty to equally divide recognition on party sides, and this duty, from the member's standpoint, is often a ground of complaint.

The first duty of the Speaker, ordinarily, after the House is organized and before it can proceed regularly to business, is to appoint the standing committees.

Chairmanships of committees and appointments on leading ones are much sought after, and members appeal to the Speaker on all kinds of grounds to give them the coveted places. Personal and party friendship is pressed upon him to induce favorable action. The same place is often sought by a number of members. Experience in congressional service, regardless of the member's prior duties, pursuit, or occupation, is generally urged as a reason for making a desired appointment. Some construct a geographical reason for a particular selection. Out of all this and more, the Speaker, with little or no acquaintance with a large number of the members, does the best he can. A few always are disappointed and, necessarily under the circumstances, some mistakes are made, but generally those who make the loudest complaint are the weak, vain, and inefficient members who hope to be made great in the eyes of their constituents by being named on one or more important committees by the Speaker.

Some who seek and obtain committee appointments of their own choice soon find they are not what they had expected, and they also join the clamor against the Speaker. There are, however, only a small number out of the whole who are unreasonable or dissatisfied. This small number, by their wailing, give the appearance of a general discontent. Complaint was made by the disappointed that I gave preference on

committees to personal and party friends who supported me for Speaker. I always believed in rewarding my friends.

I, however, appointed Hon. Thomas B. Reed (since Speaker), Hon. Frank Hiscock, Hon. J. C. Burrows (all competitors for Speaker), Chairmen, respectively, of the Committees on the Judiciary, Appropriation, and Territories. Hon. William D. Kelley was made Chairman of the Committee on Ways and Means. He was the acknowledged leading advocate of a high protective tariff to which the Republican party was then pledged, though the party was then honeycombed with free-traders, some of whom edited leading newspapers. Some of the latter in New York, Chicago, and Cincinnati, took occasion to assail me for appointing Mr. Kelley, and to give weight to their unjust attacks made many false statements as to the organization of other committees.¹ In this they were inspired by Mr. Blaine, and a very few others outside of Congress, who imagined their dictations should have been regarded, or who were otherwise disappointed in not being able to say who

¹ An unwary, but doubtless well-meaning person (M. P. Follet) of Quincy, Mass., in 1896 published a small volume on the *Speaker of the House*, in which she gathered up these stories. She says Keifer appointed on the Elections Committee "eleven Republicans and two Democrats"; that he appointed one nephew "Clerk to the Speaker," another "Clerk to the Speaker's table." These and other like falsehoods appear to have been inspired by a member who, notwithstanding his free-trade proclivities and other objectionable qualities and in capacities, sought to be appointed Chairman of the Ways and Means Committee. The Committee on Elections was composed of nine Republicans, five Democrats, and one re-Adjuster from Virginia. The Clerk to the Speaker's table was, throughout the Congress, a poor young man who had been a page on the floor of the House and a resident of the State of New York, and no relative of mine. A nephew of mine, a resident of Washington, was, for a short time, my clerk, a purely personal position, as was also that of private secretary.

The statement of Miss Follet that Keifer's "partisan rulings soon won him the contempt of Republicans as well as of Democrats," is shown to be basely untrue by the significant fact that no parliamentary or other decision of mine was ever overruled by the House, although my party can hardly be said to have been in the majority in the House over all other parties.

What "partisan ruling" of mine was not heartily approved by my party, or did not command at least the respect of the Democrats? Miss Follet was imposed on.

should be Speaker. The Speaker could not go into the newspapers and contradict these and like malicious stories, and hence some of them are still ignorantly repeated.¹

After fuller acquaintance with the members, it became obvious that in assigning them to committee work I had overrated some and underrated others, but a better working Congress never met. Its work abundantly proves this, not only in amount of work done, but in the importance and character of the legislation, and its freedom from all that was corrupt or vicious. I cannot recall that even the weak and vicious slanderers or disappointed lobbyists ever risked charging me

¹ An incident occurred near the close of the last session of the Forty-seventh Congress which should be mentioned. The reporters of newspapers, through the courtesy of the House, had been assigned a separate gallery for their convenience. This gallery, as well as others for the convenience of visitors, was under the general control of the Speaker, subject to the order of the House. There were but few occupants in the reporters' gallery the last night of the session, and there were many ladies who could not be accommodated with seats in other galleries.

I declined, however, though repeatedly requested, to order the reporters' gallery opened even to ladies, and I also refused to entertain a motion by a member of the House to order it thrown open to them; but appeals became so urgent that I, as Speaker, submitted to the House the request of James W. McKenzie, a member from Kentucky, for unanimous consent to open this gallery.

Here is an extract from the *Record*, showing the action taken:

"MR. MCKENZIE.—I ask unanimous consent that the reporters' gallery be thrown open to the occupation of the wives and friends of Congressmen, who are unable to obtain seats in other galleries.

"THE SPEAKER.—The gentleman from Kentucky asks consent that the rules be so suspended as to permit the reporters' gallery to be occupied by the wives and friends of members of Congress.

"There was no objection, and it was ordered accordingly."—*Con. Record*, vol. xiv., Part IV., p. 3747.

I was, under the circumstances, the only member who could not have prevented this gallery being opened.

Notwithstanding the fact that no reporter was seriously inconvenienced by the presence of ladies, the incident was viciously seized on by certain reporters (and, through them, the metropolitan press) to assail me as the enemy of the press. The truth was suppressed at the time, and I was personally charged with wilfully opening the press gallery as an insult to the dignity of newspaper men, and, with this, other false statements were published, which could not be answered through the same medium, by me or my friends, which made an unfavorable impression, scarcely yet removed from the public mind.

while I was Speaker or during my eight years in Congress with favoring any corrupt measure pending in Congress. Polygamy, notwithstanding it had maintained itself in the United States for fifty years, and was then more firmly established in Utah than at any time before, was given a blow, under which it has since about disappeared. The first three-per-cent. funding bill was passed by this Congress. Pauper immigration was prohibited, and immigrants were required to be protected on their way across the sea; national bank charters were extended; letter postage was reduced to two cents, and many public acts wisely regulating the Indian and land policy of the government were passed. Liberal pension laws were enacted; internal-revenue taxes were largely reduced, and there was a general revision (March 3, 1883) of the tariff laws. The Civil Service Act was also passed in this Congress.

More bills were introduced for consideration in the Forty-seventh than came before Congress in the first fifty years of its existence.

In discharging the duties of Speaker I had no strong parliamentary leader of my party on the floor to aid me, and I had had but little experience as a presiding officer. Of the opposite party were Mr. Randall, who had been Speaker of the three preceding Congresses; Mr. Cox of New York, the pugnacious, who had acted as Speaker for a time in the Forty-third; Mr. Carlisle (my successor as Speaker), and Mr. Knott of Kentucky, and others who laid just claim to much parliamentary learning. The House was hardly Republican; and in my own party were disappointed aspirants who often thought they saw opportunities to gain a little cheap applause.¹ Notwithstanding this situation, no parliamentary decision of mine was overruled by the House, though many appeals were taken, and more than the usual number of important questions were raised by members and decided by me. The most memorable of the decisions was the one which put an end to dilatory

¹ It is comparatively easy for a Speaker to preside with a large political and friendly majority to support him, as was the case when Colfax, Blaine, and other Speakers were in the Chair.

motions to prevent the House from making or amending its rules of procedure. The occasion of this holding arose on the consideration of a report of the Committee on Rules whereby it was proposed to so amend the rules as to prevent filibustering and dilatory motions in the consideration of contested election cases. It may be observed that for the first time in the history of Congress, dilatory methods were resorted to, to prevent the *consideration* of election cases. I was then ready to hold (and so stated) that dilatory motions were not in order to prevent the consideration of such cases, as their disposition affected the organization of the House for business; and I was also prepared to count a quorum when a quorum of members was present not voting, but these questions did not arise, and it was then understood that leading Republicans (Mr. Reed of Maine among the number)¹ did not agree with my views on these two points. A point of order was made against a dilatory motion, which was debated at much length, and with some heat, by the ablest parliamentarians of all parties in the House. My opinion on the question made is quoted from the *Record* of May 29, 1882.

“Mr. Reed, as a privileged question, called up the report of the Committee on Rules made on Saturday last; when Mr. Randall raised the question of consideration; pending which, Mr. Kenna moved that the House adjourn; pending which Mr. Blackburn moved that when the House adjourn it be to meet on Wednesday next; and the question being put thereon, it was decided in the negative.

“The question recurring on the motion of Mr. Kenna that the House adjourn; pending which Mr. Randall moved that when the House adjourn it be to meet on Thursday next:

“Mr. Reed made the point of order that the said motion was not in order at this time, on the ground that pending a proposition to change the rules of the House, dilatory motions cannot be entertained by the Chair.

“After debate on said point of order,

¹ See *Con. Record*, vol. xiii., Part V., p. 4313.

"The Speaker. The question for the Chair to decide is briefly this: the gentleman from Maine (Reed) has called up for present consideration the report of the Committee on Rules made on the 27th inst., and the gentleman from Pennsylvania (Mr. Randall) raised, as he might under the practice and the rules of the House, the question of consideration. The gentleman from West Virginia (Mr. Kenna) then moved that the House adjourn, and the gentleman from Kentucky (Mr. Blackburn) moved that when the House adjourn it be to meet on Wednesday next, which last motion was voted down; and thereupon the gentleman from Pennsylvania (Mr. Randall) moved that when the House adjourn it be to meet on Thursday next. The gentleman from Maine (Mr. Reed) then raised the point of order that such motions are mere dilatory motions, and therefore, as against the right of the House to consider a proposition to amend the rules, not in order.

"It cannot be disputed that the Committee on Rules have the right to report at any time such changes in the rules as it may decide to be wise. The right of that committee to report at any time may be, under the practice, a question of privilege; but if it is not, resolutions of this House, adopted December 19, 1881, expressly give that right.

"The Clerk will read the resolutions.

"The Clerk read as follows:

"*Resolved*, That the rules of the House of Representatives of the Forty-sixth Congress shall be the rules of the present House until otherwise ordered; and,

"*Resolved* further, That the Committee on Rules when appointed shall have the right to report at any time all such amendments or revisions of said rules as they may deem proper."

"The Speaker. It will be seen that these resolutions not only give the right to that committee to report at any time, but the committee is authorized to report any change, etc., in the rules. The right given to report at any time carries with it the right to have the proposition reported considered without laying over. The resolutions are the ones adopting the present standing rules of the House for its government; and it will be observed that they were only conditionally adopted; and the right was expressly reserved to the House to order them to be set aside. Paragraph 1 of Rule xxviii provides that,—

“‘No standing rule of the House shall be rescinded or changed without one day’s notice of the motion therefor.’

“This clause of the rule, if applicable at all, may fairly be construed to make it in order under the standing rules of the House to consider any motion to rescind or change the rules after one day’s notice.

“But the question for the Chair to decide is this : Are the rules of this House to be so construed as to give to the minority of the House the absolute right to prevent the majority or a quorum of the House from making any new rule for its government ; or in the absence of anything in the rules providing for any mode of proceeding in the matter of consideration, when the question of changing the rules is before the House, shall the rules be so construed as to virtually prevent their change should one-fifth of the House oppose it ? It may be well to keep in mind that paragraph 2 of section 5 of article 1 of the Constitution says that—

“‘Each House may determine the rules of its proceedings.’

“The same section of the Constitution provides that—

“‘A majority of each House shall constitute a quorum to do business.’

“The right given to the House to determine the rules of its proceedings is never exhausted, but is at all times a continuing right, and in the opinion of the Chair gives a right to make or alter rules independent of any rules it may adopt. Dilatory motions to prevent the consideration of business are comparatively recent expedients, and should not be favored in any case save where absolutely required by some clear rule of established practice.

“In any case it is a severe strain upon common sense to construe the rules so as to prevent a quorum of the House from taking any proceedings at all required by the Constitution ; and it is still more difficult to find any justification for holding that the special resolutions of this House adopted December 19th last, or the standing rules even of the House, were intended to prevent the House, if a majority so desired, from altering or abrogating the present rules of the House.

“There seems to be abundant precedent for the view the Chair takes. The Clerk will read from the *Record* of the Forty-third Congress, volume ix, page 806, an opinion expressed by the distinguished Speaker, Mr. Blaine, which has been repeatedly alluded to to-day.

“The Clerk read as follows :

“The Chair has repeatedly ruled that pending a proposition to change the rules dilatory motions could not be entertained, and for this reason he has several times ruled that the right of each House to determine what shall be its rules is an organic right expressly given by the Constitution of the United States. The rules are the creature of that power, and, of course, they cannot be used to destroy the power. The House is incapable by any form of rules of divesting itself of its inherent constitutional power to exercise its function to determine its own rules. Therefore the Chair has always announced upon a proposition to change the rules of the House he would never entertain a dilatory motion.’

“The Speaker. It will be observed that the then Speaker says he has frequently held that pending a proposition to change the rules dilatory motions could not be entertained. The precedents for ruling out dilatory motions where an amendment of the rules is under consideration are many.

“During the electoral count my immediate predecessor (Mr. Randall) decided, in principle, the point involved here. On February 24, 1877, after an obstructive motion had been made, the following language was used, as found in the *Record* of the Forty-fourth Congress, page 1906.

“The Speaker. The Chair is unable to recognize this in any other light than a dilatory motion.

“The mover then denied that he made the motion as such.

“The Speaker. The Chair is unable to classify it in any other way. Therefore he rules that when the Constitution of the United States directs anything to be done, or when the law under the Constitution of the United States enacted in obedience thereto directs an act of this House, it is not in order to make any motion to obstruct or impede the execution of that injunction of the Constitution and laws.’

“While this decision is not on the precise point, it clearly covers the principle involved in the case with which we are now dealing.

“The Chair thinks the Constitution and the laws are higher than any rules, and when they conflict with the rules the latter must give way. There is not one word in the present rules, however, which prescribes the mode of proceeding in changing the standing rules except as to the reference of propositions to change the rules, with the further exception that—

“‘No standing rule or order of the House shall be rescinded or changed without one day’s notice.’

“But it will be observed that there is an entire absence from all these standing rules of anything that looks to giving directions as to the procedure when the rule is under consideration by the House. This only refers to the time of considering motions to rescind or change a standing rule to the reference of propositions submitted by members, and to the time and manner of bringing them before the House for consideration, and not to the method of considering them when brought before the House.

“It seems to purposely avoid saying one word as to the forms of proceeding while considering such motions. This is highly significant.

“There is nothing revolutionary in holding that purely dilatory motions cannot be entertained to prevent consideration or action on a proposition to amend the rules of the House, as this right to make or amend the rules is an organic one essential to be exercised preliminary to the orderly transaction of business by the House. It would be more than absurd to hold otherwise.

“Rule XLV undertakes to fasten our present standing rules on the present and all succeeding Congresses. It reads as follows :

“‘These rules shall be the rules of the House of Representatives of the present and succeeding Congresses, unless otherwise ordered.’

“If this rule is of binding force on succeeding Congresses, and the rules apply and can be invoked to give power to a minority in the House to prevent their abrogation or alteration, they would be made perpetual if only one-fifth of the members of the House so decreed.

“The fallacy of holding that the standing rules can be held to apply in proceedings to amend, etc., the rules will more sharply appear when we look to the case in hand. The proposition is to so amend the rules in contested-election cases as to take away the right to make and repeat dilatory motions, to prevent consideration, etc. And the same obstructive right is appealed to to prevent its consideration. To allow this would be to hold the rules superior not only to the House that made them but to the Constitution of the United States.

“The wise remarks quoted in debate, made long since by the distinguished speaker, Mr. Onslow of the House of Commons, about the wisdom of adhering to fixed rules in legislative proceedings,

were made with no reference to the application of rules which it was claimed were made to prevent any proceedings at all by the body acting under them.

"The present occupant of the chair has tried, and will try, to give full effect to all rules wherever applicable, and especially to protect the rights of the minority to the utmost extent the rules will justify.

"The Chair is not called upon to hold that any of the standing rules of the House are in conflict with the Constitution, as it is not necessary to do so. It only holds that there is nothing in the rules which gives them application pending proceedings to amend and rescind them. It also holds that under the first of the resolutions adopted by the House on December 19, 1881, the right was reserved to order the standing rules set aside at any time this House so decided, and without regard to dilatory forms of proceedings provided for in them. The Chair does not hold that pending the question of consideration no motion shall be in order. It is disposed to treat one motion to adjourn as proper at this time, as it is a well-known parliamentary motion, and that such motion may be liable at some stage of the proceedings to be repeated if made for a proper and not a dilatory purpose.

"The Chair feels better satisfied with its ruling in this case, because the rule proposed to be adopted is one which looks to an orderly proceeding in the matter of taking up and disposing of contested-election cases, a duty cast directly on the House by the Constitution of the United States, and an essential one to be performed before it is completely organized.

"The Chair is unable to find in the whole history of the government that any dilatory motions have ever been made or entertained to prevent the consideration or disposition of a contested-election case until this Congress. The point of order has not yet been made against obstructive motions to prevent the consideration of a contested-election case, and the Chair is not now called on to decide whether such motions are in order or not where they would prevent a complete organization of the House. The principle here involved will suffice to indicate the opinion of the Chair on that question.

"The question here decided the Chair understands to be an important one, because it comprehends the complete organization of the House to do business, but it feels that on principle and sound

precedents the point of order made by the gentleman from Maine (Mr. Reed) must be sustained to the extent of holding that the motion made by the gentleman from Pennsylvania (Mr. Randall), which is in effect a dilatory motion, is not at this time in order.

"It has been, in debate, claimed that on January 11, 1882, the present occupant of the chair made a different holding. The question then made and decided arose on a matter of reference of a proposition to amend the rules to an appropriate committee as provided for under the rules, and not on the consideration of a report when properly brought before the House for its action. The two things are so plainly distinguishable as to require nothing further to be said about them.

"Mr. Randall. From your decision, Mr. Speaker, just announced, I appeal to the House, whose officer you are.

"Mr. Reed. I move to lay the appeal on the table.

"The Speaker. The gentleman from Pennsylvania (Mr. Randall) appeals from the decision of the Chair, and the gentleman from Maine (Mr. Reed) moves that the appeal be laid upon the table.

"The question was taken ; and there were—yeas 150, nays 0, not voting 141.

"So the appeal was laid on the table."¹

There was much clamor and undue excitement over this decision of the Speaker cutting off the, always to me, foolish and unjustifiable, though time-honored, practice of allowing a turbulent minority to stop business indefinitely, by purely dilatory, though in form, privileged motions. This holding, however, received the commendation of sober, learned men of this country, and in Europe it was quoted approvingly by Gladstone in the House of Commons of England, and was followed, in principle, by its Speaker in upholding the rule of *clôture* against violent filibustering of the Irish party. Such dilatory methods have been little resorted to since.

At the end of this Congress a resolution was adopted, on motion of Mr. Randall, thanking "the Speaker for the ability and courtesy with which he has presided over the deliberations of the House during the Forty-seventh Congress."

My valedictory as Speaker was as follows:

¹ *Con., etc., Rules, etc., H. of R.; Second Sess. Forty-seventh, Con., 358.*

"Gentlemen, the time has come when our official relations as Representatives in the Forty-seventh Congress are to be dissolved. In a moment more this House of Representatives will be known only in history. Its acts will stand, many of them, it is believed, through the future history of the Republic.

"On the opening day of this Congress, I ventured the suggestion and the expression of a hope that it would be marked 'as peculiarly a business Congress.'

"It has successfully grappled with more of the vital, material, and moral questions of the country than its predecessors. Many of these have been settled wisely and well by appropriate legislation. It would be quite impossible at this time to enumerate the many important laws which have been enacted to foster and promote the substantial interests of the whole country.

"This Congress enacted into a law the first 3 per cent. funding bill known to this country, and under it a considerable portion of the government debt has been refunded at lower rates than ever before.

"It did not hesitate to take hold of the question of polygamy, and it is believed it has struck the first effective blow in the direction of destroying that greatest remaining public crime of the age.

"Laws have been passed to protect the immigrant on his way across the sea and upon his arrival in the ports of this country.

"Laws have also been passed to extend the charters of the banking institutions so that financial disorder cannot take place, which would otherwise have come at the expiration of old bank charters.

"Many public acts will be found relating to the Indian policy and the land policy of this country which will prove to be wise.

"The post-office laws have been so changed as to reduce letter postage from three to two cents, the lowest rate ever known in the United States.

"No legislation of this Congress will be found upon the statute books, revolutionary in character or which will oppress any section or individual in the land. All legislation has been in the direction of relief.

"Pension laws have been enacted which are deemed wise, and liberal appropriations have been made to pay the deserving and unfortunate pensioner.

"Internal-revenue taxes have been taken off, and the tariff laws have been revised.

“Sectionalism has been unknown in the enactment of laws.

“In the main a fraternal spirit has prevailed among the members from all portions of the Union. What has been said in the heat of debate and under excitement and sometimes with provocation is not to be regarded in determining the genuine feeling of concord existing between members. The high office I have filled through the sessions of this Congress has enabled me to judge better of the true spirit of the members that compose it than I could otherwise have done.

“It is common to say that the House of Representatives is a very turbulent and disorderly body of men. This is true more in appearance than in reality. Those who look on and do not participate see more apparent confusion than exists in reality. The disorder that often appears upon the floor of the House grows out of an earnest, active spirit possessed by members coming from all sections of the United States, and indicates in a high degree their strong individuality and their great zeal in trying to secure recognition in the prompt discharge of their duty. No more conscientious body of men than compose this House of Representatives, in my opinion, ever met. Partisan zeal has in some instances led to fierce word-contests on the floor, but when the occasion which gave rise to it passed by, party spirit went with it.

“I am very thankful for the considerate manner in which I have been treated by the House in its collective capacity. I am also very thankful to each individual member of this body for his personal treatment of me. I shall lay down the gavel and the high office you clothed me with filled with good feeling towards each member of this House. I have been at times impatient and sometimes severe with members, but I have never purposely harshly treated any member. I have become warmly attached to and possessed of a high admiration, not only for the high character of this House as a parliamentary body, but for all its individual members. I heartily thank the House for its vote of thanks.

“The duties of a Speaker are of the most delicate and critical kind. His decisions are in the main made without time for deliberation and are often very far-reaching and controlling in the legislation of the country on important matters, and they call out the severest criticism.

“The rules of this House, which leave to the Speaker the onerous

duty and delicate task of recognizing individuals to present their matters for legislation, render the office in that respect an exceedingly unpleasant one. No member should have the legislation he desires depend upon the individual recognition of the Speaker, and no Speaker should be compelled to decide between members having matters of possibly equal importance or of equal right to his recognition.

"I suggest here that the time will soon come when another mode will have to be adopted which will relieve both the Speaker and individual members from this exceedingly embarrassing if not dangerous power.

"During my administration in the chair very many important questions have been decided by me, and I do not flatter myself that I have, in the hurry of these decisions, made no mistakes. But I do take great pride in being able to say that no parliamentary decision of mine has been overruled by the judgment of this almost evenly politically balanced House, although many appeals have been taken.

"I congratulate each member of this House upon what has been accomplished by him in the discharge of the important duties of a Representative, and with the sincerest hope that all may return safely to their homes, and wishing each a successful and happy future during life, I now exercise my last official duty as presiding officer of this House by declaring the term of this House under the Constitution of the United States at an end, and that it shall stand adjourned *sine die*. (Hearty and continued applause.)"—*Con. Record*, Vol. xiv., Part IV., p. 3776.

I was the caucus nominee and voted for by my party friends for Speaker of the Forty-eighth Congress, but Mr. Carlisle was elected, the Democrats being in the majority. I served on the Committees on Appropriations and Rules of the Forty-eighth Congress, and performed much hard work. I participated actively in much of the general business of this House, and in the debates. On January 25, 1884, I made an extended speech against a bill for the relief of Fitz-John Porter, by which it was proposed to make him "Colonel in the Army," and thus to exonerate him from the odium of his conduct while under General Pope, August 29, 1862, at the Second

Bull Run, as found by a general court-martial. I advocated (January 5, 1885) pensioning Mexican soldiers. I spoke on various other subjects, and especially advocated (February 20, 1885) the increase of the naval strength of the government so that it might protect our commerce on the high seas in peace, guard our boundary coast line (in length, excluding Alaska, one and two thirds times the distance around the earth at the equator), and successfully cope, should war come, with any naval power of the world.

My principal work in this Congress was in the rooms of the Committee on Appropriations in the preparation of bills. Hon. Samuel J. Randall (Democrat) of Pennsylvania was Chairman of this committee. He was conscientious, industrious, and honest, absolutely without favorites, personal and political, in the making of appropriations. This committee, chiefly, too, by the labor of a very few of its members, each annual session prepared bills for the appropriation of hundreds of millions of dollars, which (with the rarest exception) passed the House without question (and ultimately became laws), the members generally knowing little or nothing as to the honesty or special necessity, if even the purpose, of the appropriations made. In the preparation of these bills the expenditures and estimates in detail of all the departments of the government including all branches of the public service and all special matters of expense, liability, and obligation, were examined and scrutinized, to avoid errors, injustice to the government or individuals, extravagance, or fraud. I have, covering as many as five of the last days of a session, remained with Mr. Randall in the committee rooms at the Capitol, working, almost uninterruptedly, night and day, to complete the bills necessary to be passed before adjournment. This committee work brought no immunity from attendance in the House.

My service in Congress ended March 4, 1885, since which time I have participated in public and political affairs as a private citizen, and assiduously pursued the practice of the law and attended to my personal affairs; writing this volume,

mainly, in the winter nights of 1896 and 1897, incident to an otherwise busy life.

III

SERVICE IN SPANISH WAR

After the foregoing was written, a war arose between the United States and Spain, growing out of the latter's bad government of Cuba, which Spain had held (except for a short time) since its discovery in 1492.

Spain was only partially successful in putting down the ten years' (1868-1877) struggle of the Cubans for independence, and was forced to agree (1876) to give the inhabitants of Cuba all the rights, representation in the Cortes included, of Spanish citizens. This agreement was not kept, and in February, 1895, a new insurrection broke out, supported by the mass of the Cuban population, especially by those residing outside of the principal coast cities. Notwithstanding Spain employed in Cuba her best regular troops as well as volunteers, she failed to put down this insurrection. Governor-General Weyler inaugurated fire and slaughter wherever the Spanish armies could penetrate, not sparing non-combatants, and, February 16, 1896, he adopted the inhuman policy of forcing the rural inhabitants from their homes into closely circumscribed so-called military zones, where they were left unprovided with food, and hence to die. Under Weyler's cruel methods and policy about one third (600,000) of the non-combatant inhabitants of the island were killed or died of starvation and incident disease before the end of the Spanish-American War. Yet a war was maintained by the insurgents under the leadership of able men, inspired with a patriotic desire for freedom and independence. The barbarity of the reconcentrado policy excited, throughout the civilized world, deep sympathy for the Cubans, and, April 6, 1896, a resolution passed Congress, expressing the opinion that a "state of war existed in Cuba," and declaring that the United States should maintain a strict



J. WARREN KEIFER,
MAJOR-GENERAL OF VOLUNTEERS.
(From a photograph, 1898.)

neutrality, but accord to each of the contending powers "the rights of belligerents in the ports and territory of the United States," and proposing that the friendly offices of the United States "be offered by the President to the Spanish Government for the recognition of the independence of Cuba." This resolution and the proffered friendly offices bore no fruit. To meet a possible attack upon our citizens in Havana, the battle-ship *Maine*, commanded by Captain C. D. Sigsbee, was sent there in January, 1898. It was peacefully anchored in the harbor, where, February 15th, it was destroyed by what was generally believed to have been a sub-marine mine, designedly exploded by unauthorized Spaniards. Of its officers and crew 266 perished, and the splendid war-ship was totally destroyed.

Preparations for war commenced at once in our country. Congress appropriated \$50,000,000 "for the national defence."

It also, April 18, 1898, passed joint resolutions, declaring: "That the people of the island of Cuba are, and of right ought to be, free and independent"; demanding of Spain that it "at once relinquish its authority and government in the island of Cuba, and withdraw its land and naval forces from Cuba and Cuban waters"; authorizing the President "to use the entire land and naval forces of the United States . . . and the militia of the several States, to such an extent as may be necessary to carry these resolutions into effect," but disclaiming that the United States had "any intention to exercise sovereignty, jurisdiction, or control over said island, except for the pacification thereof," and asserting its determination that when that was completed to "leave the government and control of the island to its people." The resolutions were approved by the President April 20th, and in themselves had the effect of a declaration of war. The Spanish Minister at once demanded his passports and departed from Washington. The American Minister at Madrid was handed his passports on the morning of April 21, 1898, without being permitted to present the resolutions to the Spanish authorities. Congress, April 25th, by law, declared that war

existed between the United States and Spain since and including April 21, 1898.

Thus, after a long peace of thirty-three years, our country was again to engage in war, and with an old and once powerful and war-like nation, which must be waged both by sea and land.

I do not intend to write a history of the one hundred and fourteen days' war that ensued. I merely summarize the conditions which caused me to turn from civil pursuits and a quiet home to again take up the activities of a military life in war.

The President called for volunteers (125,000 April 23d, and 75,000 May 25th), and, June 9th, I was, by him, appointed, and, June 14th, 1898, unanimously confirmed by the United States Senate, a Major-General of Volunteers. I was the only person in civil life from a northern State, or who had served in the Union Army in the Civil War but never in the regular Army, on whom was originally conferred that high rank in the Spanish-American War.

This rank was conferred on Fitzhugh Lee of Virginia, Joseph Wheeler of Alabama, and Matthew C. Butler of South Carolina, each of whom had served as a general officer in the Confederate Army; and on James H. Wilson of Delaware, who had served as a Major-General in the Union Army in the Civil War. These four were from civil life, but, save Butler, each was a graduate of West Point and had served in the United States Army.

Hon. William J. Sewell of New Jersey declined an appointment to that rank, and Francis V. Greene of New York was appointed after the protocol was signed. He was a graduate of West Point, and had served in the United States Army. No other Major-General was appointed from civil life before the treaty of peace.

A feature of the Spanish War was the alacrity with which ex-Confederates and Southern men tendered their services to sustain it. It was worth the cost of the war, to demonstrate the patriotism of the whole people, and their readiness to unite under one flag and fight in a common cause.

I was assigned to the Seventh Army Corps, then being organized, with headquarters at Jacksonville, Florida. I reported there to Major-General Fitzhugh Lee, its commander, and was assigned to the First Division, then located at Miami, 366 miles farther south, on the east coast of Florida, at the terminus of railroad transportation. I assumed command of the Division, July 7th, with headquarters at Miami. It then numbered about 7500 officers and enlisted men. My tents were pitched in a cocoanut grove on the shore of the Biscayne Bay. The corps had been designated to lead an early attack on Havana. I had exercised no military command for a third of a century, and had misgivings of my ability to discharge, properly, the important duties. This feeling was not decreased by the fact that the division was composed of southern troops—1st and 2d Louisiana; 1st and 2d Alabama; and 1st and 2d Texas Volunteer Infantry regiments. Some of these regiments and many of the companies were commanded by ex-Confederate officers, and one brigade—the Second—was commanded by Brigadier-General W. W. Gordon, an ex-Confederate officer from Georgia. He commanded this brigade until the protocol, when he was made one of the evacuation commissioners for Porto Rico. Several of the staff were sons of Confederate officers. The only officer, other than staff-officers, who was not southern, was Brigadier-General Loyd Wheaton, who commanded the First Brigade. He had served in the Union Army in the Civil War from Illinois, and became, after that war, an officer in the United States Army, from which he was appointed a general officer of Volunteers in the Spanish War. Wheaton remained in my command until after our army occupied Havana, and commanded a division that entered that city, January 1, 1899, then shortly thereafter was ordered to the Philippines, where he has, in several battles with the Filipinos, distinguished himself, and deservedly acquired fame.

I soon, however, became familiar with my duties, and the command was a most agreeable and pleasant one. I became warmly attached to and proud of it; and it was, throughout,

loyal to me. No better volunteer soldiers were ever mustered; and if occasion had arisen they would have proved their skill and valor by heroic deeds and willing sacrifices.

The camp at Miami was the farthest south of any in the United States, consequently the hottest, and by reason of its situation near the Everglades and the Miami River (their principal outlet to the sea) the water proved bad, and only obtainable for the troops through pipes laid on the rocky surface of the earth from the Everglades at the head of the river. It thus came warm, and sometimes offensive by reason of vegetable matter contained in it. The reefs—an extension of the Florida Reefs—which lay four miles from the west shore of the bay, cut off easterly sea breezes; and the mosquitoes were at times so numerous as to make life almost unbearable. All possible was done for the health and comfort of the command. Notwithstanding the location, hotness of the season, and bad general conditions, the health of the soldiers was better, numbers considered, than in any other camp in the United States. A good military hospital was established under capable medical officers, and, through some patriotic ladies—the wife and daughter of General W. W. Gordon and others—a convalescent hospital was established where the greatest care was taken of the sick, and wholesome delicacies were provided for them. A feeling of unrest amounting to dissatisfaction, however, arose, which caused the War Department to order my command to Camp Cuba Libre, Jacksonville, Florida. It was accordingly transported there by rail early in August, my headquarters having been at Miami just one month. My division was then camped in proximity to the St. John's River at Fairfield, immediately east of Jacksonville. My headquarters tents were pitched in a pine forest. Here the general conditions were better than at Miami, though much sickness, chiefly typhoid and malarial fevers, prevailed in the corps, my own division having a far less per centum of cases than either of the other two. The water was artesian and good, but the absence of anything like a clay soil rendered it impossible to keep the camps well policed and the drainage was difficult.

Florida sand is not a disinfectant: clay is. This camp, however, had a smaller list of sick in proportion to numbers than was reported in other camps farther north.

There was added to my division at Jacksonville, before any were mustered out, the 1st Ohio (Colonel C. B. Hunt) and the 4th U. S. Volunteer Infantry (Colonel James S. Pettitt), the two constituting a third brigade, commanded by Colonel Hunt. My division then numbered about 11,000; the corps something over 32,000.

I commanded the corps, in the absence of General Lee, from the 14th to the 22d of August, 1898. Again, September 27th, I assumed command of the corps and retained it until October 6th, when I took a leave of absence home, returning *via* Washington for consultation with the authorities. I resumed command of the corps (then removed to Camp Onward, Savannah, Georgia), October 25th, and retained it until November 11th, 1898.

General Lee, being about to depart for Havana, Cuba, I assumed, December 8th, command of all the United States forces at Savannah, consisting of regulars and volunteers.

The President, William McKinley, the Secretary of War, R. A. Alger, and others of the President's Cabinet, visited Savannah, December 17th and 18th, and reviewed (17th), under my command, all the troops then there; about 16,000 of all arms, some of whom had seen service at Santiago, Cuba, and in Porto Rico.

The Springfield rifles with which the volunteers had been armed, were exchanged at Savannah for Krag-Joergensen magazine (calibre .30) rifles.

The troops while at Savannah were generally in good health, although a few cases of cerebro or spinal meningitis occurred, owing to frequent changes of temperature.

The secret of preserving the health of soldiers is in regular drill and exercise, ventilation of clothing, bedding, and tents, and in cleanliness of person and camps. Exposure to sun and air purifies and disinfects better than lime or chemicals.

I superintended the final equipment and shipment to Cuba

of about 16,000 troops; about one half were volunteers of the Seventh Corps, who went to Havana.

While at Jacksonville, the war with Spain having ended, a number of volunteer regiments were mustered out, and the Seventh Corps was reorganized into two divisions. The 1st Texas, Colonel W. H. Mabry (who died near Havana, January 4, 1899), and 2d Louisiana, Colonel Elmer E. Wood, only, were left of my original First Division, to which was added the 3d Nebraska, Colonel William Jennings Bryan (who resigned at Savannah December 10, 1898); the 4th Illinois, Colonel Eben Swift; the 9th Illinois, Colonel James R. Campbell, and the 2d South Carolina, Colonel Willie Jones. The first three regiments constituted the First Brigade, commanded by General Loyd Wheaton, and the last three, the Second Brigade, commanded by Brigadier-General Henry T. Douglas, who had served in the Confederate Army in the Civil War. He was an excellent officer.

I embarked for Havana on the 26th of December, 1898, with my headquarters, including my staff, provost-guard, etc., on the *Panama*, a ship captured from the Spanish early in the war. I arrived in Havana Harbor the evening of the 28th, and the next day reached Camp Columbia, southwest of Havana about eight miles, at Buena Vista, near Marianao, where my last military headquarters were established, in tents, as always before. The troops were prepared to take possession of Havana on its surrender by the Spaniards, January 1, 1899. Major-Generals Brooke, Lee, Ludlow, and some other officers attended to the ceremonial part in the surrender of the city, and it became my duty to march the Seventh Corps and other troops in the vicinity of Havana into it for the purpose of taking public and actual possession. I, accordingly, early New Year morning, moved my command, numbering, infantry, cavalry, and artillery, about 9000, to and along the sea-shore, crossing the Almendares River on pontoons, near its mouth, thence through Vedado to the foot of the Prado, opposite Morro Castle, located east of the neck of the harbor. The formal ceremonies being over (12 M.), the troops were



PRESIDENT MCKINLEY AND MAJOR-GENERALS

KEIFER,

SHAFTER,

LAWTON,

WHEELER.

(From a photograph taken on ship-deck at Savannah, Ga., November 17th, 1898.)

moved up the Prado, passing Major-General Brooke and others on the reviewing-stand at the Inglaterra Hotel, then through principal streets to camp, having made a march of about eighteen miles, under a tropical sun, the day being excessively hot for even that climate. The soldiers endured the march well. The day was a memorable one. A city which had been under monarchical rule for four hundred years witnessed the power of freedom, represented by the host of American soldiers, under the flag of a Republic, move triumphantly through its streets, with the avowed purpose of securing freedom to all the people. The Spanish residents did not partake of the joyous feeling or participate in the wild demonstrations of the Cuban inhabitants. The latter exhibited a frantic hilarity at times; then a dazed feeling seemed to come over them, in which condition they stood and stared, as in meditation. The natural longing to be free had possessed these people, but when they were confronted with the fact of personal freedom it was too much for them to fully realize, or to estimate what the absence of absolute tyranny meant for them. They appeared in the fronts and on the roofs of the houses, and along the sides of the streets, displaying all the tokens and symbols of happiness they possessed. Flowers were thrown in great profusion, and wild shouts went up from men, women, and children; especially from the children, as, in some way, they seemed to know that a severance of their country from Spain meant more for them than it did for the older people. The Cubans are of mixed races, though they are not to be despised. Some have pure Castilian blood, some are from other European countries, and some are of pure African descent, many of the latter having once been in slavery; but many of the Cubans proper are of mixed blood, including the Spanish, African, some Indian, and a general admixture of the people who early settled in the American tropics. There do not seem to be any race distinctions where Cubans alone are concerned. The African and those of mixed blood mingle freely together; and in the insurgent army officers of all ranks were chosen from the pure or mixed-blood African as freely as from others.

The Cuban colored people seem to be exceptionally intelligent and energetic, and have a high reputation as brave soldiers. The typical Cuban does not belong to the coast cities, the inhabitants of which are more distinctly Spanish, especially the dominant class. These cities did little towards the insurrections, and their inhabitants, as a mass, can claim little of the glory in making Cuba free or independent. Many of the principal officers of the Cuban army were educated men, and some were of a high order, capable of deeds, on the theatre of war, worthy of the best soldiers of any age. When our war with Spain broke out, the latter had over 200,000 regular soldiers, besides volunteers, on the island, and the insurgent bands were few in number, without good arms, with little ammunition and no quartermaster, commissary, or pay department. Cuba had no permanently located civil government, and the insurgents owned no ship on the seas, nor did they possess a single coast city, or a harbor where supplies could come to them from abroad. They having held the Spanish army at bay for years, and often confined large parts of it, almost in a state of siege, within cities and fortified lines, all circumstances considered, forces us to conclude that talent, skill, endurance, and bravery were possessed by the Cuban officers, and that the ranks were filled with devoted soldiers. The insurrections were of long duration (ten and four years), yet Spain, in 1898, had made no substantial progress in suppressing the last one, though the most barbarous methods were adopted. We exploit the partisan heroes of our Revolution, such as Francis Marion and others, yet they only acted with and against small bands, leaving our armies to meet the larger organized forces of the British. What is to be said of the Cuban patriot officer who, year by year, maintained, unsupported, a war for independence against a relentless foe, equipped with the best arms the world has yet known ?

My work in Cuba was confined to a military command, principally outside of the cities. My men were in carefully selected camps, which were constantly thoroughly policed and supplied with wholesome water, piped from the Vento

(Havana) Water-works. Thanks to a thorough enforcement of a good sanitary system, the general health of my command was good throughout, only a few cases of typhoid or malarial fever appeared, and there were less than half a dozen cases of yellow fever among my soldiers. There was no epidemic of any disease in the camp. The yellow fever cases developed among men who, out of curiosity, exposed themselves in foul places about old forts and wharves, or in the unused dungeons of Morro and other castles. Yellow fever is a *place* disease, not generally contagious by contact with the sick.

My time was taken up in Cuba in keeping the peace and preserving order, and with the care of the camps and field-hospitals, and, as throughout my military service, with the drill and discipline of my command, often turning the corps out for review by superior officers. I made incursions to the interior of the island, and observed the devastation of the magnificently beautiful country, with its stately royal palms, etc., and noted the depopulation, under Weyler's reconcentrado plan, of the richest and once most populous rural parts of the island. I saw the Cuban soldiers in their camps or bivouacs, and made the acquaintance of many of their officers, and formed a high regard for them; but it was no part of my duty to try to solve the great, yet unsettled, Cuban problem, and I must be silent here.¹

The muster out of the volunteers commenced again in March, 1899, and progressed rapidly. The Secretary of War visited Cuba, and with Major-Generals Brooke, Ludlow, Wilson, and other officers, reviewed what troops remained of the Seventh Corps, with others, near Marianao, March 29, 1899. On this occasion, my riding horses having been shipped away preparatory to my leaving Cuba, I rode a strange horse, which at a critical time in the review ran away, carrying me, in much danger, some distance from the reviewing officers. I recovered control of the horse, but dismounted him and mounted another, which proved equally untamed, and he likewise, a

¹ My views of the situation in Cuba were expressed in a letter to General Corbin, dated January 28, 1899. Appendix E.

little later, attempted to run afield or cast me off. Fortunately these exceptional accidents terminated without injury; and with that review ended my public military service—*forever*.

The fatal illness of my beloved and devoted wife and her death (March 12, 1899) caused me (with my son) to go to my Ohio home. I returned to Cuba with Captain Horace C. Keifer, who was on my staff continuously during my service in the Spanish War.

All arrangements having been completed for the early muster out of the volunteers of the Seventh Corps not already gone, and my mission in the army being practically at an end, and my command proper disbanded, I took ship (the *Yarmouth*) in Havana Harbor, March 30th, and proceeded *via* Port Tampa, home, where I was mustered out of the military service May 12, 1899, having been in the army as a Major-General eleven months and three days. During my service in the field in the Spanish War I was not off duty on account of illness, injury, or accident.

I had an attack of typhoid fever, at my home in April, from which I soon recovered, doubtless contracted while travelling to or from Cuba.

I had now lived above five years in a tent, or without shelter, in war times, through all seasons, and being in my sixty-fourth year, gave up all inclination to continue in military life, knowing the field is for younger men. My duties in the army, though always arduous, were pleasant, hence gratifying. I had no serious trouble with any officer or soldier, though I tried to do my duty in the discipline of my command. My personal attachment to superior and inferior officers, especially members of my military staff, was and is of no ordinary kind. I congratulate myself on being able to attach to me, loyally, some of the most accomplished, hard-working, conscientious, and highly educated officers of the United States Army, as well as others of the volunteers, the service has known. A list of officers (nine of whom were sons of former Confederate officers) who served, at some time, on my division staff in the field, is given in Appendix F.

Here this narrative must end with only a parting word as to the Spanish War.

Dewey destroyed the entire Spanish fleet, with much loss of life, in Manila Bay, May 1, 1898; seven Americans were wounded, none killed. Admiral Cervera, with the pride of the Spanish battle-ships, cruisers, and torpedo-boats, reached Cuban waters from Cape Verde Islands, and, May 19th, sailed into Santiago Harbor, where he was blockaded—"bottled up"—by Admirals Sampson and Schley's fleets. Cervera's fleet, in an attempt to escape, was totally destroyed, with a loss of above six hundred killed or drowned, and about two thousand captured, himself included, in two hours, by our navy under Sampson, on Sunday morning, July 3, 1899, with a loss of one American killed and one wounded. Other minor naval affairs occurred, all disastrous to the Spanish. Cervera's entry into Santiago Harbor caused previous plans for the movement of the army to be changed.

The bulk of the regular army, under Major-General Wm. R. Shafter, was assembled at Port Tampa, from whence they were transported to and landed (June 24th) at Guantanamo Bay, near Santiago. They were there joined by a body of Cuban troops under General Garcia. Fighting commenced at once and continued irregularly at Siboney, El Caney, San Juan Hill, etc., the principal battles being fought on the 1st and 2d of July. The next day a demand was made on the Spanish commander (Torre) for the surrender of his army and Santiago. This was acceded to, after much negotiation, July 17, 1898, including the province of Santiago and 22,000 troops, in number exceeding Shafter's entire available force. The display of skill and bravery by officers and men of our small army (principally regulars) at Santiago never was excelled. Our loss in the series of battles there was, killed, 22 officers and 208 men; wounded, 81 officers and 1203 men. A Porto Rico campaign was then organized. General Miles wired the War Department, about July 18th, to send me with my division (then in camp at Miami) to make up his Porto Rico expedition. His request was not carried out, and it thus happened that no

soldier of a Southern State volunteer organization fired a hostile shot during the Spanish War. Ponce was taken July 25th, followed by an invasion of the island from the south. An affair took place, August 10th, and operations here, as elsewhere, were terminated by the *protocol*. Manila was surrendered August 13th, the day after the protocol was signed. This was the last offensive land operation of the Spanish War. The invasion of Porto Rico cost us 3 killed and 40 wounded.

Through the intervention of Cambon, the French Ambassador at Washington, negotiations were opened which resulted in a protocol which bound Spain to relinquish all sovereignty over Cuba, to cede Porto Rico and other West India island possessions to the United States, and it provided for a Commission to agree upon a treaty of peace, to meet in Paris, not later than October 1, 1898; also provided for Commissions to regulate the evacuation of Cuba and Porto Rico.

The treaty was signed in Paris December 10, 1898; was submitted by the President to the Senate January 11, 1899, and ratified by it, and its ratification approved by him, February 6, 1899. The Queen of Spain ratified the treaty March 19, 1899, and its ratifications were exchanged and proclaimed at Washington April 11, 1899. It provided for the cession, also, to the United States of the Philippine Islands and the payment of \$20,000,000 therefor.

The total casualties in battle, during the war, in our navy, were 17 killed and 67 wounded (no naval officer injured); and, in our army, 23 officers and 257 men killed, and 113 officers and 1464 men wounded; grand total, 297 killed and 1644 wounded, of all arms of the service.

The deaths from disease and causes other than battle, in camps and at sea, were, 80 officers and 2485 enlisted men. Many died at their homes of disease; some of wounds.

An insurrection broke out in the Philippines in February, 1899, which is not yet suppressed.

The war was not bloody, and the end attained in the cause of humanity and liberty is a justification of it; but whether the acquisition of extensive tropical and distant island possessions

was wise, or will tend to perpetuate our Republic and spread constitutional liberty, remains to be shown by the infallible test of time. Our sovereignty over Cuba, thus far, appears to be a friendly usurpation, without right, professedly in the interest of humanity, civilization, and good government. Our acquisition of Porto Rico and the Philippine Islands, all in the tropics, is a new national departure which may prove wise or not, according as we deal justly and mercifully with the people who inhabit them. It may be in the Divine plan that these countries should pass under a more beneficent, enduring, newer, and higher civilization, to be guided and dominated by a people speaking the English tongue.





APPENDIX B

IT is due from me, and it gives me pleasure to mention some of the deserving officers of the 110th Ohio Volunteer Infantry.

Lieutenant-Colonel Wm. N. Foster served for a time with credit. Major Otho H. Binkley, later Lieutenant-Colonel and brevetted Colonel by the President for distinguished services, Captain Wm. S. McElwain, who became Major and was killed in the battle of the Wilderness, Captain Aaron Spangler, later a Major and brevetted Lieutenant-Colonel for gallantry, Captains Wm. D. Alexander, Nathan S. Smith (an eminent Presbyterian divine), Wm. R. Moore, (died of disease while acting as Assistant Inspector-General on my staff), Joseph C. Ullery, Joseph G. Snodgrass, Luther Brown (wounded at Monocacy, brevetted Major for gallantry, and for a time Provost-Marshal of a division), these all were accomplished soldiers and fought on many fields with distinction. Lieutenants Joseph B. Van Eaton, Wesley Devenney and Wm. H. Harry, each of whom served as Adjutant, were all promoted from non-commissioned officers to Lieutenant, then to Captain, each wounded, Devenney mortally at the battle of Opequon.

Lieutenants Albert M. Starke (regimental Quartermaster), E. A. Shepherd, Wm. D. Shellenberger (twice wounded), Wm. L. Cron, John T. Shearer, Charles M. Gross, Henry H. Stevens (killed in assault on Petersburg April 2, 1865), Wm. A. Hathaway (for a time Assistant Adjutant-General on my staff, and killed at Monocacy), Alexander Trimble (died of a wound received at battle of Opequon), George P. Boyer, Elam Harter, John M. Smith (killed in Wilderness), Joseph McKnight (mortally wounded in Wilderness), and Thomas J. Weakley, each became a Captain and were all gallant and more than usually efficient officers, most of whom were either killed or wounded in battle. Lieutenants Joshua S. Deeter

and Edward S. Simes, promoted from privates, both wounded in the battle of Opequon, the former mortally, were likewise gallant officers. Lieutenant Paris Horney who heroically fought at Winchester in June, 1863, until surrounded and captured, died in prison at Columbia, S. C. Lieutenant Robert W. Wiley served as my aide-de-camp and especially distinguished himself. Lieutenant Henry Y. Rush served gallantly until broken by disease, when he resigned and resumed his calling (minister of the Gospel), in which he is now eminent ; also as a writer. Lieutenant James A. Fox was promoted from Sergeant-Major, served on staff duty, and was killed leading a company in the battle of Orange Grove.

Wm. L. Shaw was promoted to Captain from Lieutenant and brevetted Major by the President for distinguished services. He served on division-staff and on cavalry-corps staff duty for a time in Rosecrans' army, and for a considerable time was my Assistant Inspector or Assistant Adjutant-General. He was an energetic and capable officer. Those of the regiment who bore the musket in the ranks equally deserve mention for what they did and for the sacrifices they made for their country; but the story of the 110th Ohio is elsewhere told.¹

¹ John W. Warrington and John B. Elam, now eminent lawyers, the former in Cincinnati, the latter in Indianapolis, served as private soldiers in this regiment. Elam was severely wounded at Cold Harbor June 3, 1864, and Warrington in the successful assault of the Sixth Corps at Petersburg April 2, 1865.





APPENDIX C

FAREWELL ORDER

“HEADQ’RS 2D BRIG., 3D DIV., 6TH CORPS, ARMY OF POTOMAC,
“CAMP NEAR WASHINGTON, D.C., June 15th., A.D. 1865.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 28.

“OFFICERS AND SOLDIERS: This command will soon be broken up in its organization. It is sincerely hoped that each man may soon be permitted to return to his home, family, and friends, to enjoy their blessings and that of a peaceful, free, and happy people.

“The great length of time I have had the honor to command you has led to no ordinary attachment. The many hardships, trials and dangers we have shared together, and the distinguished services you have performed in camp, on the march, and upon the field of battle, have long since endeared you to me. I shall ever be proud to have been your commander, and will cherish a lasting recollection of both officers and men. Your efficient services and gallant conduct in behalf of *human rights* and *human freedom* will not be overlooked and forgotten by a grateful country.

“I cannot repress the deepest feelings of sadness upon parting with you.

“I mourn with you, and share in your sorrow, for the many brave comrades who have fallen in battle and have been stricken down with disease. Let us revere their memories and emulate their noble character and goodness. A proud and great nation will not neglect their afflicted families. The many disabled officers and soldiers will also be cared for by a grateful people and an affluent country.

“You have a proud name as soldiers; and I trust that, at your homes, you will so conduct yourselves that you will be honored and respected as good citizens.

"I shall part with you entertaining the sincerest feelings of affection and kindness for all, hoping that it may be my good fortune to meet and greet you in future as honored citizens and friends.

"J. WARREN KEIFER."

*Summary of Casualties in Regiments of the Second Brigade,
Third Division, Third and Sixth Army Corps, 1863-65*

	KILLED.		WOUNDED.		TOTAL.		AGGREGATE.
	Officers.	En. Men.	Officers.	En. Men.	Officers.	En. Men.	
110th Ohio Infantry.....	10	102	18	443	28	545	573
122d Ohio Infantry.....	7	92	17	432	24	524	548
126th Ohio Infantry.....	9	111	10	379	19	490	509
6th Maryland Infantry.....	7	103	21	213	28	316	344
138th Pennsylvania Infantry..	5	120	16	223	21	343	364
67th Pennsylvania Infantry...	2	90	3	130	5	220	224
9th N. Y. Heavy Artillery....	14	204	16	590	30	794	824
Total	54	812	101	2410	155	3232	3387





APPENDIX D

"SPRINGFIELD, OHIO, October 22, 1888.

"GENERAL HORATIO G. WRIGHT, WASHINGTON, D. C.

"*My Dear Friend*,—After expressing to you that high regard I have always had for you, and also expressing the hope that your health is good, also that of your family, I have the honor to call your attention to the following matter, of some interest to you no doubt.

"General R. S. Ewell, of date of December 20, 1865, in the form of a report addressed to General R. E. Lee, to be found in Vol. XIII., *Southern Historical Papers*, page 247, in speaking of the battle of Sailor's Creek, after having concluded his general report of that battle says :

"'I was informed at General Wright's headquarters, whither I was carried after my capture, that 30,000 men were engaged with us when we surrendered, viz., two infantry corps and Custer's and Merritt's divisions of cavalry, the whole under command of General Sheridan.'

"On page 257, same book, in a note appended to a report of the same battle, by General G. W. C. Lee, he says :

"'I was told, after my capture, that the enemy had two corps of infantry and three divisions of cavalry opposed to us at Sailor's Creek.'

"Now, as I know you commanded the infantry engaged on the Union side in that battle from first to last, and that no infantry troops save of your corps there fought under you, that only a portion of the Third Division (in which I was then serving) was present, and General Frank Wheaton's division of the Sixth Corps was the only other infantry division there, though I am not quite sure that his entire division was up and engaged in the battle at the time of the assault, overthrow, and destruction of General Ewell's forces,

and my recollection is quite clear that General G. W. Getty's division of your corps did not arrive on the field in time for the battle, I am certain Generals Ewell and G. W. C. Lee have fallen into a grave error. We certainly captured more men in the Sailor's Creek battle than Ewell and G. W. C. Lee say were engaged on the Confederate side.

"Since the war, there seems to be a disposition to disparage the Northern soldiers by representing a small number of Confederate troops engaged with a very large number of Union troops. The above is to my mind simply an illustration of what I find running through the reports, letters, and speeches of Southern officers.

"As I am writing something from time to time in a fugitive way, and may some time write with a view to a more connected history of the war, in so far as it came under my personal observation, I should be very much obliged to you if you will write me a letter on this subject as full as you feel that you have time, and allow me to make such use of it as I may think best. I wish I had a copy of your report of this battle, etc. Where can I get it?

"Believe me yours, with the highest esteem,

"J. WARREN KEIFER."

"WASHINGTON, November 3, 1888.

"1203 N STREET, N.W.

"DEAR GENERAL KEIFER :

"I have never seen or before heard of the report of General R. S. Ewell to which you refer, in which you say he states that he was informed at my headquarters, to which he was carried after his capture at Sailor's Creek, 'that 30,000 men were engaged with us when we surrendered—viz., two infantry corps, and Custer's and Merritt's divisions of cavalry—the whole under the command of General Sheridan.'

"General Ewell was entirely mistaken in regard to the strength of the infantry opposed to him. Instead of two infantry corps, there were only two divisions—the First and Third of the Sixth Corps, the Second Division not having come up till the battle was nearly over, and taking no part in the fight. He may have been correct as regards the two divisions of cavalry, though I had not supposed it to be so strong. Its part in the battle was important, as, by getting in the rear of the Confederate force, the latter, after being broken by

the infantry attack, and its retreat cut off, was compelled to surrender. I never knew accurately the number captured, but General Sheridan and myself estimated it at about 10,000.

"Of course, the statement of General G. W. C. Lee, to which you refer, is also erroneous as regards the strength opposed to the Confederate force.

"You are quite correct in your statement that you know that I commanded the infantry engaged on the Union side in that battle, from first to last. General Sheridan was with me as our troops were coming up, but he left before the battle commenced, to join the cavalry, as I supposed, and I was not aware that he claimed to be in command of the combined infantry and cavalry force till some time subsequent to the battle, when he called upon me for a report. This I declined to make, on the ground that I was under the orders of General Meade only, the commander of the Army of the Potomac. General Grant, to whom the matter was referred by General Sheridan, having decided that I should make a report to the latter, I sent him a copy of my report of the battle, which I had already made to General Meade. I regret that I have no copy of the report, or I should send it to you with pleasure. I presume that it will soon be published in the official records of the Rebellion. All the records of the Sixth Corps were turned in to the Adjutant-General of the Army, as required by the Army Regulations, on the discontinuance of our organization, and are, I presume, accessible to any who desire to examine them.

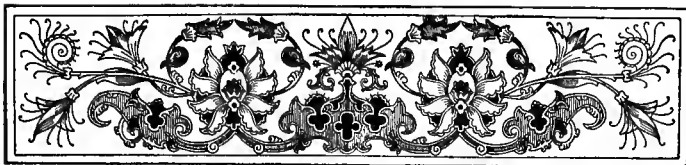
"With the most sincere good wishes for your health and prosperity,

"I am, very truly yours,

"H. G. WRIGHT.

GENERAL J. WARREN KEIFER, Springfield, Ohio."





APPENDIX E

"HEADQUARTERS FIRST DIVISION, SEVENTH ARMY CORPS,
"CAMP COLUMBIA, HAVANA, CUBA, January 28, 1899.

"GENERAL HENRY C. CORBIN,
"ADJUTANT-GENERAL U.S.A.,
"WASHINGTON, D.C.

"*Sir* :—I dislike to take your time, but I hope you will pardon me for writing you this purely unofficial letter, relative to the situation in Cuba as it appears to me after a month's investigation while serving here. Necessarily, to keep in bounds, I must generalize and not always give reasons for opinions. This is not written in any spirit of criticism, or of dissatisfaction with my own position here; in fact, I am satisfied with my command, and am very well treated by everybody about and around me. Major-Generals Brooke and Lee are both very kind to me. But to the subject. I shall not attempt to exhaust it.

"Cuba is now prostrate and her people quiet. This applies to all classes,—Cubans, Spaniards, citizens, and soldiers,—including those who upheld the insurrection and those who did not, and whether living in cities or in country districts. I say this after having been in touch with officers and soldiers of the Cuban army, and others.

"The reconcentrados are about all dead, and the few living are too weak to soon recover, even if fed. The attempts to feed them are, necessarily, largely failures, and must continue to be until some provision can be made to organize and remove the helpless, broken families from congested places, where it is impossible to house them comfortably, and place them in homes in the country districts. These people are still dying under our eyes. The food we give them they are not strong enough to eat, save the rice. Some of my officers were recently shown at San Jose de las Lajas, this province, one coffin (kept for convenience on a hand-cart) that had recently

done duty in the burial of about five thousand Cubans. But instances need not be given when it is known that above seven hundred thousand Cuban non-combatants have been killed or have died of starvation in the past two or three years, many of them not buried, but their bones were picked by the buzzards. The island is a charnel-house of dead. Every graveyard has piles of exposed human bones, and the earth has been strewn with them outside of cities and towns. There were many killed who were not actual insurgents, but Cubans, women and children included. The deaths left broken families; many orphans, who do not know who their parents were. Many owners of land and their entire families and friends have been killed or died, and there is no one to claim the land. This in some of the richest districts is quite the rule.

"Outside of a little circle about Havana, the plantations in general have been destroyed, including houses and other buildings, fruit trees, banana plants, cane fields, farm implements, stock, etc., and the wells filled up, first being polluted by throwing dead bodies of Cubans and animals in them.

"The soil is marvellously rich. It shows no signs of exhaustion by cultivation, and I think it never will. Tobacco, sugar-cane, pine-apples, oranges, bananas, plantain, etc., to say nothing of corn, sweet potatoes, Irish potatoes, onions, beans, grasses, etc., will grow, if given the slightest chance. Two, three, and as high as four crops can easily be grown in one year. You will say, Why do not the people grow them? They have no bread to eat while they labor, nor have they any oxen or mules,—horses are out of the question and not suitable to till land here,—or seed, or implements, or anything. They die in the midst of the most extraordinary riches.

"Owners of much of the land in the interior districts, who have survived, are as helpless as the poorest laborers.

"The exceptions are confined to remote little valleys, and mountain places where the insurgents held constant control, and there too they are poor, having in the past, and still, to maintain the Cuban soldiers, regular and irregular.

"Only provision for food for a short time and means to get animals, farm implements, etc., will end the present conditions and put the people of the island on the road to prosperity. Spasmodic issues of army rations give only temporary relief and tend to encourage idleness.

“Another race of people might come, but they could not soon get titles to lands, if ever.

“There is no civil government here, not even in form. Gomez and his insurgent followers are still in their mountain fastnesses, and whatever of organizations they have are irregular, and military. They are biding their time for something, not yet fully developed.

“Our government here is military, disguise it as we may. If it were anything else, it would soon fail. All attempts at a hermaphroditical government here must also fail, as it has everywhere. It must be all American or all Cuban. The Spaniards here, though they predominate in the principal cities, do not yet count as a factor, although they are for annexation ; this to save their estates and for personal safety. Any attempts to build up a Cuban government by the use of a few Cubans and Spaniards in Havana and other cities, no matter what their character for intelligence and peaceableness may be, must end in disaster, and a little later, in a wild repetition of war and bloodshed. Those who organized and maintained, through the dreadful years of the past, the insurrection against Spanish power and suffered so much in their estates and families, are going to have a say in the future control of this island, and if it is to be annexed to the United States, they will have to be consulted or a bloody guerrilla war will ensue. They are now exhausted, and tired and sick of war, but they are used to it, and familiar with death, and already they are preparing and calculating on a war much easier for them to wage against the United States than against Spain, as the United States is not expected to be so barbarous in the treatment of their remaining women and children ; and such people can reasonably calculate on help from sympathizers, adventurers, etc., of other countries, especially South American, and people of kindred races and instincts. The cry of freedom and liberty is always seductive and brings friends.

“The Cuban people now being recognized here, with rare exceptions, had nothing to do with maintaining the insurrection, but remained within the cities and lines of the Spanish army, pretending to be loyal to Spain, if they were not so in fact. They were too cowardly to fight, and too avaricious to render material aid to those in the field. All such are under the ban of suspicion in the eyes of the real Cuban insurgents, no matter what their pretensions may be. Any government organized with such persons at the head will,

sooner or later, be overthrown in blood, if not otherwise. The Cubans, like other people, desire offices, and the war-patriots of Cuba are no exceptions, and will fight for power, and when the test comes the mass of Cubans in and out of the cities will be with the real insurgent leaders. Already the latter are resolving not to take office until they are recognized and given a full share of power.

"Ignoring such people now is easy; later they will defy our country and be its eternal enemies, with the civilized world in sympathy with them. The Spaniards, other foreigners, and home-staying Cuban politicians are the people who now get a hearing, but wait and listen for what is to come! Our people will appear to the real Cubans as their despoilers and oppressors, instead of liberators.

"I am in favor of annexation, and the sooner the better, but the Cuban patriots must first form a government, provisional or otherwise, and consent to annexation. This at first would have been easy, even now possible, to be brought about, but we are fast drifting away from annexation or a peaceful solution of the great and anomalous Cuban problem confronting us.

"The Cuban people are not to be despised; they are a mixed race it is true, but they have talked of and fought for freedom too many years not to know something of the sweet fruits of individual liberty. They are polite and affable, but yet suspicious, as all people are who have been oppressed. It is said they may be resentful of the real or imaginary wrongs they have suffered from the Spaniards. Grant this. Who would not, with their homes as open graveyards strewn with the dead of their families, etc.? It is not best or safe to believe all the tales told of Gomez and his followers by the Spaniards or city Cubans.

"However, I do not believe that a reorganization, with the insurgents fairly recognized, would be as bad as these interested people claim, or would be half so bloody as any organized civil government will prove to be with them left out. Woe to the Spaniard in the island if war again breaks out here! Gomez is at the head of the Cuban military forces, but there are others, generally good men, who are recognized heads of the Cuban insurgent civil power. These are the people who will have to be dealt with, or they will deal with whatever power may be set up.

"The Cuban is not so ignorant as is often claimed. Generally all classes can read and write. Now they have no redress for wrongs

against person or property. (They have no civil courts ; only a little remaining semblance of Spanish authority in a few places.)

"With a simple form of civil government they could soon have this, and they could be schooled in the primary principles of civil government, such as self-reliance, knowledge of their just rights, duty to others, and others' duty to them. Cubans have more need of justices of the peace than of justices of a Supreme Court. The people want and need quick redress against trespassers, and in the collection of debts, etc.

"A simple code of laws, primitive in character, but comprehensive and easily understood, yet adequate to bring speedy relief, is what is now most needed. Such laws could be passed by a provisional legislative body. Light taxes for a few years should be assessed. Good land laws with a reasonable law of limitations should be made. Land titles then soon would be settled. The established government should take up and lease, pending the adjustment of titles, all tillable and unoccupied land. Much of this land, even the best of it (which would be cheap at two hundred dollars per acre), would escheat for the want of living owners or descendants. The escheated lands would make a large revenue for the State. Much of the land in cultivation is capable of netting each year, with only fair cultivation in tobacco, etc., one thousand dollars per acre. These lands have had, and soon should have again, a value of from two to five hundred and often one thousand dollars per acre.

"Cuba (under Spanish semi-barbaric rule for four hundred years) could be transformed from a graveyard of open graves, the feeding-ground and paradise of vultures, to the richest and most ideally beautiful and most enchanting spot on the face of the earth, with a prosperous population on a high plane of civilization. Even the tropical diseases in Havana and other coast cities would disappear before modern methods of sanitation. In general, outside of a few cities, the island is healthful, notwithstanding the contaminating effect of the pestilential cities. Yellow fever, smallpox, and a few infectious diseases exist here continually, but they soon would disappear.

"The property owners, in spite of high taxes, have lived in this island in 'barbaric luxury,' partaking somewhat of *splendor*. This will be the case again, and much intensified, when touched by a civilization that regards the rights of man.

"The ease and comfort possible in such a place as this are too great to be appreciated by such plain hard-working persons as you and I. But——

"Yours most respectfully,

"J. WARREN KEIFER,

"Major-General Volunteers."





APPENDIX F

List of officers who served (at some time) on the division staff of Major-General Keifer in the Spanish War.

Personal Staff

CAPTAIN HORACE C. KEIFER (Ohio),
3d U. S. Vol. Engineers, Aide.

FIRST LIEUTENANT ALBERT C. THOMPSON, Jr. (Ohio),
U. S. Vol. Signal Corps, Aide.

FIRST LIEUTENANT EDWARD T. MILLER (Ohio),
U. S. Vol. Signal Corps, Aide.

SECOND LIEUTENANT DWIGHT E. AULTMAN (U.S.A.),
2d U. S. Artillery, Aide.

SECOND LIEUTENANT LEWIS W. BRANDER (Va.),
3d U. S. Vol. Infantry, Aide.

Division Staff

MAJOR BENJAMIN ALVORD (U.S.A.),
Chief Ordnance Officer. (U.S.V.)

MAJOR GEORGE L. HOBART (N. J.),
Assistant Adjutant-General. (U.S.V.)

MAJOR WILLIAM S. SCOTT (U.S.A.),
Assistant Adjutant-General. (U.S.V.)

MAJOR JOHN GARY EVANS (S. C.),
Inspector-General. (U.S.V.)

MAJOR JAMES M. MOODY (N. C.),
Chief Commissary of Subsistence. (U.S.V.)

- MAJOR JAMES M. ARRASMITH (U.S.A.),
Chief Commissary of Subsistence. (U.S.V.)
- CAPTAIN J. E. B. STUART (Va.),
Commissary of Subsistence. (U.S.V.)
- MAJOR NOBLE H. CREAGER (Md.),
Chief Quartermaster. (U.S.V.)
- MAJOR WILLIAM J. WHITE (Ohio),
Chief Quartermaster. (U.S.V.)
- CAPTAIN FRED W. COLE (Fla.),
Quartermaster. (U.S.V.)
- MAJOR JOHN L. CHAMBERLAIN (U.S.A.),
Chief Ordnance Officer. (U.S.V.)
- MAJOR GODFREY H. MACDONALD (U.S.A.),
Chief Ordnance Officer. (U.S.V.)
- MAJOR HUGH H. GORDON (Ga.),
Chief Engineer Officer. (U.S.V.)
- MAJOR D. M. APPEL (U.S.A.),
Chief Surgeon.
- MAJOR FRANCIS C. FORD (Texas),
Surgeon. (U.S.V.)
- MAJOR EDUARD BOECKMANN (Minn.),
Chief Surgeon. (U.S.V.)
- MAJOR JEFFERSON R. KEAN (U.S.A.),
Chief Surgeon. (U.S.V.)
- DR. SIDNEY MYERS (Ky.),
Contract Surgeon.
- FIRST LIEUTENANT O. C. DREW (Texas),
1st Texas Vol. Inf., Provost-Marshal.
- FIRST LIEUTENANT E. P. CLAYTON (Ill.),
4th Ill. Vol. Inf., Provost-Marshal.



APPENDIX G

FAREWELL ADDRESS

“HEADQUARTERS FIRST DIVISION, SEVENTH ARMY CORPS,

“CAMP COLUMBIA, HAVANA, CUBA, March 29, 1899.

“This Division will soon cease to exist by the muster out of the volunteer regiments composing it. I assumed command of it at Miami, Florida, July 6, 1898, and have commanded it (when not exercising a higher command including it) from that time at Miami, Florida, to August 6th; at Camp Cuba Libre, Jacksonville, Florida, to October 20th; at Camp Onward, Savannah, Georgia, to December 27th; at Camp Columbia, near Havana, Cuba, to the present.

“Through changes in regiments and other organizations, about twenty thousand officers and soldiers have served in the Division.

“Although not engaged in battle, the dangers from disease in tropical camps have been great, and many have died or have become broken in health. The Division has performed important service in maintaining the high standard of the volunteer soldier in time of war, and in doing guard duty in Cuba, preparatory to establishing a new civilization and a free government for a long-oppressed people. The varied trials and hardships of a soldier's life have been bravely and manfully met by the officers and soldiers of the Division. I have been proud to command it; and have only the warmest friendship for all who composed it. I will always take a deep interest in them. I am especially thankful to the officers who have from time to time served on my staff, for their loyalty to me, and their efficiency and zeal in performance of duty.

“I have now served in the Volunteer Army of the United States of America, in the Civil War and the war with Spain, five years, and on May 12, 1899, I will sheath my sword (in all probability) forever, conscious that I have tried to do my duty to my country.

"The troops of this Division will therefore be the last I shall ever command in peace or war. In sadness I bid all who compose the Division a farewell, wishing each officer and enlisted man success in the civil pursuits to which he is soon to return.

"J. WARREN KEIFER,

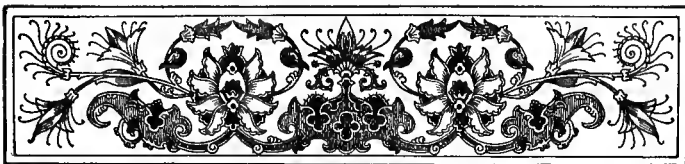
"Major-General of Volunteers.

"Official :

"HORACE C. KEIFER,

"Captain 3d U. S. Vol. Engrs., A.D.C."





INDEX

A

Abolitionists, named, i., 60, 61; inconsistencies of, 172
Abraham, the patriarch, owned and dealt in slaves, i., 2
Adams, John and Samuel, opposed to slavery and slave trade, i., 17, 42
Adams, John Q., prophesied slavery would go down in blood, i., 150
Alabama secedes (1861), i., 130
Alamo and Goliad, Texas, massacres at, i., 64
Alcidamas proclaimed against slavery, i., 6
Alexander the Great sold captives as slaves, i., 6, note.
Alexander III., Pope of Rome, proclaimed against slavery, i., 7
Alexander, E. P., General (C. S.), Chief of Artillery to Longstreet, Gettysburg, ii., 31
Alger, Russell A., Secretary of War, visits to and reviews of army, ii., 291, 295
Amelia Court-House, Va., concentration of Lee's Army at, ii., 198, 202; controversy as to subsistence at, 203, note.
American Anti-Slavery Society formed (1831), i., 61
American colonies, white slavery in, i., 2; Lord Mansfield's decision against slavery binding in, 8; slavery first introduced into (1619), 10
Ammen, Jacob, General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 257, note, 259; member Turchin court-martial, 279; superstition and anecdote relating to, 280
Anderson, N. L., Colonel (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 257
Anderson, Robert, Major (U. S.), re-

moves command from Fort Moultrie to Sumter, i., 158; demand on evacuation of Fort Sumter, 170; General, in command in Kentucky, 229; relieved, 231; at lowering and raising flag at Sumter, 171, note.
Anderson, R. H., General (C. S.), in Shenandoah Valley, ii., 109; at Sailor's Creek, 208, 209, 214
Anderson, —, Colonel (C. S.), mentioned, i., 217
Andress, L., Captain (U. S.), 138th Pa., killed at Brandy Station, ii., 56
Andrews, J. J., of Kentucky, Captain (U. S.), raids to Georgia, captures a locomotive, i., 266-271; captured, hung with others at Atlanta, 270
Antietam, battle of, reviewed, ii., 1, 2
Anti-slavery, agitators of (1831), and party, i., 61
Anti-slavery societies, denounced, i., 57, 61, 94; calendar's "John Brown Year," 115
Anti-Slavery Society (1804) proclaimed freedom and slavery could not exist together, i., 150
Appeal of Independent Democrats in Congress, signed and published (1854), i., 91, 92; its terms, 92; reviews legislation on slavery, 92; electrifies country, 93; Chase and Giddings authors of, 91; signers, 92; discussions in Senate on, 93
Appomattox Court-House, surrender of Lee at, ii., 220-227
Archer, F. H., General (C. S.), captured at Gettysburg, ii., 28
Area, Northwest Ter., i., 23; La. Province, 42, note; Texas, 66; original States and Territories, 88; homesteads granted, 102, note; District of Columbia, 145

- Arkansas, secedes (1861) from the Union, i., 135; refuses Union troops, joins Confederacy, 182
- Arkenoe, F. H., Captain 116th Ohio, killed at Winchester, Va., ii., 10, 11
- Arms, quality of (1861), i., 183, 184, and notes; transferred South, 161
- Armstrong, Frank C., Lieutenant (U. S.), fought at Bull Run then went into C. S. A., i., 163, note
- Army ball, at General Carr's headquarters, number in attendance, criticisms on, ii., 70
- Army of Northern Virginia (C. S.), movement of, to Gettysburg, Pa., ii., 25-27; retreats from Gettysburg, behind Rapidan, 33, 44; last advance and withdrawal south of Rapidan, 48-57; casualties in Wilderness campaign, 92; how organized and commanded, 186; fortified around Petersburg, 186; reorganized, 203; losses at Petersburg, 197; at Sailor's Creek, 212-215; situation at surrender, 221; number surrendered, 227
- Army of Potomac (U. S.), history of, when Meade took command, ii., 25; movement of, to Gettysburg, 27, 28; movement of, to the Rappahannock, 44; retreat (1863) and advance of, 48-57; in winter quarters, 69, 70; reorganized, 71-73; movement to Wilderness, 77; how organized (1865), commanders of corps, 186; fortified around Petersburg, 187; in Grand Review, Washington, 230; mustered out, 230; casualties Wilderness campaign, last campaign, 92, 229
- Army, U. S., disloyalty (1861) of officers, numbers and reasons why disloyal, i., 161-170, notes; soldiers of, not disloyal, 162; disloyal officers resign, 165
- Arnold, Mrs., Beverly, Va., sister of Stonewall Jackson, loyal to Union, i., 201, note
- Arsenals, at Harper's Ferry and at Fayetteville, N. C., seized, i., 161; arms transferred from Springfield, Mass., and Watervliet, N. Y., 161
- Arthur, Chester A., President, attempts to reconcile party divisions, ii., 268
- Article of War against returning fugitive slaves, i., 274 113
- Articles of Confederation, formulated a weak government, i., 19-30; recognized slavery, 20; Washington's and Story's opinion of, 20, 21; free inhabitants only citizens, 20; no status for slavery, 21; no provision for fugitive slave law, 21; Congress sole governing power, 21
- Athens, Ala., affair at (1862), sacked by Union troops, incidents, i., 277-281
- "Atlanta to the Sea," casualties, ii., 155, note
- Australasia, no slave population, i., 2
- Averell, Wm. W., General (U. S.), in Hunter's raid, ii., 97; affair at Bunker Hill, 108; in Opequon, 109-115; at Fisher's Hill, 120, 124; relieved, 124
- B
- Babylon, captivity of Hebrews in, i., 7
- Bacon Creek, Ky., camp at, i., 233
- Badger, —, of N. C., claim of right to take old "mammy" slave to a Territory, i., 93
- Badges, corps, designations, ii., 72, note
- Baird, Zebulon, Captain (U. S.), Judge Advocate Milroy's staff, i., 324; quoted on battle at Stephenson's Depot, ii., 16
- Ball, Wm. H., Colonel 122d Ohio, character of, i., 310; at Stephenson's Depot, quoted as to, ii., 13-19; in New York City, 45; at Brandy Station, 56; at Orange Grove, 64; in Wilderness, 80-83; remark on Keifer being wounded, 85; mentioned, 107; at Opequon, 110-114; wounded, 116; command at Cedar Creek, 133-154; quoted, 140, 149
- Baltimore, Md., mob in, fires on 6th Mass., i., 179
- Baptists of Alabama, Georgia, and South Carolina declare for Confederacy and separation from Church North, i., 136
- Barrett, Theodore H., Colonel (U. S.), at Palmetto Rancho, ii., 214
- Battle, last one of the war, ii., 212-214
- Beatty, John, Brig.-Gen., Lieut.-Colonel, and Col. (U. S.), character and bravery of, i., 188; quoted on capture of De Lagnel, 208; incident, rescuing hospital, 210; Colonel 3d Ohio, 241; loses supper, 242, note; at Nashville and incident with slave hunters, 245; Provost-Marshal Huntsville, 272; on Turchin court-martial

- Beatty, John — *Continued*
 279; anecdote relating to Garfield, Ammen, and Keifer, quoted, 280; burns Paint Rock, 282; incident, catching rain-water, 296; distinguished services, 301; in battle of Perryville, 305
- Beauregard, P. T. G., General (C. S.) (1861), assigned to Charleston, resignation from U. S. A., i., 161; command of, under Johnston, at Shiloh, 247, 254-260; asks to bury dead at Shiloh, 259; mentioned, 288; ii., 76
- Bees, first brought to Virginia (1620), i., 11, note
- Bell, John, of Tennessee, nominated for President (1860) by Constitution-Union Convention, i., 118
- Belmont, battle of, November 7, 1861, i., 231
- Benham, Henry W., Captain (U. S.), pursuit of Garnett from Laurel Hill, i., 201, 202
- Benjamin, Judah P., Secretary of State of Confederacy, interview with Jacquess and Gilmore, ii., 170, 171
- Bense, James, Captain 6th Ohio, captured, i., 218
- Benton, Thomas H., Senator, opposes nullification (1835), i., 58; pronounced Calhoun's report (1835) birth of disunion, 58; quotes Calhoun's letter (1847), 58, 59; quoted on Mexican War intrigue, 67, 68; offered rank of lieutenant-general, 68; quoted, 69; opposes Wilmot Proviso, 70; quoted on double-headed government, 81; on Clay's joy over compromise resolutions, 82; opposes Clay resolutions (1850), 83, 84; condemns Dred Scott decision, 86; death, 86; summary (1857) on disunion policy, 148
- Bentonville, N. C., battle of, mentioned, ii., 212
- Bible, quotations from, to justify slavery, i., 3, 4; relating to Hebrew slavery, 319, note
- Bidwell, D. D., General (U. S.), killed, Cedar Creek, ii., 153
- Big Bethel, first battle of Civil War, ii., 213
- Big Shanty, Ga., locomotive captured at, by Andrews' raiders, i., 269
- Binkley, Otho H., Lieut.-Colonel 110th Ohio, at Orange Grove, ii., 64; in Wilderness, 81-83; at Cedar Creek, 137; leads attack at Petersburg, 189; at Sailor's Creek, 206, 211; mentioned, 107, 300
- Birney, David B., General (U. S.), at Orange Grove, ii., 61, 64; soldierly character of, death, 64, note; mentioned, 69
- Black, Jeremiah, Attorney-General and Secretary of State (1860), i., 131
- Black, Thomas S., Captain 122d Ohio, staff duty, wounded in Wilderness, ii., 83
- Blackburn, J. C. S., quoted on repeal of war measures, ii., 263
- Blaine, James G., of Maine, errors of, relative to Peace Conference and Wilmot Proviso, i., 142, note; disposition and character of, ii., 268, note; referred to, 272
- Blair, Sr., F. P., submits to Davis plans for peace, ii., 174, 175; correspondence with Davis and Lincoln, 176
- Bloodshed, more after than before Gettysburg, ii., 23, 57; at Cedar Creek, 153; great events not measured by, 155, note
- Bloody Run, Pa., Union troops retreat to, ii., 18
- Border ruffians of Missouri in Kansas, i., 94
- Border States, negroes in, how held, i., 121; remain in Union, their people aid Confederacy, 136
- Boston, Mass., first American ship engaged in slave trade from, i., 11; depot for slaves near Franklin House, 12; slavers fitted out at, 40, 41; last U. S. slaver from, 40
- "Bottled up," origin of expression, ii., 94
- Botts, John Minor, Virginia, Union man, mentioned, ii., 68, note
- Bowling Green, Ky., occupied by Confederates, i., 229
- Boyle, J. T., Colonel (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 259
- Braden, —, Captain (U. S.), capture of, i., 245
- Bragg, Braxton, General (C. S.), at Shiloh, i., 247, 248; invasion of Kentucky, 284, 288, 293-308; strength at Munfordville, 295; forms junction with Kirby Smith, 295, 306; witnesses inauguration of Secession Governor of Kentucky, 302; deplores result of Kentucky campaign, quoted

- Bragg, Braxton — *Continued*
 on Kentuckians, 306, 307; retreat to Murfreesboro, 306; plans of general campaign (1864), ii., 77
- Brahminism, no sanction for slavery in, i., 8
- Breckinridge, John C., defeated (1860) for President on pro-slavery platform, i., 118, 120; General (C. S.), at Shiloh, 247, 248; mentioned, ii., 76, 97, 98; at Opequon, 109-115; Secretary of War, 197
- Breshwood, —, Captain (U. S.), Revenue Service, disloyalty of, arrest ordered by Dix, Secretary of Treasury, i., 164, note
- Bridgeport, Ala., affair at (1862), i., 274
- Bridges, how crossed with troops, ii., 218
- Bristoe Station, battle of (October 14, 1863), ii., 51-53; casualties, 53
- Bristol, R. I., negroes brought to, and sold in, i., 12
- Brooke, John R., Major-General, Military Governor of Cuba, mentioned, ii., 292, 293, 295
- Brooks, Preston, of South Carolina, assaults Sumner, i., 99; resigns, re-elected to House, 99; challenges Wilson, Massachusetts, 100; death of, 99
- Brown, John, raid of, on Harper's Ferry (1859), i., 111-115; number with, 111; object to free slaves, 111; supported by anti-slavery leaders, 111, 113; captures sword of Frederick the Great and pistols of Lafayette, 112; captures Colonel Washington, 112; bravery and coolness of, 112, 113; Washington's description of his conduct, 112; believed his attack as rational as Josbua's or Gideon's band, 113; captured by Col. R. E. Lee, 112; Greeley on, quoted, 113; convicted of treason, 114; believed himself worth more on the gallows than elsewhere, 115; last prophecy of, 115; death of, 115; immortalized in song, 115; on threshold of Secession, 115; daughter teaches free negroes in Virginia to read Bible, 153; mentioned, 319; Brownlow, Parson, mentioned, ii., 5, note
- Bryan, William Jennings, Colonel 3d Nebraska, in Spanish War, resignation of, ii., 292
- Bryant, Wilson G., Assistant Surgeon, 122d Ohio, mentioned, i., 311
- Buchanan, James, President, signs Ostend Manifesto, favors acquiring Cuba, i., 102; elected President (1856), 116; favors admission of Kansas with slavery, 95; message on Kansas (1858), 100; vacillating policy of, and last message (1860) on Secession, 127, 139; belief that Constitution did not provide for its preservation, no power to coerce a State, 131, 139, 140; consents to reinforce Sumter, 158; cabal in Cabinet, 127; resignations of members of Cabinet, 159, note
- Buckland, Ralph P., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 251
- Buckner, Simon B., General (C. S.), occupies Bowling Green, Ky., i., 229; Lincoln orders commission as Brigadier-General for, 229; surrenders Fort Donelson, 239, 240
- Buddhism, no sanction for slavery in, i., 8
- Buell, Don Carlos, General (U. S.), relieves Sherman, i., 232; commences to move his army, 241; at Nashville, 243; jealousy, 244, 251; starts for Savannah, 249; arrives, 250, 256; disapproves Mitchel's treatment of slaves, 273; orders slaves returned to masters, 274; relations with Mitchel, 283; pursues Bragg to Kentucky, 294-297; strength at Munfordsville, 295; march to Louisville, 296; reinforced in Kentucky, moves his army from Louisville, 302; fails to hear sound of battle at Perryville, 305; lost opportunities and characteristics of, 295, 306, 307; relieved by Rosecrans, without command, character of, 307
- Buford, John, General (U. S.), opens battle of Gettysburg, ii., 28; at Catlett's Station, incident with, death of, 54, 55
- Burlingame, Anson, of Massachusetts, accepts challenge to fight Brooks, i., 100
- Burns, Wm. H., Lieutenant 6th Maryland (U. S.), killed, ii., 116
- Burnside, Ambrose E., General (U. S.), at Antietam, ii., 2; relieves McClellan, defeat at Fredericksburg, relieved by Hooker, 3; at Knoxville, 48, 71; commands Ninth Corps, 75; joins Army of Potomac at Rapidan, 78; in Wilderness, 87-90

- Burrows, Julius C., of Michigan, in Congress, ii., 267, 272
- Burton, Wm., Governor of Delaware, response of, to call for Union troops, i., 181
- Butler, B. F., General (U. S.), assigned to command forces on James, ii., 75, 94, 95; relieved from Army of James, 186
- C
- Cabinet, Buchanan's, rupture in (1861), i., 131; Holt, Stanton, and Black in, 131; Cass, Floyd, and others go out, 131
- Cabinet cabal for disunion, members of, i., 127, 159, note
- Cady, Chas. E., Surgeon 138th Pennsylvania, mentioned, ii., 85
- Cairo, Ill., Grant's headquarters, 1861, i., 231
- Calhoun, John C., of South Carolina, heads nullification (1832) when Vice-President, i., 52, 53; medals struck (1832), "first President Southern Confederacy," 53; resigns Vice-Presidency, becomes Senator, 54; votes for tariff act (1833), 54; revives nullification on slavery issue, 55, 59; report on state-rights, 55-57; letter favoring slavery agitation, quoted, 58, 59; annexes Texas, 65; resolutions (1847) relating to territories, 69; claims slavery existed in territory by virtue of Constitution, 73, 74; threatening address (1849) against the North, 75, 76; last speech of, warning as to the Union, 78-81; allusion to Washington, 80; religious and political cords broken, 79; death of, 81; character and Presidential aspirations of, 81; burial-place of, 81, note
- California, Upper, ceded (1848) to U. S., i., 70; Fremont's invasion (1846) of, 70; gold discovered in, 71; held no slaves, 72; admitted (1850) as Free State, 79, 84; proposition to make 36° 30' south line of State of, 84
- Cameron, Simon, of Pennsylvania, agrees to challenge to fight duels, i., 100; candidate (1860) for President, 119; Secretary of War, 231
- Campbell, James R., Colonel 9th Illinois, Spanish War, ii., 292
- Campbell, John A., Ex-Secretary of War (C. S.), peace commissioner, ii., 176-179; consultation with Lincoln, report of, 199, 200
- Campbell, Wm., of Ky., one of Andrews' raiders, captured and hung, i., 267, 270
- Canby, E. R. S., General (U. S.) commands in New York City, ii., 45; at Fort Blakely, 214
- Carlisle, John G., Ex-Speaker, mentioned, ii., 274, 284
- Carlisle, J. M., defence of Drayton for larceny of slaves, i., 146, note
- Carolinas, slaves profitable in, i., 12
- Carondelet*, gunboat, runs batteries, Island No. 10, i., 262
- Carr, Joseph B., General (U. S.), personal description of, difficulty over rank, ii., 49; at Orange Grove, 62, 63; at Mine Run, 66; army ball given by, 70; mentioned, 71
- Carr, Mrs. Joseph B., mentioned, ii., 70
- Cass, Lewis, Senator, favored compromise measures, i., 83; lived to witness birth of squatter sovereignty (1854) and to support it, to see disunion, war, freedom of slaves, and Union restored, 86, 87; death of, 87, note; resignation of, as Secretary of State, 131
- Casualties, in Wilderness campaign, ii., 92, note; Army of Potomac, last campaign of, 229; "Atlanta to the Sea," 155, note; in Keifer's brigade, 303. See names of battles.
- Catholic Church, did not permit slavery in Mexico, ii., 63; Bishop Lynch of, corresponds with the Pope, 137
- Catron, John, Justice Supreme Court, quoted, i., 43; views of, on treaty of cession of Louisiana Province, 43, 111
- Cavaliers fostered slavery, i., 12
- Cavalry, eyes and ears of an army, ii., 27
- Cedar Creek, Va., battle of, ii., 128-157; scenes after battle, 153; casualties, 154; losses compared with other battles and wars, 155, 156; incidents and observations relating to, 155-157; compared to Marengo, 156; numbers in, 156
- Census, table showing slaves at each, i., 15
- Central Cabal (Jan. 5, 1861) of Southern statesmen in Washington, to promote Secession, meetings in Capitol,

- Central Cabal — *Continued*
 i., 132; Davis, Slidell, and Mallory to carry out objects of, 132
 Chalmers, James R., General (C. S.), at Munfordville, i., 294
 Chambersburg, Pa., date of burning, ii., 125
 Chancellorsville, Va., Hooker's defeat at, ii., 3
 Chandler, Zach., of Michigan, agrees to challenge to fight, i., 100; belief in bloodletting, 154
 Chaplains, duties performed by, ii., 14, 118
 Charleston, S. C., Secession commenced and ended at, i., 128, 129, note; description of, at end of war, 129, note
 Charleston Convention (Democratic) (1860), history of, i., 117, 118
 Chase, Salmon P., Senator from Ohio, signs appeal of Independent Democrats, i., 92; offers amendment to Nebraska Act, 93
 Cheatham, Benj. F., General (C. S.), at Belmont, i., 231; wounded, 260; in Kentucky, 303
 Christian and Moor doomed captives to slavery, i., 6
 Christian Commission, work of, ii., 86
 Christian religion not efficacious to destroy slavery, i., 7
 Cincinnati, Ohio, threatened attack on, preparations for defence, i., 287, 288; martial law, 288
 Civil War, summons (1861) to, heroism, character, cost, suffering, and purpose of, i., 155-157; ii., 232
 Clarksville, Tenn., surrendered, i., 297
 Clay, Clement Claiborne, Alabama, Ex-U. S. Senator, career of, in Confederacy, i., 273; Confederate agent in Canada, ii., 165, 166
 Clay, Clement Comer, Alabama, Ex-Governor, tried and punished for encouraging guerrillas, i., 272, 273
 Clay, Henry, dilution argument in favor of extension of slavery, i., 49; favors Missouri's admission with slavery, 48, 49; quoted, 51; opposes nullification, 58; as Secretary of State, proposed (1827) purchase of Texas, 63; opposes then favors annexation of Texas, beaten for President, 65; opposed Mexican War, 67; compromise measures proposed, and speeches on, 77-80; favors enforcement of fugitive slave law, 78; prophesies as to disunion, 78; triumph, 81; presides over Union men, 82, 83; speech against 36° 30' line, 84; birth, death of, 81, note; mentioned, 86
 Clemens, Jerry, Alabama, mentioned, i., 272
 Clergy, Confederate, address (1863) to Christians against Emancipation, i., 137
 Cluseret, G. P. (French), General (U. S.), soldier of fortune, i., 312; incident about shooting a prisoner, 312-314, 321; Secretary of War of Communists, France, 321
 Cobb, Howell, of Georgia, member of Cabinet cabal for disunion (1860), i., 127; resigns as Secretary of Treasury, President Confederate Congress, 159; quoted on Richmond as Confederate Capital, 176
 Coinage, of Confederate States, i., 159, 160, note; design for silver, 160
 Colonies, coast, engaged in slave trade, i., 12
 Colored Half-Orphan Asylum, New York City, burned by rioters, ii., 40
 Columbus carried native Americans to Spain to present to Queen Isabella, i., 7
 Columbus, Ky., evacuated, i., 246
 Comley, James M., Colonel 23d Ohio, mentioned, i., 208
 Compromise measures (1850), i., 75-88; Clay's, modified, 82; bills to carry out, passed, 82-84; supported and opposed by distinguished statesmen, 83
 Concessions to slavery, proposed, i., 139-142; proposition to abolish office of President, and for Executive Council, 140; to guarantee slavery, to legalize slavery in Territories south of 36° 30', to divide Union into four sections, 140; propositions of Committee of Thirty-three on, 140, 141; Constitutional amendment to make slavery perpetual, quoted, 141; failure and effect of, 155, 156
 Confederacy, condition of, at end of 1864, ii., 158, 159; proposal to enlist slaves, 159, 175, note; condition, 1863, 161; condition, 1865, 176, 188
 Confederate ex-officers, etc., in Spanish War, ii., 9, 288, 289, 292, 296, 313
 Confederate forces, position held in 1862, i., 237; pollute water in Kentucky, 242, note, 296; number of, with material, surrendered, ii., 231

- Confederate States Constitution, framed (1861), modelled on Constitution U. S., forbade importation of negroes, save from U. S., right of property in negroes perpetual, i., 133; prohibited import duties, 133; quoted, 133
- Confederate States of America, formed (Feb. 4, 1861), Davis chosen President and Stephens Vice-President of, i., 132; eleven States form, 136; only slave nation attempted to be formed, how and why overthrown, 155, 156, 171; seizure of forts, etc., 159; coinage, 160, note; cost of overthrow of, ii., 232
- Congress, First, eighth act (1789), reenacted ordinance of 1787, i., 23; Thirtieth (1848) first to hold after midnight of March 3d, 74, note; distinguished statesmen in Thirty-first (1849-50), 77; power to legislate for Territories, 108, 109; Constitutional provision relating to, 108, note
- Conkling, James C., of Illinois, letter of Lincoln to, quoted, ii., 46, 47
- Conkling, Roscoe, of New York, resigns from U. S. Senate, ii., 267; disposition and character of, 268
- Connecticut, provision of (1784), to free slaves, i., 30
- Constitution of the United States, history of formation of, i., 30-33; words slave or slavery not used in, 33; slavery clauses, 33, 34; fugitive slave clause, 33, 34; representation and taxes, 34, 35; relating to African slave trade, 35; delicate use of words relating to slavery, 33-35; ratification of, went into effect (March 4, 1789), 32; first ten amendments to, adopted, 32; proposition to extend over Territories, 74; provision as to Territories, 90, note; sections of, on powers of Congress relating to Territories, 108, notes; amendment proposed (1861) to, quoted, 141; comments on proposed amendment, 155; slaves freed by 13th amendment, 14; amendments, decrees of war, 145; amendments commented on, and ratifications of, ii., 232, 255, 256, note
- Continental Congress, few powers, i., 19; resolves against slaves being imported, 17, 21; first meeting of, 19; ordinance of 1787 passed by, 21-29
- Coons, —, Captain 14th Indiana, attacked by, i., 219, 220; promotion and death of, 221
- Cooper, Samuel, Adjutant-General (U. S.), resigns and becomes Adjutant-General C. S. A., i., 163; signs order dismissing Twiggs, 163, note
- Corbin, Henry C., Adjutant-General (U. S.), letter to, on Cuba, ii., 307-312
- Corinth, battle of, Oct. 3, 1862, i., 290, 291; casualties, 292
- Cornyn, Chas. M., Major 122d Ohio, wounded, ii., 116
- Corwin, Thomas, of Ohio, quoted on Mexican War, i., 66; chairman of Committee of Thirty-three (1860); reports propositions and Constitutional amendment making slavery perpetual, 140
- Cotton, first planted in America, i., 111; required cheap labor, 36; effect on growth of slavery, 37; is king, exports of, 37
- Cotton States, delegates from, seceded (1860) at Charleston Convention, i., 117; inaugurate disunion (1860), 127
- Cowards in battle, observations on, i., 180, note
- Cox, J. D., General (U. S.), affair at Scarey Creek, i., 226; mentioned, 310; ii., 229
- Cox, S. S., of New York, in Congress, referred to, ii., 274
- Crawford, Samuel W., General (U. S.), in Wilderness, ii., 79
- Crittenden, Geo. B., General (C. S.), defeat of, at Mill Springs, i., 234; at Shiloh, 247
- Crittenden, John J., of Kentucky, resolutions of, to legalize slavery south of 36° 30', and in District of Columbia to require United States to pay for fugitive slaves, i., 142
- Crittenden, Thos. L., General (U. S.), in Kentucky, i., 302
- Crocket, —, Sergeant (U. S.) 62d Colored, received last wound of war, ii., 214
- Crockett, David, of Tennessee, eccentricity of, massacred at The Alamo, i., 64
- Crook, Geo., General (U. S.), plan for campaign (1864), ii., 75; in battle of Cloyd's Mountain, 96; in Hunter's raid, 96-99, 102; personal mention, dates and places of birth and death, 106; affair at Berryville, 108; in

Crook, Geo.— *Continued*

- Opequon, 110-117; at Fisher's Hill, 118-124; incident of meeting, 122; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; commands cavalry at Sailor's Creek, 207-216; pursuit of Lee, 216-224; battle near Farmville, 217, 218
- Crowninshield, Casper, Provost Marshal (U. S.), mentioned, ii., 157
- Crutchfield, Stapleton, Colonel of artillery (C. S.), killed at Sailor's Creek, ii., 208, 209
- Cuba, acquisition sought for slave States, i., 101; offers for, 101, 102; Ostend Manifesto relative to (1854), 102; slavery abolished in, 102, note; insurrections in, ii., 286, 294; death of non-combatants, 286; character of inhabitants, 293, 294; war in, observations on, 286, 287, 297-299, 307-312
- Cumberland Gap, evacuated by Morgan, i., 297; occupied by Confederates, 298
- Cunard, Henry E., Captain 110th Ohio, captures De Lagnel, i., 208; killed, Perryville, 305
- Curtis, Benj. R., Justice Supreme Court (1857), denies that treaty ceding Louisiana Province perpetuated slavery, quoted, i., 44; dissents in Dred Scott case, 103
- Cushing, Caleb, of Massachusetts, leads Southern bolters (1860) at Democratic convention, i., 118
- Custer, Geo. A., General (U. S.), in Opequon, ii., 114; ordered to burn houses, etc., 125, 126; in Tom's Brook, 126; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; quoted, 151; at Sailor's Creek, 206-224; captures railway trains, 220
- Cutshaw, W. E., Major (C. S.), commands artillery, Shenandoah Valley, ii., 109; rejoins Early's army, 124, 157

D

- Damon, George B., Captain, 10th Vt., staff officer, mentioned, ii., 135
- Davies, Thomas A., General (U. S.), at Corinth, i., 290
- Davis, Henry Winter, of Md., description (1856) and prophecy of dissolution of the Union, i., 153
- Davis, Jeff. C., General (U. S.), kills General Nelson, Louisville, i., 300;

arrest, release, subsequent military service of, 301

- Davis, Jefferson, advocates (1858) repeal of act making slave trade piracy, i., 39; offers to extend 36° 30' line to Pacific Ocean, 84; of Central Cabal and on committee to carry out its objects, 132; President of Confederate States, inaugurated, 132, 133; as Secretary of War orders liberty cap from model of *Statue of Liberty*, 147, note; President of Confederacy controls military operations, receives arms, etc., acquired from the U. S., 160, 161; proclamation on Lincoln's call for troops, offers letters of marque to privateers, 178; attaches importance to pikes and knives for soldiers, 184, note; condemns Floyd and Pillow, 240; mentioned, 288; endorsement on Hill's report, quoted, ii., 54; approves Bragg's plan for campaign (1864), 77; conference with Lee on peace negotiations, 159, 160; with Duff Green, 161; with Stephens, 161; interview with Jaquess and Gilmore, 170, 171; interview with Blair, and correspondence, 174-176; appoints peace commissioners; instructions to, 176; speech on peace, 179; conference with Lee and Longstreet on peace, 180; dispatch to Lee on evacuation of Richmond, quoted, 198; leaves Richmond, 198; at Danville, 201; proclamation to maintain Confederacy, 203, note; capture of, 231
- Davis, Nick, of Ala., mentioned, i., 272
- Day, H. W., Captain 151st N. Y., Brigade Inspector, leads charge at Cedar Creek, ii., 148, 149
- Decatur, Ala., evacuated; bridge at, burned, i., 274
- Declaration of Independence, boldest declaration of human rights, i., 15; Jefferson's draft of, against slavery, 16; Supreme Court holds does not apply to negroes (Dred Scott case), 18
- De Courcey, John, Colonel 16th Ohio, later Lord Kinsale, mentioned, i., 281, note
- Deeter, Joshua S., Lieutenant 110th Ohio, mortally wounded, ii., 116
- De Lagnel, Julius A., incident of designation as Lieutenant U. S. A., i., 165; commands Confederates on Rich-

De Lagnel, Julius A.— *Continued*

- Mountain, 195; surrenders at Fayetteville, N. C., 161, 196; supposed killed, funeral sermons over death, 195, 196; captured, 208-210
- Delaware, response of, to call for troops, i., 181
- Democratic platform (1852), endorsed compromise measures (1850), candidate on (Pierce), elected, i., 87; 1856, 1860, pro-slavery, 116, 117; position on slavery 1852, 87, 88; 1856, 116; 1860, 117; on the war, ii., 172, note
- Denver, J. W., of Ohio, last Governor Kansas Territory, i., 95
- Deserter shot, ii., 185
- Devin, Thomas C., General (U. S.), in Opequon, ii., 114; at Sailor's Creek, 206; at Appomattox Court-House, 220
- Dewey, George, Admiral (U. S. N.), in Manila Bay, ii., 297
- Dinwiddie Court-House, Va., battle at, ii., 189
- Dissolution of the Union, history of, i., 120-125; how justified under guise of nullification and secession, 120, 121; South aggressive in, 121; slavery cause of, 121; by eleven States, 136; prophecy as to, 153
- District of Columbia, slavery abolished (1862) in, i., 14, note, 145-147; how acquired and area of, 145; its slave-marts, 146; Drayton incident in, 146, note
- Disunion, prophecy as to, i., 149-153; description (1856) of, 153; eloquence over, 154
- Divinity of slavery, advocated, i., 3-6, 17; Bible quoted to prove, 3, 4
- Dix, Dorothea L., in charge of nurses, mentioned, Mann's remark as to, ii., 86
- Dix, John A., Secretary of Treasury, orders arrest of Capt. Breshwood, shoot-him-on-the-spot order, i., 164, note
- Dixon, Archibald, Senator, of Ky., offers amendment (1854) to repeal Missouri Compromise, i., 91
- Donnelson, —, Colonel (C. S.), mentioned, i., 217
- Douglass, Frederick (former slave), declined to join Brown raid, i., 111
- Douglas, Henry L., Brigadier-General, Spanish War, mentioned, ii., 292

- Douglas, Stephen A., Senator from Ill., reports (1854) constitutional theories on slavery in Territories, i., 88-90; doctrine of popular sovereignty, 90; interprets Clay's (1850) measures, 90; reports repeal of Missouri Compromise, 91; favors admission of any part of Nebraska with or without slavery, 90; reports condemning free State people, 94; recommends admission of Kansas, 94; opposes Le-compton Constitution, 95, 96; defeated (1856) for nomination for President, 95; defeated for President (1860), 118-120; supports Lincoln's administration, 98; death of, 98
- Drayton, Daniel, prosecution of, for larceny of slaves in District of Columbia, i., 146, note
- Dred Scott, colored, sues for freedom of self, wife, and two children, i., 103
- Dred Scott Case, judges in, hold slavery perpetual in La. Province, i., 44; decision in (1857), 103-107, note; Taney's opinion for Supreme Court, 103; justices concurring and dissenting, 103; statement of case in, 103; holds negro not a citizen of U. S., and no right to sue, 105-7; holds Constitution of U. S. does not apply to territory acquired after treaty (1783) with Great Britain, 105, 106; holds United States cannot govern Territory as a colony, 106; holds Congress no right to prohibit slaves being taken into a Territory, 106; holds Ordinance of '87 and Mo. Compromise unconstitutional, 107; review of, 107-111; slavery's last triumph, 111
- Dripping Springs, Ky., night incident with ox at, i., 296, note
- Dudrow, J. P., Captain 122d Ohio, A. D. C., wounded, ii., 116
- Duels, challenges to fight, i., 100
- Dumont, Ebenezer, Colonel (U. S.) and General, affair at Philippi, i., 190; mentioned, 233, 245, 302
- Dunkards, loyalty of, i., 318
- Duval, Isaac H., Colonel (U. S.), wounded, ii., 113

E

- Early, Jubal A., General (C. S.), mentioned, ii., 9, 12, 25; in Shenandoah Valley, 97-99; Monocacy, 100, 101;

Early, Jubal A.—*Continued*

- advance on and retreat from Washington, 101, 102; army in Shenandoah Valley, 109; at Opequon, 109-115; at Fisher's Hill, 118-124; dispatch quoted, 123; retreat, 124; joke as to guns, 127; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; quoted, 150; relieved from command, and misfortunes, 152, note
- Ebright, Aaron W., Lt.-Colonel 126th Ohio, in Wilderness, ii., 80-83; mentioned, 107; killed at Opequon, 115; premonition of death, 116
- Egypt, slavery in, i., 2; destroyed by slavery, 7
- Elam, John B., private soldier, 110th Ohio, wounded; mentioned, ii., 301, note
- Elizabeth, Queen of England, shares in slave trade, i., 10
- Elliott, W. S., General (U. S.), at Winchester, i., 322; mentioned, ii., 9-15, 49
- Ellis, John W., Governor N. C., refuses to respond to call for Union troops, i., 182
- Ely, Wm. G., Colonel 18th Conn., at Winchester, ii., 16-18
- Emancipation Proclamation, slaves freed by, i., 14, note; effect of, 145; effect of, in Shenandoah Valley, 318; preliminary, ii., 2; Lincoln quoted on, 46, 47
- Emerson, Wm., Colonel 151st N. Y., at Fisher's Hill, ii., 120; at Cedar Creek, 128-150; quoted, 148
- Emigration Aid Company, Mass. (1856), to make Kansas free, i., 94; Douglas' attack on, 94
- Emigration rarely to South, i., 121
- Emory, W. H., General (U. S.), commands Nineteenth Corps, at Opequon, ii., 102, 109-116; at Fisher's Hill, 118-124; at Cedar Creek, 128-157
- England, slavery in, i., 2, 7; renounced slavery, 8; monopoly of slave trade, 10, 12; convention with Spain, 10; numbers stolen from Africa and transported by, 10; not solely responsible for slavery in American colonies, 16; King and Parliament of, opposed restricting it, 16, 19; purpose of, to acquire Bay of Cal. thwarted (1846), 71
- English-American colonies, white slav-

- ery in, i., 2; black slavery introduced into (1619), 10
- Euripides, definition of cowards in battle, i., 180, note
- Ewell, R. S., General (C. S.), at Winchester, Va., ii., 6, 9, 19; orders to take Harrisburg, Pa., 25; at Gettysburg, 28-32; in Wilderness and Spotsylvania, 87-90; evacuation of Richmond, 198; at Sailor's Creek, 205-216; capture of, 209; suggests Lee might surrender, 218; mentioned, 305

F

- Fairfax, —, Colonel (C. S.), carries notice of truce, ii., 223
- Fayetteville, N. C., arsenal seized, i., 161, 196
- Ferrero, Edward, General (U. S.), commands colored division, Spotsylvania, ii., 90
- Field, Stephen J., Justice Supreme Court, defence of, from attack of Judge Terry, i., 233, note
- Fillmore, Millard, President, pardons Drayton, its effect on election, i., 146, note
- Fisher, —, Captain (U. S.), informs Buell of fighting at Perryville, i., 305
- Fisher's Hill, Va., battle of, ii., 118-124; casualties, 123
- Five Forks, Va., battle of, ii., 189, 190; captures at, 190; described, 213
- Flags, C. S., captured, and medals awarded for, ii., 229, note; description of corps, 72, note; raised and lowered, Sumter, i., 159, 171, note
- Florida, Spanish slave colony (1781), i., 45; refuge and compensation for fugitive slaves, 45, 46, note; ceded to U. S., 46; a slave State, 47 (secession ordinance passed, Jan. 10, 1861)
- Floyd, John B., of Va., member Cabinet Cabal for disunion, i., 127; resigns as Secy. of War, 159, note; transfers arms South, 161; mentioned, 190, 205, 227; at Fort Donelson, 238-243; in Nashville, 243
- Foote, A. H., Commodore (U. S. N.), at Fort Henry, i., 237; at Fort Donelson, 238, 239; at Columbus, Ky., 246; at Island No. 10, 261
- Foote, Samuel A., Senator from Conn., i., 51

- Foreign interference, danger and fear of, i., 236, 237
- Forrest, Ned, General (C. S.), escape from Fort Donelson, i., 240; describes riots at Nashville, 242, 243
- Forsyth, George A., General (U. S.), Sheridan's staff, at Fisher's Hill, ii., 121; in Indian fight, 121, note
- Forsyth, J. W., Colonel (U. S.), at Appomattox, ii., 223
- Fort Blakely, Mobile, assault on, ii., 213; captures at, 213; surrender, 231
- Fort Donelson, Ky., battle of, i., 238-241, note; casualties, 241
- Fort Fisher, Va., signal gun fired from, ii., 187; mentioned, 184, 253
- Fort Gregg, Va., mentioned, ii., 184, 187
- Fort Henry, Ky., taken by Grant, i., 237
- Fort Moultrie, S. C., abandoned by U. S. troops, i., 158; mentioned, 159, 170
- Fort Pickens, Fla., mentioned, i., 160; only one in South not taken, 175
- Fort Stedman, Va., attack on, ii., 188, 212
- Fort Sumter, S. C., fired on, surrendered, i., 158-185; sought to be reinforced, 158; first shot at, 170; flag on, lowered, raised four years later, 171, note; Secession exultations over, 175; taking, bloodless, 175, note; effect of surrender, 176
- Fort Welch, Va., mentioned, ii., 184, 187
- Foster, Wm. N., Lt.-Colonel 110th Ohio, in New York City, ii., 45; at Brandy Station, 56; at Orange Grove, 64; mentioned, 10, 300
- Fox, G. V., ex-officer (U. S. N.), sent to relieve Fort Sumter, i., 170, 171
- Fox, James A., Lieut. 110th Ohio, killed, ii., 64, 301
- France renounced slavery, i., 8
- Franklin, Benj., opposition to slave trade, favors early emancipation, i., 17
- Fredericksburg, Va., Burnside's defeat at, ii., 3
- Free Soil party, nominated (1852) Jno. P. Hale (N. H.) on platform repudiating compromise measures, declaring for no more slave States; against Fugitive Slave Act, i., 87
- Fremont, John C., Captain (U. S.), in California (1846), i., 70, 71; nominated (1856) for President, defeated, 116; General, commands Western Department, proclaims martial law at St. Louis, 230; proclaims freedom of slaves of persons who take arms against U. S., that all disloyal persons with arms be shot, 230; proclamation disapproved by Lincoln, modified, 230, 231; relieved, 231
- French, Wm. H., General (U. S.), on Maryland Heights, ii., 22; commands corps of observation (1863), 22; at Williamsport, 33; at Orange Grove, 60-66; controversy with Meade, 65; opposes assault at Mine Run, 67; relieved, 71, 72
- Front Royal, Va., incident with ladies at, i., 323
- Fry, James B., Colonel (U. S.), Buell's staff, at Shiloh, i., 257
- Frye, Wm. P., of Maine, mentioned, ii., 259, 263
- Fugitive slave law, clause of Constitution relating to, i., 33, 34; first (1793), 38; constitutionality doubted, 38, 39; second (1850), 39; unpopularity, 39, 61; (repealed, June 28, 1864); Clay's views on, 78; its provisions, 85, 86; revolt against execution of, 39, 86; Free Soil party against, 87; enforcement made Abolitionists, 123
- Fugitive slaves, in Florida, i., 45-47; at Negro Fort, massacre of, 46; treaty providing compensation for, 46, note
- Furay, Wm. S., war correspondent, letters relating to Lee's advance ii., 4, note; mentioned, 250

G

- Gadsden Purchase from Mexico, i., 70
- Gaines, Edmund P., General (U. S.), massacre of fugitive slaves, Negro Fort, i., 46
- Garfield, James A., Colonel (U. S.), defeats Marshall in Kentucky, i., 234; President of Turchin court-martial, 279; as a conversationalist, 279; anecdote relating to, 280; in Congress, mentioned, ii., 263-265; elected President, assassination, intellectual character of, 267, 268
- Garnett, Robert S., General (C. S.), in Northwestern Virginia (1861), i., 189, 190; retreat from Laurel Hill, death of, 201, 202

- Garrison, Wm. Lloyd, anti-slavery agitator, publishes *Liberator*, i., 60, 61; inconsistency of, 172
- Geary, John W., of Pennsylvania, Governor Kansas Territory, i., 95; General (U. S.), at Gettysburg, ii., 29, 30
- General to be pitied day after lost battle, ii., 152. *See* Officer.
- Generals (C. S.), killed and wounded at Gettysburg, ii., 32; captured at Sailor's Creek, 209
- Generals, U. S., two pictures of (1861-1865), in contrast, names, i., 204; must be evolved in battle, 204
- Georgia, ceded (1802), territory to become slave States, i., 29; secession of, 130
- German nations, traffic of, in slaves, i., 6; renounced slavery, 8
- Getty, Geo. W., General (U. S.), in Wilderness, ii., 78, 79, 87; in Opequon, 108-116; in Cedar Creek, 128-157; in Petersburg assault, 192-195; Sailor's Creek, 207, 211
- Gettysburg, battle of (July 1-3, 1863), ii., 23-35; Confederate generals killed and wounded in, 32; casualties, 34, 35
- Gibbon, John, General (U. S.), appointed to carry out terms of Lee's surrender, ii., 227
- Gibson, Wm. H., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 259
- Giddings, Joshua R., of Ohio, signs Appeal of Independent Democrats, i., 91-92
- Gilbert, Chas. C., General (U. S.), in Kentucky, i., 302
- Gilbert, Sam'l A., Lt.-Colonel 24th Ohio, mentioned, i., 219
- Gillespie, —, Lieutenant (U. S.), carries (1846) dispatches to California, i., 70
- Gilmore, J. R., visits Richmond, interview with Davis and report, ii., 160, 161
- Gilmore, Quincy A., General (U. S.), under Butler, ii., 75; mentioned, 94, 95
- Gist, Wm. H., Governor of South Carolina (1860), letters of, to cotton States inaugurating disunion, i., 127; issues first proclamation to convene a legislature to secede, 127
- Gladden, — (C. S.), killed at Shiloh, i., 260
- Godwin, A. C., General (C. S.), killed at Opequon, ii., 117
- Gold, discovered (1848) in California, i., 71, 72; it defeats slavery, 72-79; Buchanan's commissioner would not agree to make Territory free if one foot thick with, 72
- Goldsborough, W. W., Major (C. S.), mentioned, ii., 9
- Gordon, John B., General (C. S.), in battle near Kearnsstown, Va., quoted, ii., 9, note; takes York, Pa., 25; flank attack in Wilderness, 83; at Monocacy, 100; at Fisher's Hill, 122; at Cedar Creek, 131-150; assaults Fort Stedman, 188; at Sailor's Creek, 208, 209; at Appomattox Court-House, 221-223; of council of war, 221; appointed to carry out terms of surrender, 227
- Gordon, W. W., Brig.-General, Spanish War, mentioned, ii., 289, 290
- Grafton, W. Va., occupied, i., 189
- Granger, Moses M., Lt.-Colonel 122d Ohio, character of, i., 311; at Orange Grove, ii., 64; in Wilderness, 80-83; at Cedar Creek, quoted, 142, note; mentioned, 148
- Grant, L. A., General (U. S.), at Cedar Creek, ii., 135
- Grant, U. S., General (U. S.), at Cairo, in battle of Belmont, congratulatory order quoted, i., 231; takes Fort Henry, 237; at Fort Donelson, 238-241; assigned to District Western Tennessee, 238; terms of surrender of Fort Donelson, quoted, 240; at Nashville, 243; personal description of, 244; Halleck and Buell jealous of, 244; dates of birth and death, 244, note; relieved and restored to command, 249; at Savannah, battle of Shiloh, 247-260; injured, 251; conduct of, 256; directs last charge, 259; ignored by Halleck, 262; restored to command, 263; at Iuka, Corinth, and Hatchie, 288-293; holds Northern Mississippi, 297; estimate of Thomas, 299; appointed Lt.-General, headquarters at Washington and in the field, ii., 71; plans of campaign (1864), 74-76; quoted, 76; campaign executed, 77; appearance of, at Wilderness, 78; in Wilderness, 78-93; "fight it out," etc., letter quoted, 89; unjust reference to Milroy's troops, 84; regrets assault at Cold Harbor,

Grant, U. S.— *Continued*

91; in front of Petersburg, 96; interview with Sheridan in Shenandoah Valley, 109; congratulates Sheridan, 117; admits peace commissioners within lines, 177; answers Lee as to peace negotiations, 180, 181; circulars offering deserters from enemy pay for arms, etc., 187, 188, note; orders for last campaign, 188, 189; anxious to conquer Lee without Western Army, 188; orders night fire of heavy guns, 192; interview with Lincoln, 199; directs pursuit of Lee, 201-216; dispatch to Meade as to movements, 205; in Palo Alto, 214; incident at Farmville, 217; demands Lee's surrender, 218; correspondence with and terms of Lee's surrender, 219, 225, 226; exposure and illness of, 224, 225; interviews, personal comparison with Lee, 225, 228; modifies terms of surrender as to horses and mules, 226; orders subsistence for Lee's troops, refuses to fire salute, 227; leaves for Washington, 228; at grand reviews, 230; mentioned, 306

Greece, slavery in, i., 6; perished, 7

Greeley, Horace, illustrations in *American Conflict* showing Union generals, i., 204; inaugurates peace negotiations, ii., 163; plan for peace, 164; correspondence with Lincoln, 164-168; with C. C. Clay and others, 168; observations on, 167

Green River, Ky., picturesque scene at, i., 241

Gregg, J. Irvin, General (U. S.), captured, ii., 218

Griffin, Charles, General (U. S.), at surrender of Lee, ii., 223; appointed to carry out terms of surrender, 227

Grim, —, Lieutenant (U. S. N.), at Shiloh, i., 255

Grose, W., Colonel (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 257

Gross, C. M., Captain 110th Ohio, captured, ii., 19, 300

Guadalupe Hidalgo treaty (1848) with Mexico for Upper California and New Mexico, i., 70

Guerrillas, weapons used by, i., 184; hanging of, 274; in Northern Alabama, 282; kill McCook, 285; McNeill's, 313-315; Moseby's, 322; kill Lt. Meigs, ii., 124

H

Hale, Eugene, of Maine, referred to, ii., 265

Hale, John P., of New Hampshire, Free Soil candidate (1852) for President, i., 87

Halleck, W. H., General (U. S.), relieves Fremont, Western Department, 1861, i., 231; jealous of Grant, 244, 251; at Pittsburg Landing, commands in the field, 261; moves on Corinth, 262; ignores Grant, 262; commands all the armies, 263; never under fire, 263; army at Corinth dispersed, 284; telegraphs Schenck of Lee's movements, ii., 5, 6; conduct as to Milroy, 19, 20; orders relating to troops at Maryland Heights, 22, 23; dispatches Meade to attack Lee, 34; telegram urging Meade to fight Lee, quoted, 59; relieved as General-in-Chief, made Chief of Staff, 71; wires Grant of Lee's plans, 76

Hamilton, C. S., General (U. S.), at Inka and Corinth, i., 289-291

Hamlin, Hannibal, of Maine, elected (1860) Vice-President, i., 119, 120

Hampden-Sidney College students at Rich Mountain, i., 200

Hampton, Wade, General (C. S.), on last battle of Civil War, ii., 212

Hancock, W. S., General (U. S.), at Gettysburg, ii., 28-32; wounded, 32; commands Second Corps, 71; in Wilderness, 79, 86, 87; Spotsylvania, 89

Hardee, Wm. J., General (C. S.), in Kentucky, i., 242; at Shiloh, 247, 248; mentioned, 302

Harney, W. S., General (U. S.), commands Department of the West, relieved, i., 230

Harper's Ferry seized by Confederates (1861), i., 161

Harris, Isham G., Governor of Tennessee, declares his State will furnish no Union troops, but fifty thousand for the South, quoted, i., 182

Harrison, Wm. Henry, Governor Indiana Territory, efforts to suspend Sixth Section of Ordinance of 1787, i., 25-28

Harrodsburg, Ky., Bragg's and Smith's armies united at, i., 295, 306

Harrow, Wm., Major (U. S.), mentioned, i., 220, 221

- Hart, —, suggests plan of attack and guides Rosecrans at Rich Mountain, i., 192, 193, 195
- Hartford, negroes brought to and sold, i., 12
- Hatch, George, Mayor of Cincinnati, mentioned, i., 287
- Hatchie Bridge, battle at, i., 292, 293
- Hathaway, Wm. A., Captain, 110th Ohio, killed, ii., 100; mentioned, 300
- Havana, Cuba, occupation of, ii., 292-295
- Hawes, Richard, last Secession Governor of Kentucky, incident of inauguration at Frankfort, i., 302, 303
- Hawkins, Sir John, first English slave trader, i., 9, 10
- Hawthorne, Sir John (and Menendez), first imported negroes into Florida (1556), i., 10
- Hay, John, Lincoln's private secretary, mentioned, i., 165, 166
- Hayden, A. F., Major (U. S.), on corps staff, wounded and incident, ii., 135, note
- Hayes, R. B., Major, 23d Ohio, mentioned, i., 208; General (U. S.), description, character, and services of, ii., 106; in Opequon, quoted, 112, 113; at Cedar Creek, 130-150; quoted on Cedar Creek, 142; interview on battlefield, 145
- Hayne, Robert Y., of South Carolina, speech of, on nullification (1830), i., 51; Webster's reply to, 52
- Hays, Alex., General (U. S.), killed in Wilderness, ii., 79
- Hays, Harry T., General (C. S.), mentioned, ii., 9, 11, 12; losses at Rappahannock Station, 55
- Hazelton, John F., Captain (U. S.), A. Q. M., brevet for gallantry, ii., 210, note
- Hebrews, Babylonian captivity of, i., 7; slavery of, 3, 7, 319, note
- Helper, Hilton R., of North Carolina, author of *The Impending Crisis*, etc., effect of slavery on white race, i., 122; discussion over book of, in Congress, 122
- Helwig, Theodore A., Surgeon 87th Pennsylvania, mentioned, ii., 85
- Henry, Patrick, predicts slaves will be free, i., 150
- Henry, W. H., Colonel 10th Vermont, at Cedar Creek, ii., 136
- Heth, Henry C., General (C. S.), in Kentucky, i., 288; headquarters captured, ii., 205, 229
- Higgins, D. J., Captain, 24th Ohio, mentioned, i., 219
- High Bridge, Va., affair at, ii., 216
- Hill, A. P., General (C. S.), at Gettysburg, ii., 26, 30-32; defeat at Bristol Station, report, endorsements on, quoted, 50-54; incident of killing at Petersburg, 195
- Hindman, Thos. C., General (C. S.), mentioned, i., 260
- Hiscock, Frank, of New York, in Congress, mentioned, ii., 267, 272
- Hoge, George W., Captain, 126th Ohio, at Fisher's Hill, ii., 119
- Hoke, R. F., General (C. S.), losses at Rappahannock Station, ii., 55
- Holcombe, James P., agent of Confederacy in Canada, ii., 165, 166
- Holt, Joseph, of Kentucky, Secretary of War, i., 131, 159; Judge Advocate-General, 159; letter to, showing transfer of arms South, 161; mentioned, ii., 20
- Homestead law, antagonized by attempts to acquire Cuba, i., 100-102; passed, area given away under, 102, note.
- Hood, John B., General (C. S.), at Gettysburg, ii., 31, 32
- Hooker, Joseph, General (U. S.), commands Army of Potomac, defeat of, at Chancellorsville, ii., 3; orders evacuation of Maryland Heights, order revoked by Halleck, resigns command of Army of Potomac, 22; telegrams to and from Lincoln, 23, 24; sent with Eleventh and Twelfth Corps to Georgia, 48; at Lookout Mountain, 71
- Horn, John W., Colonel 6th Maryland, at Brandy Station, ii., 56; at Orange Grove, 63, 64; in Wilderness, 80-83; mentioned, 107; wounded, date of death, 116, note.
- Hoskinson, T. J., Captain (U. S.), brevet for gallantry, ii., 210, note
- Hospitals, field, observations as to wounded in, ii., 85; in Spanish War, 290, 294, 295
- Hotchkiss, Jed., Captain Engineers (C. S.), quoted on Fisher's Hill, ii., 122; mentioned, 131
- Hottenstein, —, Captain, 42d Illinois, at Island No. 10, i., 261
- Houck, Sol. J., Captain, 71st Ohio, dismissal from and restoration to army, i., 297

Houston, Samuel, invades Texas, i., 63; defeats Santa Anna at San Jacinto (1836), secures independence of Texas, 64; opposes secession authority; deposed as Governor; plants cannon in front of house; quoted, 130, note

Houston, Wm. M., Surgeon 122d Ohio, mentioned, i., 311

Howard, Oliver O., General (U. S.), in Gettysburg, ii., 28

Howard, Wm. A., M. C. (1856), Kansas investigation committee, i., 94

Hughes, John, Archbishop, addresses New York draft rioters, ii., 43

Humphreys, A. A., General (U. S.), commands Fifth Corps, ii., 186; at Sailor's Creek, 211; pursuit of Lee, 216

Hunt, C. B., Colonel 1st Ohio, in Spanish War, ii., 291

Hunt, Henry J., General, commands artillery, Army of Potomac, ii., 72

Hunter, David, Major-General (U. S.), relieves Fremont, Western Department, relieved by Halleck, i., 231; in Shenandoah Valley, ii., 96; victory at Piedmont, 96; raid to Lynchburg, retreat, 96-99, 102; relieved, 102

Hunter, R. M. T., Senator (C. S.), peace commissioner, ii., 177-179

Hunton, Eppa, General (C. S.), capture of, at Sailor's Creek, ii., 208, 209

Huntsville, Ala., captured by Mitchell's division, i., 271, 274; home of Clays, Clemens, Rev. Ross, and others, 272

Hurlburt, Stephen A., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 247, 249, 253-255; at Bolivar, Tenn., and Hatchie, 289, 290, 292, 293

Hyatt, Thomas J., Captain, 126th Ohio, killed, ii., 116

I

Illinois, constitution of (1818), did not abolish slavery, i., 14, 27; slavery existed in until 1844, 26, note

Imboden, John D., General (C. S.), mentioned, i., 323

Impending Crisis of the South: How to Meet It, *The*, see Helper.

Indiana, Territory of, i., 27; territorial act authorized slavery, 27; constitution of (1816), prohibited slavery, but it existed in, until 1820, 27

Indians, American, sold into slavery, i., 7; held as slaves, 25

Insurrection, Nat Turner's, only slave, in United States, i., 61, 62, note

Ireland, slaves held in, i., 7

Island No. 10, capture of, i., 261, 262

Iuka, battle of, i., 289; casualties, 290

J

Jackson, Andrew, President, opposes nullification (1832), i., 53, 54; quoted on Secession, 54, 59; offers (1830) to buy Texas, 63

Jackson, Andy, an escaped slave, becomes author's servant, faithfulness and bravery of, i., 315; mentioned, ii., 83

Jackson, C. F., Governor of Missouri, denounces call for Union troops, quoted, i., 182

Jackson, H. R., General (C. S.), mentioned, i., 206, 226

Jackson, James S., General (U. S.), in Perryville, i., 302-304; killed, 304

Jackson, Thos. J. (Stonewall), General (C. S.), in Antietam, ii., 2; mentioned, i., 311; ii., 83, 87

Jacquess, James F., Colonel 73d Illinois, M. E. clergyman, proposes to negotiate peace, ii., 168, 169; goes to Richmond twice, 169, 170; interview of, with Davis, 170, 171

Jefferson, Thos., reports (1784) ordinance to prohibit slavery in Territories, i., 21; regrets expressed by, 22; believed (1803) slavery would be abolished, 42; prophecy as to the Union, quoted, 51; on evil effects of slavery, quoted, 126; prophecies slaves will be free, quoted, 150

Jenkins, Albert G., General (C. S.), mentioned, i., 323; killed by his own men in Wilderness, ii., 87

Jenkins, ———, Provost Marshal, New York City, commences draft, ii., 38, 39; residence burned by rioters, 41

Jesup, Thos. S., General (U. S.), treachery of, to Osceola, i., 47, note

Jetersville, Va., affair at, ii., 202, 204

Jewett, of Colorado, correspondence of, with Greeley on peace, ii., 163, note, 165

Joe (slave), escape of, to freedom, i., 245

Johnson, Bradley, General (C. S.), cuts railroad, ii., 101; in Opequon, 115

Johnson, B. R., General (C. S.), at Fort Donelson, i., 239; wounded, 260

- Johnson, D. D., Colonel (U. S.), mentioned, ii., 113
 Johnson, Edward, General (C. S.), at Winchester, at Stephenson's Depot, ii., 12, 14-19; captured, Spotsylvania, 89
 Johnson, Geo. W., Confederate Governor, Kentucky, killed at Shiloh, i., 260, 302
 Johnston, Albert Sidney, General (C. S.), commands Western Department, i., 247; at Shiloh, 247-254; address to his army, quoted, 248; killed, 254
 Johnston, J. E., General (C. S.), referred to, ii., 201, 229; surrender of army, 231
 Jones, F. C., Colonel (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 257
 Jones, H. P., Colonel of artillery (C. S.), at Winchester, ii., 12
 Jones, James A., Colonel 25th Ohio, mentioned, i., 219
 Jones, Willie, Colonel 2d South Carolina, Spanish War, ii., 292
 Jones, W. E., General (C. S.), in West Virginia, i., 313; killed, Piedmont, ii., 96
 Jones, W. Hemphill, order of Dix to, relating to Captain Breshwood, i., 164

K

- Kansas, a Territory (1854), i., 91; open to settlement, 94; movement in Missouri to make slave, 91; crack of rifle heard in, 94; Whitfield, proslavery, elected (1854) from, 94; committee to investigate outrages, 94; report of committee, 95; territorial governors, 95; election frauds, 96, note; struggle for freedom (1854-1861), history of, 94-97
 Kautz, A. V., General (U. S.), mentioned, ii., 94
 Kean, Thos. J., General (U. S.), at Corinth, i., 290
 Kearnstown, Va., battle at, ii., 7-9
 Keifer, Eliza Stout (author's wife), referred to, i., 212; ii., 47; parentage, birth, death of, 254, 296
 Keifer, Geo. (author's grandfather), date and place of birth, naturalization of, ii., 235, 236, note
 Keifer, Horace C., Captain of Engineers, A. D. C., mentioned, ii., 247, 296, 313

Keifer, J. Warren [*Experiences in the Civil War*], experiment (1863) with calibre .44 rifles, i. 183, note; summary of early life and occupation, enlistment as private soldier, (1861), 186, 187; Major, 3d Ohio, 187; observations on certain Union officers, 187, 188; incidents on picket at Rich Mountain, 194-198; on Confederate flank at Rich Mountain, 198-200; visited by wife and friends, 210; in Elk Water fight, 222; at death of John A. Washington, 223; transferred to Kentucky, 233; in camp at Bacon Creek, 241; Lt.-Colonel 3d Ohio, 241; at Nashville, and incidents, 245; march to Murfreesboro, observation on slaves, 241, 264, 265; constructs bridge, repairs R. R., and conducts forage train, 265; injury at Nashville, 266; loyalty at Shelbyville, Tenn., observed, 266; ordered by Buell to return slaves to masters, 273; witnesses hanging of guerrillas, 274; expedition into Georgia, destruction of saltpetre works, and captures, 276; anecdote relating to, with Garfield and Ammen, 280; letter from Schenck relating to De Courcey, 281, note; aide to Lytle, 282; incident catching rainwater, 296; promotion, 298, 301; first saw (Sept. 22, 1862) President's proclamation, its effect on Union officers, 298; interview with Grant relating to Thomas, 299; witnessed shooting of Nelson, 300; regrets leaving Western Army, 301; meeting of Western Army friends, 302; ii., 229; Col. 110th Ohio, its equipment, i., 309; school of officers, 310; mention of officers 110th Ohio, 310, note; moves regiment to West Virginia, 310; at New Creek and Moorfield, 312, 313; difficulty with Cluseret, 312, 314, 321; affair with McNeill's guerrillas, 315, colored servant Andy Jackson, 315; incident with Milroy on Alleghany Mountains, 315; at Winchester, 322-324; expedition to Front Royal, 323; President Military Commission, 272, 324; warning to Milroy of attack, ii., 3, 6, 7; in charge of scouts, 4, 6; commands in battle of Kearnstown, Va., 7-9; orders ladies from camp, 7, note; sons of Confederates on staff in Spanish

Keifer, J. Warren—*Continued*

War, 9, note; in battle near Winchester, 10-12; at Stephenson's Depot, 13-19; incident of valise, 16, note; "Keifer's Brigade" formed, 22, 23; dismantles forts at Maryland Heights; escorts canal boats, 23; in Third Corps, 23, 35; at Wapping Heights, 44; in New York City and Brooklyn, enforcing (1863) draft, 45-47; returns to Virginia, 47; commands rear-guard in retreat to Manassas Heights, 49, 50; witnesses battle of Bristoe Station, 52, note; goes to relief of Buford, bottle incident, 54, 55, note; charge near Brandy Station (Nov. 8, 1863), 56, 57; in Orange Grove, 62-65; at Mine Run, 66, 67; Col. Townsend incident, 69; officer-of-the-day, duty, 69; in Sixth Corps, 72; in Wilderness, 78-86; makes night attack, 80; wounded, 81; report quoted, 80-83; incident with Major McElwain, 78, 84; mentions officers killed and wounded, 81; criticism on Grant's reference to Milroy's old troops, 84; remark of Col. Ball as to wound, 85; experience in field hospital, 85, 86; reports to Sheridan; impressions of him; also of others, 104-106; command in affair at Smithfield, 107, 108; incident with Sheridan, 107, 108, note; in Opequon, 110-116; report on Opequon, quoted, 111, 112, 115; being wounded, effect of, 115; in Winchester, 115; mentions killed and wounded officers at Opequon, 115, 116; incident with Ebright, 116; at Fisher's Hill, 118-124; assault at Fisher's Hill, 121; incident on meeting Crook, 122; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; commands Third Division, Sixth Corps, 133-157; interview with Hayes, 145; meets Sheridan, 142; compliments officers, 133; isolation of division at Cedar Creek, 134; orders 9th New York to throw away arms, 140; successful charge, 148; brevetted Brig.-Gen'l for Cedar Creek, assigned to duty with that rank, 157; required to shoot deserter, 185; leads assault on outer works at Petersburg, complimented in orders, 189; importance of works taken, 191, note; in assault at Petersburg, incidents, 191-197; at Jetersville, 202; at Sailor's Creek, 205-216; incident with Sheridan's

band, 206; incident at wounding of Col. Smith, 207, note; charge at Sailor's Creek, 208-210; captures general officers, 209; captures Marine Brigade, incident with Tucker, 210; intercedes for release of Tucker and Semmes, 211; visits Sailor's Creek, 212; last field battle, 212-214; incident with Grant and Wright at Farmville, 217; incident with Col. Kellogg, 219; incidents on Lee's surrender, 228; Lincoln memorial meeting, 228; march to Burkeville and Danville, 229; visits Sherman's army in North Carolina, 229; in review at Washington, 230; appointed Brevet Maj.-Gen'l, 230; muster out, 230; incident with Stanton, 230, note; time and places of service in the army, 230, 231; casualties in brigade, 231, 303; appointed Lt.-Col. U.S.A.; and declined, 231, note, 255, note; mentions officers 110th Ohio, 300; farewell order, 302; correspondence with Wright, 304; [*Experiences in Civil Life and in the Spanish War*] birth, 235; ancestry and family history, 235-247; boyhood pursuits and studies, 247-252; admission to bar, 252; visits Western cities, 252, 253; reference to Lincoln, 252; incident near Cairo, 253; practises law in Springfield, 253, 254; marriage, 254; soldier for four years, where service, wounds, 230, 231, 254, 255; public service in civil life, 255-286; political life, 255-257; in Ohio Senate, 257; public positions held, 257; election to Congress, 257; service in Congress, 258-285; speaks on various subjects, 258-266; on War Claims and Election Committees, 258; offers amendment to Constitution relating to claims, quoted, 260; on election cases and postal laws, 260; on effect of mode of presenting claims, 258-261, note; opposes repeal of resumption act, 261; position as to Geneva Award fund, 261, 262, note; opposes repeal of laws to preserve peace at the polls, 262-266; on electoral count, 266; opinions on Garfield, Conkling, Arthur, and Blaine, 267-269; elected Speaker (1881), 267; inaugural address, 269, 270; on duties of Speaker, 270-274, note; unjust criticisms on, answered, 272, 273, notes; no parliamentary decisions of, over-

- Keifer, J. Warren—*Continued*
 ruled, 274, 284; decision against dilatory motions, quoted, 275-281; decision cited in House of Commons, now generally regarded, 281; vote of thanks of House, 281; valedictory as Speaker, quoted, 282-284; caucus nominee (1883) for Speaker, 284; on Committee on Appropriations, and Committee on Rules, speech against Fitz-John Porter bill, 284; favors pensioning Mexican War veterans, and increase of navy, 285; work on Appropriations Committee, 285; tribute to S. J. Randall, 285; end of service in Congress, 285; when this book was written by, 286; reasons for going into Spanish War, 286-288; Maj.-Gen'l Vols., 288; in Seventh Corps, at Miami, Fla., 289, 290; care of troops, 290, 291, 294, 295; at Jacksonville and Savannah, 290-292; army review for President, 291; embarks for Cuba, 292; commands troops, New Year's Day, at Havana, 292, 293; describes scene in Havana, 293, 294; views on Cuban problem, 307; how occupied in Cuba, 294-296; army review in Cuba for Secretary of War, 295; death of wife, 296; muster out, 296; length of war service, 296; reference to staff, 9, note, 296, 313; résumé of Spanish War, 297-299; correspondence with Wright, 304; letter on Cuba to Corbin, 307; staff in Spanish War, list of, 313; farewell order, Spanish War, 315
- Keifer, Joseph (author's father), life and character of, ii., 236-239; children named, 247; description of, 247, note
- Keifer, Margaret (author's grandmother), life and character of, ii., 236, 237
- Keifer, Mary (Smith) (author's mother), life and character of, ii., 239, 246, 247
- Keifer's Brigade, organized, ii., 23; in Orange Grove, 62-65; in log huts, 68; in Sixth Corps, 71; additions to, 71, 81; in Wilderness, 78-91; officers killed and wounded, 81; assault at Cold Harbor, 90, 91; at Monocacy, 99, 100; mentioned, 107; in Fisher's Hill, 119-122; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; in siege of Petersburg, 184-187; captures outworks at Petersburg, 189; in assault at Petersburg, 191-197; at Sailor's Creek, 205-216; flags captured, 229, note; farewell order to, 302; *casualties*: Orange Grove, 65; Wilderness, 93; Monocacy, 100; from May 5 to July 9, 1864, 100; in Opequon, 117; Fisher's Hill, 123; Cedar Creek, 154; Sailor's Creek, 229; in all operations, 231, 303
- Keitt, L. M., at Brooks' assault on Sumner, i., 99, note
- Kelley, Wm. D., of Pennsylvania, Chairman of Ways and Means Committee, House of Representatives, ii., 272
- Kellogg, Horace, Colonel 123d Ohio, escape, and starving of, ii., 219
- Kelly, B. F., Colonel (U. S.), occupies Grafton, i., 189; at Philippi, 190; mentioned, ii., 5
- Kemper, James L., General (C. S.), in Pickett's charge, Gettysburg, ii., 30; wounded, 32
- Kennedy, —, Police Superintendent New York City, in riots, ii., 39
- Kennedy, Robt. P., Lieutenant, 23d Ohio, Captain, Assistant Adjutant-General, and Brevet Brigadier-General, mentioned, i., 208
- Kennett, John, Colonel 4th Ohio Cavalry, at Nashville, i., 245; captures train, 266
- Kentucky, becomes a State, i., 29; doubtful attitude of, 182, 186; neutrality, occupancy of, 229; plan of invasion of, 284, 286, 293-307; Bragg on failure of invasion of, 306, 307
- Kershaw, Joseph B., General (C. S.), in Shenandoah Valley, ii., 103; at Berryville, 108, 109; rejoins Early, 124, 157; at Cedar Creek, 131-152; captured, Sailor's Creek, 208, 209
- Kilburn, C. L., loyal United States Army officer (1861) at New Orleans, i., 164
- Kilpatrick, Judson, General (U. S.), at Gettysburg, ii., 32
- Kimball, Nathan, Colonel 14th Indiana, on Cheat Mountain, i., 217, 219
- King, Rufus, of New York, on Missouri Compromise, i., 48; on slavery, 50
- Kinsale, Lord, of England, *see* De Courcey.
- Kirk, W. N., Colonel (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 259
- Knott, Proctor, of Kentucky, in Congress, referred to, ii., 274
- Koran, no sanction for slavery in, i., 8, note

L

- Lamoraux, S. B., Major, 9th New York Heavy Artillery, in Petersburg assault, ii., 195
- Lander, F. W., Colonel (U. S.), aide to McClellan, at Rich Mountain, i., 193
- Lane, Geo. W., of Alabama, United States Judge, mentioned, i., 272
- Laurel Hill, W. Va., held by Garnett, i., 190
- Law, applicable to slaves in Territories, i., 73, 89; as to Hebrew slavery, 319
- Lawson, O. A., Captain, 3d Ohio, at Middle Fork Bridge, i., 191
- Leadbetter, Danville, General (C. S.), at Bridgeport, i., 274, 275
- Lecompton constitution, pro-slavery, i., 95; peculiar vote on, 96, 97
- Lee, Fitzhugh, General (C. S.), resigns from United States Army, i., 169; at Smithfield, ii., 107; at Opequon, wounded, 109, 117; at Dinwiddie and Five Forks, 189, 190; at Appomattox, 203; in council of war, 221, 222; Major-General Spanish War, mentioned, 288, 291, 292
- Lee, G. W. Custis, Major and General (C. S.), resigns from United States Army, i., 169; service, 223, note; capture at Sailor's Creek, 223, note; ii., 208, 209; referred to, 306
- Lee, Robert E., General (C. S.), resignation as Colonel United States Army, reasons therefor, i., 167-169, note; commands Confederates Western Virginia (1861), 189, 206, note; at Valley Mountain, 206; order for attack on Reynolds, quoted, 216; letter to Governor Letcher, 218; repulse at Elk Water and Cheat Mountain, 220-223; correspondence relating to death of Washington, and attack on Cheat Mountain, 224, 225; under shadow, 225, 226; called to Richmond, 226; at Antietam, Chancellorsville, and Fredericksburg, ii., 1-3; movement of army to Gettysburg, 25-27; on absence of cavalry at Gettysburg, 27; responsibility of Pickett's charge, 32; retreat from Gettysburg, 33, 34; escapes across Potomac, 33; apprehension as to battle north of Potomac, 33; retreats behind Rapidan, 44; advance to Bristoe, withdrawal, 48-57; endorsement on Hill's report, quoted, 53; at Mine Run, 65-68; says too old to command, 68; plans of campaign (1864), 76, 77; in Wilderness and Spotsylvania, 78-93; despairs of result of battle of Wilderness, 87; suggests peace negotiations, 159; approves enlistment of slaves, they to become free, 159; conference with Davis and Longstreet on peace negotiations, 180; writes Grant, empowered to make peace, 180; at Petersburg, 188-200; dispatches to evacuate Richmond, quoted, 197, 198; evacuates Petersburg, 198; retreat to Amelia Court-House, thence to Appomattox Court-House, 201-225; divides army into two wings, 203; exclamations regarding his army at Sailor's Creek, 214, 215; in a panic, 218; answers Grant's demand to surrender, 218, 219; advised by his generals to surrender, 221; last council of war, 221; plan for escape, its failure, 222, 223; truce and surrender, 223-227; letters to Grant on surrender, 225, 226; terms of surrender, 225; number surrendered, asks for rations, 227; interview with Grant, retires to Richmond, 228
- Lee, S. P., Admiral (U. S. N.), mentioned, ii., 162
- Lee, W. H. F., Major (C. S.), at Elk Water, i., 223; service in war and rank, 223, note
- Letcher, John, Confederate Governor Virginia, spiteful refusal to furnish Union troops, i., 182; letter from Lee, 225; residence burned, ii., 97
- Lexington*, gunboat, at Shiloh, i., 255
- Lincoln-Douglas debates (1858), effect of, on public opinion, i., 117
- Lincoln, Abraham (M. C.), opposed Mexican War, i., 67; debates with Douglas, 117; elected President (1860), 119, 120; inaugural (1865), on the war, reading of Bible and prayer of opposing parties, quoted, 138; opposes bargaining into Presidency, quoted, 144; approves law abolishing slavery in District of Columbia, and in all Territories (29), 147, 148; belief that nation could not exist half slave and half free, quoted, 150, 151; instrument of God, 151; character illumined by time, 155; President, reasons for not evacuating Sumter, 171, 172; proclamation for troops, pleads for peace and

Lincoln, Abraham — *Continued*

- Union, first inaugural, quoted, 177, 178; Congress convened by, 177; letter to Greeley on saving the Union, 178; not understood, 178; second call for troops, 181; reasons for standing by McClellan, 204; orders commission for Buckner, 229; disapproves proclamation to free slaves, etc., 230, 231; war orders, and criticism over, 235-237, note; appoints Turchin a Brigadier-General, 280; promises his Maker to issue proclamation to free slaves, issued September 22, 1862, ii., 2, 3; telegram relating to Milroy, 6; quoted on Milroy at Winchester, 20; interest in army movements, characteristic telegrams to Hooker, 24; urges Meade to attack Lee, 34; Conkling letter on Emancipation Proclamation, quoted, 46, 47; letter urging Meade to battle, quoted, 59; dispatch to Grant relative to movement of troops, 102; congratulates Sheridan, 117; correspondence with Wood on peace negotiations, 160; with Duff Green, 161; relating to Stephens' peace mission, quoted, 162; letters to Greeley on peace, 164-166; relations with Greeley, 167, 168; refuses to recognize Jacquess as peace negotiator, 169, 170; correspondence as to peace with Raymond, 172, 173; abandonment of slavery a condition of peace, 164, 166, 174, 177; assents to Blair, Sr., going on peace mission, 174; correspondence with Blair, 176; meets Davis' peace commissioners, 177, 178; reference to Charles I., 178; instructions to Seward on terms for peace, 177; instructs Grant to have no political conference with Lee, quoted, 181; desire to conquer Lee without Western army, 188; at City Point, Petersburg, and Richmond, 199, 200; dispatch to Stanton, 199; sanctions calling Virginia Legislature together, 199; conditions of restoration of the Union, 200; return to Washington, death and incidents of, 200, note; dispatch to Grant, "Let the thing be pressed," 204; death announced to army, 228; referred to, 252
- Lincoln, Benjamin, General in Revolution, character and misfortunes of, i., 180, note
- Locust Grove, *see* Orange Grove, Va.
- Logan's Cross Roads, Ky., battle at, i., 234
- Lomax, L. L., General (C. S.), at Front Royal, ii., 131, 152
- Long, A. L., General (C. S.), at Lee's surrender, ii., 222
- Longstreet, James, resigns as Captain United States Army, and theory as to right to, i., 165, 166; theory that enlisted men could not join rebellion, 166; General (C. S.), movement to Gettysburg, ii., 26; criticises Stuart's cavalry raid, 27; at Gettysburg, 29-32; disapproves Pickett's charge, 30; goes to Georgia, 48; at Knoxville, 71; plan of campaign (1864), 76, 77; in Wilderness, wounded by his own men, 87; fake dispatch to Early, 129, 155; interviews with Ord, Davis, and Lee on peace negotiations, plan for ladies and officers to negotiate, 179, 180; at Petersburg, 197; at Rice's Station, 205, 214, 215; in retreat, 218, 219; refuses to advise Lee to surrender, of Lee's last council of war, 221; tried to recall Lee from meeting Grant, 222, note; appointed to carry out terms of surrender, 227
- Loomis, C. O., Captain Cold Water (Mich.) Battery, at Rich Mountain, i., 191
- Loring, W. W., General (C. S.), order quoted for attack on Cheat Mountain, i., 214; mentioned, 218
- Louisiana, secedes from Union, i., 130; seizes United States mint and coin, 159; thanks from Confederate Congress, 160; coins United States hulton, 160, note.
- Louisiana Purchase (1803), cost, i., 42; extent of, 42, note; Article Three, cession of, effect on slavery, 42-44; Dred Scott decision as to Article Three of treaty, 43, 44, 111
- Lovejoy, Elijah P., editor of abolition paper, killed (1837), Alton, by mob from Missouri, i., 123
- Lovejoy, Owen, Member of Congress from Illinois, denounces slaveholding, i., 123
- Lowell, Chas. R., Colonel (U. S.), in Opequon, ii., 114; killed at Cedar Creek, 153
- Ludlow, Wm., Major-General, Governor of Havana, referred to, ii., 292, 295
- Lundy, Wm., anti-slavery agitator, i., 60

- Lupton, Mary, Quakeress, mentioned, ii., 16, note
- Lyon, Nathaniel, General (U. S.), commands Department of the West, killed, Wilson's Creek, i., 230
- Lytle, Wm. H., Colonel (U. S.), incident with insubordinate troops, i., 271; expedition to Winchester, Tenn., 282; Colonel 10th Ohio, wounded, captured, Perryville, 305
- M
- McCabe, Chas. C., (Bishop M. E. Church), Chaplain 122d Ohio, efficiency and character, i., 311; incident with secession ladies, 323; captured, caring for wounded, ii., 19
- McCann, T. K., Captain (U. S.), A. Q. M. in charge Hunter's train, ii., 98
- McCausland, John, General (C. S.), mentioned, ii., 97; affair at Bunker Hill, 108; burns Chambersburg, 125
- McClellan, Geo. B., General (U. S.), orders as to transportation for troops, headquarters, etc., i., 184, 185; proclamation to Western Virginia, quoted, 188; concentrates at Clarksburg, 190; orderly at Rich Mountain carries message to enemy, 194, 195, note; inactivity at Rich Mountain, 197-199; quoted on Rich Mountain, 199, 200; moves to Cheat Mountain, 202; summoned to Washington, 203; character of, 203, 204; talk of dictatorship, letter to wife, quoted, 203; on Chickahominy, at Malvern Hill, and Antietam, ii., 1, 2; relieved, 3; mentioned, i., 236, 237
- McClennan, M. R., Colonel 138th Pennsylvania, at Brandy Station, ii., 56; at Orange Grove, 63, 64; wounded, 63; in Wilderness, 80-83; at Monocacy, 99
- McClelland, John A., General (U. S.), at Fort Donelson, i., 238; at Shiloh, 247, 249, 255
- McCook, Alex. McD., on Green River, Ky., i., 233; at Shiloh, 250; at Perryville, 302-305; informs Buell of situation at Perryville, 304
- McCook, Anson G., General (U. S.), mentioned, i., 285
- McCook, Robt. L., General, mentioned, i., 191, 207; killed by guerrillas near New Market, Ala., 285
- McCooks of Ohio, in Civil War, i., 285
- McDougal, Leonidas, Captain, 3d Ohio killed, Perryville, i., 305
- McElwain, Wm. S., Major, 110th Ohio, incident at Rapidan, ii., 79; killed in Wilderness, 84; mentioned, 300
- McKenzie, James W., of Kentucky, asks that reporters' gallery, House of Representatives, be opened, ii., 273
- McKinley, Wm., Company Sergeant, Second Lieutenant, Captain, and Brevet Major, mentioned, i., 208; President, referred to, ii., 288; calls for troops, Spanish War, 288; reviews army at Savannah, 291; approves ratification of treaty with Spain, 298
- McKnight, —, Captain New York battery, mentioned, ii., 49, 136
- McLaws, Lafayette, General (C. S.), at Gettysburg, ii., 31, 32
- McLean, John, Justice Supreme Court (1857), holds Third Article of cession of Louisiana Province did not perpetuate slavery, i., 44; dissents in Dred Scott case, 103
- McMeans, R. R., Surgeon 3d Ohio, mentioned, i., 210
- McMeans, Mrs., wife of Surgeon 3d Ohio, mentioned, i., 266
- McNeil, J. H., Captain (C. S.) of guerrillas, West Virginia, affair with, i., 313, 315
- McPherson, James B., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 250; at Corinth, 291, 292
- McReynolds, A. T., Colonel 1st New York Cavalry, at Winchester, ii., 13, 18
- Mabry, W. H., Colonel 1st Texas, Spanish War, death of, in Cuba, ii., 292
- Mackall, W. W., General (C. S.), captured at Island No. 10, i., 262
- Madison, James, President, letter of (1833), against slavery's demands, quoted, i., 60
- Magoffin, Beriah, Governor, declares Kentucky will furnish no Union troops, quoted, i., 182
- Mahone, Wm., General (C. S.), quoted on Lee at Sailor's Creek, ii., 214, 215; referred to, 216
- Maine, admitted (1820) as a State, i., 50
- Maine*, battleship, destroyed, ii., 287
- Mallory, Stephen R., Florida (1861), of Central Cabal, i., 132
- Mann, Horace, cited, i., 40; defence of Drayton for larceny of slaves, 146, note; reference to Methuselah, 146, note; remark on Miss Dix, ii., 86

- Mansfield, Lord (Wm. Murray), announced slaves could not be held under English Constitution (1772), i., 8; decision binding on American colonies, 8, 19
- Manson, M. D., Colonel 10th Indiana, at Rich Mountain, i., 195
- Marengo, battle of, compared with Cedar Creek, ii., 155, 156, 191
- Marrow, I. H., Colonel 3d Ohio, speech at Rich Mountain, quoted, i., 193; mentioned, 221, 241
- Marshall, Humphrey, General (C. S.), defeat in Eastern Kentucky, i., 234
- Marshall, James W., discovers gold in California, i., 71
- Martin, David, Chief-Justice of Kansas, referred to, ii., 250, note
- Maryland, ratifies amendment to Constitution to make slavery perpetual, i., 141; response to call for troops, 181
- Mason, Edwin C., Colonel 7th Maine, reference to, wounded, Wilderness, ii., 85
- Mason, Rodney, Colonel (U. S.), surrenders Clarksville, dismissal from army, revocation of order of, i., 297
- Mason, Samson, of Ohio, mentioned, i., 245
- Mason and Slidell, Confederate Commissioners, taken by Captain Wilkes, i., 237, note
- Massachusetts, General Court returns stolen Africans, i., 17; held blacks and Indians as slaves, 11; abolished slavery (1780), 30
- Massachusetts Regiment, 6th, fired on in Baltimore, i., 179
- Mather, Cotton (Puritan), proposition to capture William Penn and crew of *Welcome*, and sell them for rum and sugar, i., 11, note
- Matthews, Stanley, Lieutenant-Colonel 23d Ohio, mentioned, i., 208
- Meade, Geo. G., General (U. S.), assigned to command Army of Potomac, ii., 22, 27; birth, character, and military service, 25; movement of army to Gettysburg, 27-29; at Gettysburg, 29-32; pursuit of Lee from Gettysburg, 33, 34; failure to attack Lee north of Potomac, 33, 34; pursuit of Lee, 44; retreat and pursuit of Lee, 49-57; personal characteristics, 58; quoted in reply to Halleck, 59; at Orange Grove, 60-65; Mine Run campaign, 66-68; retires army to Brandy Station, 67; plan for campaign (1864), 74, 75; reduces transportation, 75; Wilderness, 77-93; quoted on Ricketts' division, 91; at Petersburg, 188-200; starvation order, 204; dispatch from Grant, 205; pursuit of Lee, 201-224; energy while ill, 224; referred to, 306
- Meigs, John R., Lieutenant of Engineers (U. S.), Sheridan's staff, killed by guerrillas, ii., 124
- Meloy, Wm. T., Lieutenant, 122d Ohio, mentioned, i., 311
- Mercy not an attribute of war, i., 176; ii., 153
- Merrill, Wm. E., Lieutenant of Engineers (U. S.), capture of, i., 213
- Merritt, Wesley, General (U. S.), at Smithfield, ii., 107; in Opequon, 109-116; in Luray Valley, 120; at Tom's Brook, 126; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; at Sailor's Creek, 205-216; in pursuit of Lee's army, 216-224; appointed to carry out terms of surrender, 227
- Methodist Episcopal Church South endorses disunion and slavery, i., 137
- Mexican War (1846-48), to acquire slave territory, i., 66-75; an intrigue, 67; appropriations to buy peace, 68; jealousies in, 68; numbers and casualties in, ii., 155, 231, note
- Mexico, independence of Spain proclaimed (1821), i., 62; abolished slavery (1837), 62; cessions to United States, 70; efforts to have ceded territory made free, 72
- Michigan, slavery held to exist in by Jay treaty, i., 28; Constitution (1837) put an end to slavery, 28
- Middle Fork Bridge, affair at, i., 191
- Miles, Nelson A., Major-General (U. S.), mentioned, ii., 297
- Mill Springs, Ky., battle of, casualties in, i., 234, 235
- Miller, Rev. Milton J. Chaplain 110th Ohio, mentioned, ii., 243
- Milroy, Robert H., General (U. S.), personal description, i., 311; mode of conducting the war, 312; Davis' proclamation as to, 312; incident on Alleghany Mountains, speech on emancipation, quoted, 315, 316; in Shenandoah Valley, quoted, 317-324; emancipation of slaves, 317-320; in battles at Winchester, ii., 4-21; reluctance to believe in attacks on Winchester, telegrams, quoted, 4, 5, 12;

- Milroy, Robert H. — *Continued*
 retreat to Harper's Ferry, 13-19; arrest and court of inquiry, 19; Lincoln quoted on, 20; death, character, 20, 21; Grant's reference to troops of, 84
- Mine Run, Va., campaign, ii., 58-68; casualties, 68
- Mississippi, secedes (1861), i., 130; declaration of causes for secession, quoted, 134
- Missouri, admitted (1821) as slave State, i., 51; border ruffians in Kansas, 94; refuses to furnish Union troops, 182
- Missouri Compromise (1820), fixes 36° 30' northern limit for slavery in Louisiana territory, i., 48, 51; debate on, 48-51
- Mitchel, O. M., General (U. S.), in Department of Ohio, i., 233; at Bowling Green and Nashville, 242; operates through Murfreesboro, 250; campaign to Alabama, 264-283; captures Huntsville, 271; advanced notions on treatment of slaves, 273; at Bridgeport, 275; relieved in the West, assigned to Department of the South, death of, 283
- Mitchell, R. B., General (U. S.), at Perryville, i., 304, 305
- Mizner, John K., Colonel (U. S.), at Corinth, i., 290
- Mobile, Ala., date of surrender, ii., 231
- Mohammedanism, no sanction for slavery, i., 8
- Monocacy, Md., battle of, ii., 99-101; casualties, 100
- Montgomery, Ala., first Confederate convention held (Feb. 4, 1861) at, i., 132; Confederate States of America named at, 132; first Confederate capital, 175
- Moorish slavery passed away, i., 6, 8
- Morgan, —, Captain, 13th Pennsylvania Cavalry, mentioned, ii., 12
- Morgan, Geo. W., General (U. S.), evacuates Cumberland Gap, i., 286, 297
- Morgan, John, cavalry raider (C. S.), at Nashville, i., 245, 246; in Kentucky and Ohio, 285-288; mentioned, 76
- Morris, Thomas A., General (U. S.), at Philippi, 1861, i., 190, 191; pursuit of Garnett, 201
- Morris, Wm. H., General (U. S.), at Orange Grove, ii., 62-65
- Morton, Oliver P., Governor of Indiana, present at killing of Nelson, i., 300
- Mosby, John S., Colonel guerrillas (C. S.), in Virginia, i., 322
- Moss, —, Colonel 2d Virginia (U. S.), mentioned, i., 221
- Moss, —, Lieutenant-Colonel 13th Pennsylvania Cavalry, mentioned, ii., 8, 9
- Mouk, John W., Corporal, 138th Pennsylvania, kills Lt.-Gen. A. P. Hill, ii., 195
- Moultrie, Fort, evacuated by Major Anderson, i., 158
- Mumford, Thos. T., General (C. S.), escapes at Appomattox Court-House, ii., 222, note
- Munfordville, Ky., camp at, i., 233; captured by Bragg, 294

N

- Napoleon, decree against slave trade, i., 40; remark as to a defeated general, ii., 152; at Marengo, 156
- Nashville, disunion convention (1850), i., 76; Confederate mob at, capture of, 242, 243
- Navy, United States, disloyalty (1861) of officers of, i., 162, 165
- Nebraska Act (1854), effect of, on slavery extension, i., 45; history and passage of, 88-93; Chase's amendment offered to, 93
- Nebraska Territory, what it comprised (1854), and area, i., 88; part of Louisiana Purchase, 88; divided (1854), 91; southern part called Kansas, 91
- Negley, James S., General (U. S.), expedition in Tennessee, i., 282
- Negro Fort, Florida, destroyed with massacre of fugitive slaves (1816), i., 46
- Negroes, number carried to America previous to 1776, i., 17; fought for American independence, 18; held no rights white man bound to respect, 18, 105, 110; persecuted in New York riots, ii., 40, 41
- Nelson, Wm., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 250, 256-258; at Richmond, Ky., 286; killed by Jeff. C. Davis, 300-301
- New England, earliest importation of negro slaves (1637), i., 11;

New England—*Continued*

- slavery did not flourish in, 11, 12; ships from, landed negroes as slaves at Boston, New York City, 12; late as 1807, negro slaves brought to, 12
- Newhall, Fred C., Colonel (U. S.), Adjutant-General, at surrender of Lee, ii., 223
- New Hampshire did not prohibit slavery by law, but persons born after 1776 were free, i., 30
- New Jersey, emancipation attempted 1778, slavery prohibited in qualified way (1804), slavery abolished by Thirteenth Amendment to Constitution, i., 31
- New Mexico, ceded (1848) to United States, i., 70; held no slaves, 72; made a Territory (1850) to become slave or free, 85
- New Orleans, slavers fitted out at, i., 41; disloyalty at (1861), 163, 164
- Newton, John, General (U. S.), commands First Corps, ii., 60; relieved, 71, 72
- New York, gradual emancipation (1799), and final (1827), i., 30
- New York City, slave depot, Wall street, i., 12; slavers fitted out at, 41; draft riots (1863), ii., 36-44; Mayor Wood's proposition to make a *free city*, 37; rioters in, killed and wounded, 43; damage claims on, for riots, 44
- Nightingale*, of Boston, last slave trader from United States, captured (1861), i., 40
- North, the, attitude of people at beginning of war in, i., 172-174; unprepared for war, 179; observations on volunteer army of, 179-181, notes; arms used in, 183, note
- North Carolina, ceded (1789), territory (Tennessee) to become slave (1796), i., 29; secession from Union, 136; refusal to furnish Union troops, 182
- Northwest of Ohio, territory, slavery prohibited in, i., 14; efforts to suspend Ordinance of 1787 against slavery, 25-28
- Nullification, first attempted (1832) on tariff, i., 51-54; debate on, 51-61; Calhoun on, 52-59; ordinance of (South Carolina), 53; ordinance repealed (1833), 54; issue changed to slavery, 55; Webster on, 54, 55; Secession and, 125-136

O

- O'Brien, Henry T., Colonel (U. S.), killed, body dragged about the streets by New York rioters, ii., 42
- Officer, what constitutes a good, i., 179-181, 244, 245, 307, 308; Sheridan's definition of a good, ii., 191
- Officers of United States Army and United States Navy, numbers who went into Confederacy, i., 162; resignations of, 165-169
- Ohio, Territory of, i., 26; binding effect of Ordinance of 1787 in, 23, note; Constitution of (1802), excluded slavery, 28; ratified (1861) amendment of Constitution of United States to make slavery perpetual, 141, note
- Ohio regiments:
- Third, ordered from Virginia to Kentucky, i., 232; at Huntsville, Decatur, and Bridgeport, Ala., 274; in Petryville, 305
 - Tenth, insubordination of, i., 271
- One Hundred and Tenth, organization, mention of officers, i., 309, 310; ii., 300; in Keifer's Brigade, 23; casualties in, 231, 303
- Oliver, Mordecai, Missouri Member (1856) of Kansas Investigation Committee, i., 94
- Opdyke, George, Mayor New York, in draft riots, ii., 39, 43
- Opequon, Va., battle of, ii., 107-117; casualties, 117
- Orange Grove, Va., battle of, ii., 58-66; various names for, 65; map, 60; casualties, 65; referred to, 84
- Ord, E. O. C., General (U. S.), in Mississippi, i., 289, 292, 293; plan for campaign (1864), ii., 75; tries to negotiate peace, 179, 180; ladies and officers to negotiate, 180; commands Army of James, 186; in front of Petersburg, 197; in pursuit of Lee, 201-224; at Rice's Station, 205; in front of Lee at Appomattox, 220, 221
- Ordinance of 1787, original (1784), proposed by Jefferson to exclude slavery from Territories, lost by a single vote, i., 21, 22; history of adoption of, 21; reported by Nathan Dane, 22, 23, notes; disputed authorship, 22, note; prohibited slavery northwest of River of Ohio, 22; re-enacted by First Congress, 23; continuing binding force, 23, note, 26; passed by members of

Ordinance of 1787—*Continued*

- Continental Congress and Constitutional Convention, 23, note; area of Territory and States applicable to, 23; model of perfection, 23, 24; efforts to suspend slavery section (6), 24, 25; slavery existed in Northwest Territory, 24–28; St. Clair's construction of, 26; but for, Indiana and Illinois would have been slave, 28; fugitive slave clause, 28; a compromise measure, 28; overthrown by Nebraska Act (1854), Dred Scott decision (1857), 28, 29; re-enacted in principle (1862), 29
- Ordinance: rifles, experiment with, i., 183; order of Keifer to throw away in battle, ii., 140; rifles used in Spanish War, 291
- Osceola, Seminole chief, friend of the blacks, i., 47; origin, character, betrayal, and death of, 47, note
- Oxford, Kan., election at (1857), voters' names from Cincinnati Directory, i., 96, note

P

- Paint Rock, Ala., burned by Beatty, i., 282
- Palmetto Rancho, Texas, last fighting at, ii., 213
- Palo Alto, Texas, first battle, Mexican War, ii., 213; Grant at, 214
- Parke, J. G., General (U. S.), commands Ninth Corps, ii., 186; assault at Petersburg, 197
- Parker, Ely S., Colonel (U. S.) (Chief of Six Nations), copies Grant's draft of terms of Lee's surrender, taken by Lee for a negro; an Indian, ii., 226
- Parker, Theodore, Unitarian minister, aids John Brown, i., 113; predicts slavery will not die a dry death, quoted, 152
- Parliamentary rules, observations on, ii., 270, 274, 275, 283, 284
- Payne, William H., General (C. S.), at Cedar Creek, to capture Sheridan, ii., 132
- Payne's Farm, *see* Orange Grove.
- Peace Conference (1861), history of, i., 142–145; members of, 142–144, note; propositions submitted to, 144; report of, defeat in Congress, 143, 144
- Peace negotiations, ii., 158–183; Lee suggests, 159, 160; difficulty in ad-

- dressings Mr. Davis in opening negotiations, 162, 176
- Pegram, John, Colonel and General (C. S.), commands Confederates at Rich Mountain, i., 190; captures McClellan's dispatch to Rosecrans, 194, 195, note; attempt to retrieve disaster, 196, 198; retreat from Rich Mountain, capture, 200, 201; at Cedar Creek, ii., 146, 152; death of, 210
- "Pelican Flag," of Louisiana, flies (1861) over Custom-House and Mint, New Orleans, i., 164
- Pendleton, William N., General (C. S.), Chief of Artillery, at Gettysburg, ii., 31; commands artillery, 203; advises Lee to surrender, in last council of war, 221; designated to carry out terms of surrender, 227
- Penn, William, proposition to capture, and sell into slavery for rum, i., 11, note
- Pennsylvania, gradual emancipation (1780) in, i., 30
- Perryville, battle of, i., 302–306; Polk commands Confederate army at, 303–306; casualties, 306
- Petersburg, Va., attacks on by Butler and Meade, ii., 95; siege and evacuation of, 185–200; fortifications around, 187; assault at, 213
- Pettitt, James S., Colonel in Spanish War, ii., 291
- Phelps, S. L., Lieutenant-Commander (U. S. N.), on Tennessee River, i., 238
- Philippi, W. Va., affair at, i., 190
- Philippine Islands, acquisition of, war in, ii., 298
- Phillips, Wendell, Abolitionist, aids John Brown, i., 113; mentioned, 123; inconsistency of, 172
- Piatt, Donn, on staff of Schenck, report on position at Winchester, ii., 4, 5, note
- Pickett, George E., General (C. S.), at Gettysburg, leads charge, ii., 30–32; at Dinwiddie Court-House, and Five Forks, 189, 190; at Sailor's Creek, 208, 209
- Piedmont, Va., battle of, ii., 96
- Pierce, Franklin, President, i., 87; appoints governors of Kansas, 95
- Pillow, Gideon J., General (C. S.), at Belmont, i., 231; at Fort Donelson, 239, 240
- Pinckney, Castle, seized by Confederates, i., 170

- Pinckney, William, of Maryland, mentioned, i., 48, 50
- Pittinger, William, of Andrews' raid, story of, i., 271
- Pittsburg*, gunboat, runs batteries at Island No. 10, i., 262
- Pittsburg Landing, Tenn., i., 249
- Platforms (1852, 1856, 1860), party, i., 87, 117-119
- Platt, Thomas C., Senator, resigns, ii., 267
- Pleasanton, Alfred, General (U. S.), commands cavalry at Gettysburg, ii., 32
- Poe, O. M., United States Engineers, at Rich Mountain, description of, i., 198, 199
- Political parties, disrupted, i., 13, 88; in slavery's interest, 121; ties of, hard to break, 121, 173
- Polk, James K., President, i., 65, 68; favors annexation of Texas, 65; offers Benton rank of Lieutenant-General, 68; prosecutes Mexican War, 68, 69; favors making acquired territory slave, 74
- Polk, Leonidas (Episcopal Bishop), General (C. S.), i., 246; at Shiloh, 247, 248; commands at Perryville, 302-306; killed, 137, note
- Pope, John, General (U. S.), captures Island No. 10, i., 261, 262; at Corinth, 261; mentioned, ii., 1
- Popular sovereignty for Territories, i., 90, 97
- Porter, David D., Commodore (U. S. N.), injured at Fort Henry, i., 237
- Porterfield, George A., Colonel (C. S.), occupies Grafton and Philippi, i., 188
- Potter, John F., of Wisconsin, defends Lovejoy, accepts challenge of Pryor to fight duel, i., 123
- Powell, William H., Colonel (U. S.), relieves Averell, ii., 124; at Front Royal, 130, 152
- Prentiss, B. M., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 247, 249
- Prentiss, C. K., Major, 6th Maryland, at Fisher's Hill, ii., 119; at Cedar Creek, 136; in Petersburg assault, 193-196; mortally wounded, with Confederate brother, care in same hospital, 196
- Presbyterian Church Synod, Old School (South Carolina), declares for Confederacy, for separation from Church North, i., 136
- Presidential elections (1856, 1860), i., 115-120; Republican platforms deny power to give existence to slavery in Territories, 116, 119; Democratic platform (1856) denies right to exclude slavery from Territories, Douglas wing (1860) adopts platform of 1856, Breckenridge wing (1860) holds Constitution legalized slavery in Territories, 117; Bell and Everett platform (1860) "Constitution and Union," 118
- Prestonburg, Ky., affair at, i., 234
- Price, Sterling, General (C. S.), at Wilson's Creek, i., 230; in Mississippi, 288
- Prince, Henry, General (U. S.), at Orange Grove, ii., 61-65; mentioned, 71, 72
- Proclamation, first, by President Lincoln for troops, i., 177; second, for troops, numbers called, 181; responses by States to, 181, 182; by McClellan to Western Virginia, quoted, 188
- Property, law as to, applicable to slaves, i., 73, 89
- Prophecy as to disunion and slavery, i., 75, 149-157
- Protest in Senate against making California a State before a Territory, i., 84, 85; not allowed on Journal, 84
- Protestant Episcopal Church in General Convention endorses Confederacy, i., 137
- Protocol with Spain, terms of, ii., 298
- Providence, R. I., negroes brought to and sold in, i., 12
- Pryor, Roger A., of Virginia, expletives of, denouncing Lovejoy, challenges Potter to fight duel, i., 123
- Public meetings over efforts to extend slavery, i., 94
- Puritans, land at Plymouth Rock (1620), i., 11; Cotton Mather, religious intolerance, 11, note; did not love slavery, 12
- Putnam, David, Colonel 152d Ohio, on Hunter's retreat, ii., 98

Q

- Quakers, in Shenandoah Valley, loyalty of, called Tories, Revolutionary story as to, i., 318
- Quincy, Josiah, of Boston, became Abolitionist on the killing of Lovejoy, i., 123

R

- Raiders, Andrews', names of, expedition of, to Georgia, capture a locomotive, capture, sufferings, and fate of, i., 266-271, 275
- Ramseur, Stephen D., General (C. S.), at Fisher's Hill, ii., 121; at Cedar Creek, 131-152; killed, 152
- Randall, Saml. J., Ex-Speaker, mentioned, ii., 269, 274, 278, 281; tribute to, 285
- Randolph, John, of Roanoke, opposes suspending Ordinance of 1787 as to slavery, i., 25, 48; declared Missouri Compromise "dirty bargain," its Northern supporters "doughfaces," 51; anecdote about Virginians, their *viva voce* voting, 124, 125; mentioned, 48
- Randolph, Wallace F., Lieutenant, 5th U. S. Artillery, at Winchester, ii., 10, 11; captured guns retaken, 55, note
- Raymond, Henry J., asks Lincoln to negotiate for peace, correspondence, ii., 172, 173, note
- Read, Thos., Colonel (U. S.), killed near High Bridge, ii., 216
- Ream's Station, Va., operations at, ii., 95
- Reamy, Thaddeus A., Surgeon 122d Ohio, mentioned, i., 311
- Rector, —, Governor of Arkansas, declines to furnish Union troops, quoted, i., 182
- Reed, Thos. B., of Maine, mentioned, ii., 267, 272, 275
- Reeder, Andrew H., of Pennsylvania, Governor of Kansas Territory, i., 95; indicted for treason, flight of, in disguise, 95
- Religious bodies, separation of, i., 13; cords broken, 79; action of Southern, 136-139
- Representation, inequality of, in Congress, i., 35
- Republic of United States, slavery planted in, i., 125; boasts of, 9; aspirations of, 36, 120; regarded an experiment, 120
- Republican convention (1860), history of, nominates Lincoln for President, i., 119
- Republican party before the war did not favor abolition of slavery, i., 123
- Republican platforms (1856 and 1860), on slavery, i., 116, 119
- Retreat of army, how conducted, ii., 50
- Revenue Service (U. S.), disloyalty (1861) of officers in, i., 163
- Reynolds, John F., General (U. S.), at Gettysburg, killed, ii., 28
- Reynolds, J. J., General (U. S.), commands Cheat Mountain region, i., 205; at Cheat Mountain and Elk Water, 206; attack on Greenbriar, 226
- Rhode Island provides (1774) for emancipation, i., 30, 31
- Rich Mountain, battle of, i., 192-201; casualties, 196, 201
- Richard Cœur de Lion doomed captives to slavery, i., 6, note
- Richmond, Va., Confederate capital, i., 175; siege and evacuation of, ii., 185-200
- Ricketts, Fanny, personal mention, heroism, ii., 106, note; joins wounded husband at Cedar Creek, 135, note
- Ricketts, James B., General (U. S.), Third Division, Sixth Corps, ii., 72; assault, Cold Harbor, 90, 91; in Monocacy, 99, 100; personal mention, 105; in Opequon, 108-116; at Fisher's Hill, 119-125; at Cedar Creek, 128-135, note; wounded, date of death, 135, note
- Ricksecker, Rufus, Lieutenant, 126th Ohio, killed, ii., 116
- Rifles, calibres of, calibre .44 regarded (1863) too small, change to .30, i., 183, note
- Riots, New York City, and elsewhere, ii., 36-44
- Roaring Creek, Virginia, camp at, i., 191
- Rodes, R. E., General (C. S.), killed, Opequon, ii., 117
- Rome, held slaves, slave-marts, i., 6; perished as a nation, 8
- Rorer, J. T., Captain, 138th Pennsylvania, at Cedar Creek, ii., 154
- Rose, Geo. L., Captain (U. S.), Reynolds' staff, mentioned, i., 224
- Rosecrans, Wm. S., General (U. S.), in Western Virginia, i., 191; submits plan of attack at Rich Mountain, ordered to carry out plan, 191, 192; at Rich Mountain, 193; in Western Virginia, 205; at Carnifex Ferry, 227; commands Army of Mississippi, 289; at Iuka, Corinth, and Hatchie, 290-293; relieves Buell, commands Army of Cumberland, 307, 308; at Stone's River, relieved, in Missouri,

Rosecrans, Wm. S.—*Continued*
 on waiting orders, character as a general, 308; in battle of Chickamauga, in Chattanooga, ii., 48
 Ross, Rev. Frederick A., on divinity of slavery, i., 5, note; arrest for praying for Confederacy, 272
 Ross, Marion A., Sergeant-Major, 2d Ohio, in Andrews' raid, captured, hung, with others, i., 268-270
 Rousseau, L. H., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 259; succeeds Mitchel, 283; at Perryville, 302-305
 Rosser, T. W., General (C. S.), in Shenandoah Valley, defeated at Tom's Brook, ii., 125-127; at Cedar Creek, 132-157
 Roster, staff officers, Spanish War, ii., 313
 Rowan, —, Captain (U. S.), mentioned, i., 314
 Rowlett's Station, Ky., affair at, i., 233
 Rulison, W. H., 9th New York Cavalry, Medical Director of Cavalry, incident of death, ii., 108
 Russell, David A., General (U. S.), captures at Rappahannock Station, ii., 55, note; in Opequon, 108-112; killed, 112; mentioned, 72
 Russia, recognized slavery and slave trade, i., 6; Czars free her slaves, 8
 Rust, Albert, Colonel (C. S.), attack on Cheat Mountain, i., 217; retreat, 219, 221

S

Sailor's Creek, Va., battle of, ii., 201-216; Confederate generals captured, 209; last general battle of war, 212-214; killed at, 212, 215; captures exceed any battle of the war, 214; numbers engaged, 211, 304
 St. Clair, Arthur, Governor of Northwest Territory, on Ordinance of 1787 as to slavery, i., 26; President of Congress, 26
 St. John, James, Lieutenant, 3d Ohio, killed, Perryville, i., 305
 Saladin, Sultan, doomed captives to slavery, i., 6, note
 Sampson, Wm. T., Admiral (U. S. N.), at Santiago, Cuba, ii., 297
 Sanders, Geo. N., Confederate agent in Canada, ii., 165
 Sanitary Commission, work of, ii., 86
 Santa Anna, President of Mexico, in

Texas (1836), i., 63, 64; in Mexican War, 68
 Savage, —, Colonel (C. S.), mentioned, i., 220, 225
 Savannah, Tenn., camp at, i., 249
 Scammon, E. P., Colonel 23d Ohio, mentioned, i., 207, 208
 Schenck, Robert C., General (U. S.), quoted on Col. De Courcey (Lord Kinsale), i., 281, note; commands Middle Department, character, 322; modifies order for evacuation of Winchester, ii., 5; telegrams from Halleck and Lincoln, 6; Milroy court of inquiry, 20
 Schleigh, N., General (U. S.), at Buchannon, i., 191
 Schley, W. S., Admiral (U. S. N.), at Santiago, Cuba, ii., 297
 Schoonmaker, James N., Colonel (U. S.), in Opequon, ii., 115
 Scott, J. S., Colonel (C. S.), attack on Athens, i., 277; at Munfordville, 294
 Scott, Winfield, General (U. S.), at Charleston, i., 54; defeated for President (1852), 68, note, 87; sends reinforcements to Sumter, 158; report of disloyalty, 163
 Scott, W. C., Colonel (C. S.) 44th Virginia, at Beverly, at Rich Mountain, Va., i., 195, 196
 Secession (1860-1861), at hand, i., 120; history of, 125-136; made easy, 124, 172; was due, 120, 124, 125; alleged ground of, 128; first ordinance of, at Charleston, S. C., quoted, 128, 129; of seven States before Lincoln was President, 131; States armed, 131; Mississippi's declaration of causes for, 134; by eleven States, 136; overthrow of, cost of, 156, 231, 232
 Seddon, J. A., Secretary of War of Confederacy, endorsement Hill's report, quoted, ii., 53
 Sedgwick, John, General (U. S.), at Mine Run, ii., 61, 66, 67; commands Sixth Corps, 71; in Wilderness, 77-88; killed, Spotsylvania, 88
 Seminole Indians gave refuge to slaves, i., 45-47
 Seminole Wars grew out of slavery, i., 46, 47
 Semmes, John D., Captain (C. S.), capture at Sailor's Creek, ii., 210, 211
 Seward, Wm. H., offers Wilmot Proviso last time, i., 84; candidate for President, 119; irrepressible conflict,

- Seward, Wm. H. — *Continued*
 slavery and freedom, quoted, 151;
 Secretary of State, meets peace commissioners, ii., 177, 178
- Seward, Wm. H. (General), Colonel 9th New York, Heavy Artillery, at North Anna, ii., 90; wounded, Monocacy, 100
- Seymour, Horatio, Governor of New York, opposes draft, ii., 36; efforts to suppress riots, 42
- Seymour, Truman, General (U. S.), captured, Wilderness, ii., 79, 82, 83
- Seys, Henry H., Surgeon, at Nashville, i., 245
- Seys, Rev. John, in Liberia, Africa, mentioned, i., 40
- Shafter, Wm. R., Major-General, at Santiago, Cuba, ii., 297
- Shaler, Alex., General (U. S.), in Wilderness, capture, ii., 82, 83
- Shannon, Wilson, Governor of Kansas Territory, i., 95
- Shaw, Wm. L., Captain, 110th Ohio, staff duty, ii., 8, 301
- Shelbyville, Tenn., loyalty at, i., 266
- Shenandoah Valley, Va., emancipation of slaves in, i., 318-320; devastation of, 1864, ii., 125, 126; bloody battleground, 157
- Sheridan, Philip H., General (U. S.), at Perryville, i., 304, 305; commands cavalry, Army of Potomac, ii., 72; in Wilderness campaign, raid to Richmond, 87-91; at Yellow Tavern, 88; Cold Harbor, 90; Trevilian Station, 92; commands Middle Department, 102, 103; interview with, and personal description of, 104, 105; dates of birth and death, 104, note; at Opequon, 107-117; organization of army of, 108; interview with Grant, plan for battle, 109, 110; Brigadier-General, United States Army, 117; thanks from Lincoln and Stanton, 117; at Fisher's Hill, 118-124; in Upper Shenandoah Valley, orders its destruction, 124-127; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; visits Washington, 128, 129; ride to Cedar Creek, 138-140; time of arrival, 139, note; on position of troops at Cedar Creek, quoted, 139, note, 141; return to Petersburg, 189; asks for Sixth Corps, 189; at Dinwiddie and Five Forks, 189-191; relieves Warren, 190, 191; pursuit of Lee's army, 201-216; incident of scout capturing dispatches, 202; dispatch to Grant to press things, 204; incident with band, 206; report on Sailor's Creek, quoted, 211; at Appomattox Court-House, 216-224; at Lee's capture, 223; mentioned, 306
- Sherman, John, of Ohio, on (1856) Kansas investigation committee, i., 94; endorsement of Helper's book, defeat for Speaker, 121
- Sherman, W. T., General (U. S.), commands Department of Cumberland, i., 231; informs Secretary of War 200,000 men needed, suspected of being crazy, relieved, 231, 232; before the war, 232, note; at Columbus, Ky., 246; at Shiloh, 247, 249, 251-255; quoted on Thomas, 300; mentioned, ii., 71; plan for campaign (1864), 74, 76
- Sherman, Wm. T., Jr. (Catholic priest), incident in boyhood of, i., 232, note.
- Shiloh, battle of, i., 247-260; log church gives name to, 249, 252, 259; surprise at, 251, 252; organization of armies at, 247, 252, 253; stragglers at, 255, 257, 258; second day, 259; desperate character of, 261; fate of slavery depended upon, 252; casualties, 260
- Shirk, —. Lieutenant (U. S. N.), at Shiloh, i., 255
- Sickles, Daniel E., General (U. S.), wounded, Gettysburg, ii., 23, 29
- Sigel, Franz, General (U. S.), in Shenandoah Valley, ii., 75; defeat at New Market, 96; referred to, 98, 99, 102
- Sigsbee, Chas. D., Captain (U. S. N.), commands battleship *Maine* when blown up, ii., 287
- Sill, Joshua W., General (U. S.), under Mitchel, killed, Stone's River, i., 283; in Kentucky, 302, 303
- Sixth Corps, in battle of Wilderness, ii., 77-91; at Monocacy and Washington, 99-101; in Opequon, 109-117; at Fisher's Hill, 118-124; casualties in Wilderness campaign, 93; at Opequon, 117; at Fisher's Hill, 123; starts to Petersburg, recall of, incident with red fox, 127; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; return to Petersburg, 157; in front of Petersburg, 184; asked for by Sheridan, 189; at Petersburg, 191-197; formation for assault, 192, 193; pursuit of Lee's army, 201-216; at Sailor's Creek, 205-216; strikes decisive blows, 212; pursues Lee, 216, 219; losses, last

Sixth Corps — *Continued*

campaign, 229; march to Danville, 229; in Washington review, 230; numbers engaged at Sailor's Creek, 304

Sixth Massachusetts, *see* Massachusetts Regiment.

Slaughter, J. E., General (C. S.), negotiates peace with Wallace, ii., 181; at Palmetto Rancho, 214

Slaveholders, number and per cent. of, 1860, i., 14, 121; social standing of, 121

Slave mother, children of, slaves, i., 126

Slave nation, Confederacy only, i., 141, 155

Slavery, early and barbaric origin of, i., 1, 2; white, in England, and American colonies, 2; wrong *per se*, not sanctioned by Holy Writ, 5, 6; existed in Egypt, England, Greece, Rome, German nations, Russia, Turkey, Spain, Africa, 2, 6; Bible quoted, and commentators on, 3-5; Christian religion not efficacious against, 7; firmly planted in American Republic, 7; nations destroyed by, 8; nations abolish, 8; not sanctioned by age, exists by might, not right, 8; God's justice visited on nations maintaining, 8, 9; fostered alone in United States, 9; first trace of, in America (1502), 9, note; negro, introduced in English-American colonies (1619), 11; responsibility for, on no race, nation, or section, 13; dies out from social and natural causes North, flourished South, 13; statesmen sustained, 13; political parties disrupted over, 13; rent in twain certain churches, 13; population, white and slave, of slave States, 13; continuance in States where abolished, 14; abolished in District of Columbia, 14, note; not recognized in Articles of Confederation, 20; prohibited by Ordinance of 1787 northwest of Ohio River, 22; Constitution, clauses relating to, 33, 34; existed in all States (save Massachusetts) on adoption of Constitution, causes of growth, 36-38; no existence in Texas or Mexican territory, 62, 72, 73; efforts to extend to territory, 72-75; Calhoun's views on, in United States territory, 73, 74; aggressive and wrong, 88; California and Kansas free, effect on, 98; dom-

ination of, 109; Dred Scott case, effect on, 110; political issues on (1860), 119; brilliant advocates of, 120; leads to dissolution of the Union, 120-125; bucolic, 121; per cent. of whites interested in, 14, 121; culmination against, 124; deeply planted in America, 126; evil effects of, 126; corner-stone of Confederacy, 135; free labor inimical and tariff dangerous to, proposed concessions to, 139-142, 155; appeal to war, 145; prohibited in Territories, 147; prophecy as to, 149; ended by war, 155; abandonment of, Lincoln's condition of peace, ii., 164, 166, 174, 177, 200; cost of, 156, 231, 232

Slaves, held by nations, i., 1-9; first introduced in American colonies, 10; sold in Virginia (1619), 11; one fifth white population owned slaves (1860), 13; number emancipated by proclamation, by Thirteenth Amendment, 14, note; table giving number in each State, each census, 15; number imported from Africa to colonies, 17; fought for American independence, 18; prayed for success of English, 19; breeding of, 37; Nat Turner, insurrection of, 61, 62; held by force of law, like property, 73, 89; conduct in presence of army, 241, 264, 271; article of war against returning, 274; emancipation in Shenandoah Valley, 317-320; Lincoln's first emancipation (1862) proclamation, ii., 2; Confederacy proposes to enlist, 159, 175, note

Slave trade, Sir John Hawkins first Englishman in, i., 9; English monopoly of, 10, 12; not profitable in New England, but in South, 12; from Boston, first and last ships sailed in, 11, 40; responsibility for, on no race, nation, or section, 13; number of negroes carried to America, 10, 17; Constitution relating to, 35; each State might prohibit, 36; abolished by law in United States (1808), 39; piracy (1820), 39; abolished in Great Britain, 39; declaration against, by the powers, Vienna (1815), and at Congress of Paris, 40; English merchants in (1816), 40; New York, Boston, New Orleans, principal cities in, 41

Slemmer, A. J., Lieutenant (U. S.), holds Fort Pickens, i., 175

- Slidell, John, of Louisiana, favors acquisition of Cuba, i., 101; member of Central Cabal, 132; capture by Wilkes, 237, note
- Smith, Andrew J., Colonel (U. S.), on staff, wounded at Sailor's Creek, ii., 207
- Smith, B. F., Colonel 126th Ohio, at Orange Grove, ii., 63; in Wilderness, 82; mentioned, 71, 72
- Smith, Catharine (Stout), wife of Dr. Smith, ancestry and character of, ii., 244, 245
- Smith, C. F., General (U. S.), at Fort Donelson, i., 238, 239; relieves Grant, 249; fatal illness, Savannah, Tenn., 250
- Smith, E. Kirby, General (C. S.), orders Andrews' raiders hung, i., 270; invasion of Kentucky, 284-286; at Perryville, 302-306; unites with Bragg, 303, 306; retreat from Kentucky, 306; army surrendered, ii., 231
- Smith, Gerrit, referred to, i., 91, 92
- Smith, Dr. Peter (author's grandfather), history of, ii., 239, 240, notes, 241-244; publishes first medical book in the West, germ theory mentioned, 240, note; descendants mentioned, 243, 244, note
- Smith, W. F., General (U. S.), under Butler, ii., 75; at Cold Harbor, 90, 91; mentioned, 94, 95
- Smith, W. Sooy, Colonel (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 259
- Smithfield, Va., affair at, ii., 107, 108
- Snyder, J. W., Lieutenant-Colonel 9th New York Heavy Artillery, at Cedar Creek, incident about ammunition, ii., 140, 141
- Society of Friends in Pennsylvania, action of (1776), against slavery, quoted, i., 30
- Soulé, Pierre, of Louisiana, signs Ostend Manifesto, i., 102
- South Carolina, first steps (1860) in disunion, ground therefor, i., 127, 128; collections stayed in, 128; first Ordinance of Secession, quoted, 129; first to initiate Secession (1832), 130
- South, Cavalier inhabitants of, rural life, crops, plantations, castes, and classes in, foster slavery, i., 12, 13; sought to be placated, 88; threats of statesmen from, 98, 99, note, 100, 110, 122, 123; loyalty in, 173; military spirit, troops early assembled, 178; arms in, desire for knives, 184, note
- Southern journal (1854) on cherishing slavery, i., 152
- Southern people, habit of, to call themselves citizens of their State, i., 124; anecdote of Randolph as to, 124, 125; belief that disunion was accomplished, that Northern men would not fight, that slavery was ennobling, 164, 165
- Southern Press*, the, established in Washington (1850) to advocate disunion, i., 76
- Spain, renounced slavery, i., 8; protocol with, treaty (1898) of peace with, ii., 298
- Spanish War, ii., 286-299; causes of, 286-288; résumé of, 297-299; casualties in, 297, 298
- Speakership, its duties and difficulties, ii., 270-275, notes, 281-284
- Spotsylvania Court-House, battle of, ii., 87-89; "dead angle," 89; casualties, 92
- "Squirrel Hunters," in defence of Cincinnati, i., 287
- Stagg, Peter, Colonel (U. S.), at Sailor's Creek, ii., 207
- Stanley, David S., General (U. S.), at Corinth, i., 290, 291
- Stanley, T. R., Colonel (U. S.), at Athens, Ala., i., 277
- Stanton, Edwin M., Attorney-General (1860), i., 131; Secretary of War, approves Mitchell's treatment of slaves, 273; relations to Milroy, 312; telegram to Lincoln to avoid danger, ii., 199; exclamation at Lincoln's death, 200, note; business incident with, 230
- Stanton, F. P., of Virginia, Governor Kansas Territory, i., 95
- Star of the West*, merchant ship, fired on, Charleston Harbor, i., 158
- Starr, Calvin L., Lieutenant, 3d Ohio, killed, Perryville, i., 305
- State-rights advocated (Calhoun), i., 51, 55-57, 69
- States, admitted in pairs, slave and free, i., 48, note; eleven, secede, prepare for war, 128, 130, 131, 135, 136
- Statesmen, large number, Thirty-first Congress, i., 77
- Stephens, Alex. H., of Georgia, Vice-President Confederate States, i., 132; on Secession, slavery corner-stone of Confederacy, quoted, 134, 135; plan for

Stephens, Alex. H. — *Continued*
 peace negotiations, ii., 161, 162; peace commissioner, meets Lincoln and Seward, 176-179; abandons Confederate cause, 179; personal description, 179, note
 Stephenson's Depot, Virginia, battles at, ii., 13-19, 109-115
 Steuart, Geo. H., (General C. S.), captured, Spotsylvania, ii., 89
 Stevens, Henry H., Captain, 110th Ohio, treacherously killed, ii., 194, 300
 Story, Joseph, Chief-Justice, quoted on Articles of Confederation, i., 20
 Stout, Penelope (Van Princess), wife of Richard, remarkable history of, ii., 245
 Stout, Richard, first Stout in America, descendants, ii., 245
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher, author of *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, i., 122
 Stuart, J. E. B., General (C. S.), cavalry engagements at Aldie, etc., march to Gettysburg, ii., 26, 27; criticisms on, cavalry movement, 27; at Gettysburg, 32; in Wilderness campaign, 87, 88; killed at Yellow Tavern, 88
 Stucky, John S., Captain, 138th Pennsylvania, wounded, ii., 116
 Sullivan, J. C., Colonel 13th Indiana, mentioned, i., 207, 221
 Sullivan's Island evacuated by Anderson, i., 158
 Sumner, Charles, Senator (Mass.), signs Appeal of Independent Democrats, i., 92; philippic against slavery, 98; assault on, in Senate Chamber, by Brooks, 99
 Surgeons, duties on battlefield, in hospitals, ii., 85, 86, 118
 Sutter, John A., of California, discovers gold (1848), i., 71, 72
 Swift, Eben, Colonel 4th Illinois, Spanish War, ii., 292
 Sykes, George, General (U. S.), commands Fifth Corps, ii., 60; relieved, 71, 72

T

Table showing slaves in States, each census, i., 15
 Taney, Roger B., Chief-Justice United States, described, 103; holds negroes not included in Declaration of Independence, "no rights white man bound to respect," i., 18, 110
 Tariff, slavery endangered by, i., 52;

Confederate Constitution prohibited, quoted, 53, 133; effect on prosperity, 53
 Taylor, Alfred, Commander United States Ship *Saratoga*, captures (1861) *Nightingale* of Boston, last slave, i., 40
 Taylor, Dick, General (C. S.), date of surrender of, ii., 231
 Taylor, Walter H., Colonel (C. S.), on Lee's staff, mentioned, i., 214, 220; in Wilderness, ii., 87
 Taylor, Zachary, President, (1849-50), death of, i., 68, note; opposes extension of slavery, 74; purity of character, 74; remark at Buena Vista, 75; message against disunion, quoted, 80; opposed Compromise of 1850, 83; called Clay's plan Omnibus Bill, 83; favored Wilmot Proviso, 83; rejected Stephens-Toombs demand for slavery, 83; last words, death while President, 83; soldier and patriot, 83; at Palo Alto, ii., 213
 Tennessee, how became slave State, i., 29; secedes (1861), 135; refuses Union troops, 182
 Tenth Ohio, *see* Ohio.
 Terrill, Wm. R., General (U. S.), killed at Perryville, i., 304
 Territorial laws amended by Congress, i., 109
 Territories, law as to slaves in, 73, 89; slavery prohibited in (1862) by law, i., 147, 148; principles of Ordinance of 1787 applied to, 148; law relating to, quoted, 148
 Terry, B. F., Colonel (C. S.) Texas Rangers, killed, Green River, Ky., i., 233
 Terry, David S., of California, incidents in life of, killed, i., 233, note
 Texas, admission into Union (1845), i., 62-66; became Republic (1836), 64; no slavery in, under Mexican law, 62; Americans carried slaves into, 62, 63; Houston President of Republic of (1836), 64; admitted as slave State (1845), to be divided into five States, 65; Constitution (1876) free, 65, note; part of, north of 36° 30' (none) to be free, 66; area of, 66; last slave State admitted, 65; secession of, 130
 Third Ohio, *see* Ohio.
 Thirteenth Amendment to Constitution, number of slaves freed by, i., 14, note; referred to, ii., 232, 255, 256; date of ratification, 256, note

- Thoburn, Joseph, Colonel (U. S.), at Cedar Creek, killed, ii., 130-132; mentioned, 113
- Thomas, Geo. H., General (U. S.), loyalty of, i., 163, 299; in Kentucky, Mill Springs, 233, 234; at Shiloh, 258; assigned to succeed Buell, second in command, 298, 299; character, service in army, contrasted with Grant and Sherman, Grant and Sherman's opinions of, quoted, 298-300; dates of birth, and death, 300; relieves Rosecrans, 308; mentioned, ii., 71
- Thomas, Lorenzo, Adjutant-General (U. S.), incident with Lieutenant De Laguel, i., 165; mentioned, 231
- Thompson, Jacob, of Mississippi, of Cabinet Cabal, i., 127; resigns as Secretary of the Interior, corresponds with secessionists, aid to Beauregard, in Canada, plots to burn New York, ii., 159, note; 165, 166
- Thompson, —, Lieutenant-Commander (U. S. N.), at Island No. 10, i., 262
- Thurmond brothers, of West Virginia, Confederates, mentioned, ii., 98
- Tilghman, Lloyd, General (C. S.), captured at Fort Henry, i., 237
- Tobacco culture, and effect on slavery, i., 37
- Tompkins, Charles H., Colonel (U. S.), Chief of Artillery, mentioned, ii., 136
- Tom's Brook, Virginia, cavalry battle, ii., 126, 127
- Toombs, Robert, Secretary of State of Confederacy, quoted against firing on Sumter, i., 174, 175; on acquisition of Cuba, 101; opposed homestead bill, 101; expectation to call roll of slaves at Bunker Hill, 110, note
- Topeka Constitution, free State government under, i., 95
- Torbert, A. T. A., General (U. S.), commands cavalry, ii., 103; in Opequon, 109-115; in Luray Valley, 120, 123, 124; at Tom's Brook, 126, 127; distinguished services, at Cedar Creek, 128-157; death, incident, 126, note
- Townsend, Charles, Lieutenant-Colonel 106th New York, court-martial of, killed at Cold Harbor, ii., 69, 70
- Transportation, amount of army, i., 184; ii., 75
- Treaty, Jay (1796), held to authorize slavery, i., 27, 28
- Treaty of Ghent (1815), stipulation to abolish slave trade, i., 41
- Treaty of Paris, 1783, recognized negroes as property, i., 17; 1898, with Spain, date, terms, ratifications of, ii., 298
- Trent*, British steamer, Mason and Slidell taken from, i., 237
- Trimble, Alex., Captain, 110th Ohio, mortally wounded, ii., 116, 300
- Trist, N. P., United States Commissioner, treats (1848) with Mexico, declarations of, as to gold and slavery, i., 72
- Truax, L. L., Colonel 10th Vermont, mentioned, ii., 99
- Tucker, John Randolph, Commodore (C. S.), commands Marine Brigade, surrender, with incidents, Sailor's Creek, ii., 208-211; release as prisoner, expatriation, 211, note
- Turchin, John B. (Russian), Colonel 19th Illinois, trial for sacking Athens, incidents, i., 277-281; dismissal, made Brigadier-General, 280; mentioned, 322
- Turner, Nat., insurrection (1831), Southampton County, Va., only one in United States, i., 61
- Turney, —, of Tennessee, proposition of, to make south line of California 36° 30', i., 84
- Twiggs, David E., General (C. S.), surrenders post in Texas, reception at New Orleans, dismissed from army by Buchanan, i., 162, note
- Tyler*, gunboat, at Shiloh, i., 255
- Tyler, E. B., General (U. S.), at Monocacy, ii., 99, 100
- Tyler, John, President, favored annexation of Texas, i., 65; President Peace Conference, 142
- Tyler, R. O., General (U. S.), at Spotsylvania, ii., 90

U

- Uncle Tom's Cabin*, effect of, on public sentiment, i., 122
- United States, alone fostered slavery, i., 9; condition of, end of 1864, ii., 158, 159
- Utah, a Territory (1850), to become slave or free State, i., 85

V

- Van Buren, Martin, President, opposed annexation of Texas, i., 64

- Vanderpoel, —, Lieutenant of Police, New York, maltreated in riots, ii., 39
- Van Dorn, Earl, General (C. S.), at Iuka and Corinth, i., 288, 291; defeat and retreat, 292, 293
- Van Eaton, J. B., Captain, 110th Ohio, wounded, ii., 116, 300
- Van Princess, Penelope, *see* Stout.
- Venable, Chas. S., Colonel (C. S.), Lee's staff, mentioned, ii., 214
- Vermont, Constitution (1790) prohibited slavery, i., 31; ratified Constitution United States, 32
- Vicksburg, Miss., surrender of, to Grant, ii., 38
- Virginia, ceded Kentucky (1790) territory, to become slave (1792), i., 29; secedes (1861) from Union, 135; (1861) declares citizens holding office under United States guilty of treason, 136; secession, date of, 169; refusal to furnish Union troops, 182; battleground, 186; western part of, little interest in slaves, 186
- Virginia Military Institute burned, ii., 97
- Volunteers, observations on, i., 179-181; how armed, 183, note, 184; transportation for, 184; ii., 75
- Von Treba, Lieutenant-Colonel 32d Indiana, affair with Texas Rangers, Rowlett's Station, i., 233
- Voting incidents, Oxford, Kan., i., 96, note; Ohio soldiers, ii., 49
- W
- Wade, Benj. F., Senator, on right to take slave "mammy" to a Territory, i., 93; agrees to resent insults and to challenge to fight, 100; opposes acquisition of Cuba, favors homesteads, 101
- Wadsworth, James S., General (U. S.), in Wilderness, killed, 79, 87
- Walke, Henry, Captain (U. S. N.), at Island No. 10, i., 261
- Walker, —, of Wisconsin, proposition to extend Constitution to Territories, i., 74
- Walker, James A., General (C. S.), at Stephenson's Depot, ii., 19
- Walker, J. G., General (C. S.), rejects Lew Wallace's peace proposition, ii., 183
- Walker, Robert J., of Mississippi, Governor Kansas Territory, i., 95; quoted against Lecompton Constitution, 95
- Wallace, Lew, General (U. S.), at Fort Donelson, i., 238; at Shiloh, 247, 259; strength of division, 249; in second day's battle, 258, 259; at Cincinnati, 287, 288; at Monocacy, ii., 99-101; negotiations for peace, 181-183; proposition quoted, 182; rejected, 183
- Wallace, W. H. L., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 247, 249, 253, 254
- Wapping Heights, Va., affair at, ii., 44
- War, appeal to, attributes and consequences, i., 145, 176, 177; cost of, 156; ii., 232
- War Claims, law as to, necessity of amendment to Constitution as to collection of, ii., 258-261
- War Orders, President's, i., 235-237
- Warren, G. K., General (U. S.), at Bristoe Station, ii., 51-53; quoted, 53; Second Corps, 60, 65-67; declines to assault at Mine Run, 66, 67; Fifth Corps, 71; in Wilderness, 79, 86-88; Bethesda Church, 90; at Five Forks, relieved on battle-field, characteristics, 190
- Warrington, John W., private soldier, 110th Ohio, wounded, mentioned, ii., 301, note
- Washburn, Francis, Colonel (U. S.), killed near High Bridge, ii., 216
- Washington, D. C., attack on, by Early, ii., 101
- Washington, Geo., advocates emancipation of slaves, i., 17; favored suppression of slave trade, 17; on Articles of Confederation, 20; President Constitutional Convention (1787), 30; predicts slaves will be free, 150; imprisonment of Quakers, 318
- Washington, John A., aide to Lee, i., 214; death of, 223, 224; related to Geo. Washington, burial of, 224, 225, note
- Washington, Colonel Lewis, of Virginia, captured by John Brown, i., 112; quoted, on Brown's coolness, 112
- Water polluted by Confederates, i., 242, note, 296
- Weakley, T. J., Lieutenant, 110th Ohio, captured, ii., 19
- Webster, Daniel, opposes admission of Missouri with slavery, i., 48; reply to Hayne (1830), 52; quoted on the

- Webster, Daniel — *Continued*
 Constitution, 54, 55; opposes Calhoun's views, 58; opposed Mexican War, 67; opposes doctrine of extension of Constitution to Territories, 74; supports Clay's compromise measures, 83; Secretary of State, 84; death (1852), 86
- Webster, Jos. D., Colonel (U. S.), Grant's staff, at Shiloh, i., 254
- Weiler, John J., Sergeant (Indiana), commanded squad that shot John A. Washington, i., 223, 224
- Weitzel, Godfrey, General (U. S.), in front of Richmond, ii., 197; prevents burning of Richmond, 199
- Wesley, Rev. John, denunciation of slavery by, i., 17
- Western Virginia, roads through, i., 189; McClellan's proclamation, 188; movement to make a State, 205, 227, note, 228
- West Virginia, a State in the Union, i., 205, 227, note; with slavery, 228
- Weyler, Spanish Governor-General, reconcentrado policy of, ii., 286, 295
- Wharton, Gabriel C., General (C. S.), at Cedar Creek, ii., 131-152
- Wheaton, Frank, General (U. S.), in Gettysburg, ii., 30; in "dead angle," Spotsylvania, 89; at Cedar Creek, 133-157; in Petersburg assault, 192-195
- Wheaton, Loyd, Brigadier-General, Spanish War, mentioned, ii., 289, 292
- Wheeler, Joseph, General (C. S.), commands cavalry, i., 293
- Wheeling, Va., movement at, to make new State, i., 205
- Whig party, platform (1852) endorsed Congress on slavery in Territories, i., 87; ceases (1852) to exist, 88
- White, Chas. R., Judge, mentioned, i., 213, note
- White, Wm., Judge, visits camp Elk Water, Va., sketch of, i., 212, 213, note
- White, —, scout (U. S.), captures Lee's dispatches, how used, ii., 202, 220
- White race, in South, eight tenths of, not interested in slavery, no social or political standing, i., 14, 120, 121
- Whitney, Eli, invents cotton-gin (1793), which promotes slavery, i., 37
- Wickham, Wm. C., General (C. S.), in Luray Valley, ii., 123
- Wilcox, Cadmus M., General (C. S.), in Pickett's charge, ii., 30
- Wilder, J. T., Colonel (U. S.), in Munfordville, surrenders, i., 294, 295
- Wilderness, battle and campaign of, ii., 77-93; casualties, 92, note
- Wiley, R. W., Lieutenant, 110th Ohio, A. D. C., wounded, ii., 116; captured, 136
- Wilkes, Chas., Captain (U. S. N.), seizure of Mason and Slidell by, i., 237, note
- William and Mary College students at Rich Mountain, i., 200
- Williams, Philip, of Winchester, Va., prophecy of, as to Secession, i., 317; mentioned, 324
- Willich, August, Lieutenant-Colonel 9th Ohio, mentioned, i., 207
- Wilmot, David, offers Proviso in Congress, i., 68, 69
- Wilmot Proviso, offered, never became a law, 69; last appearance of, 84, 143, note
- Wilson, Henry, of Massachusetts, refuses challenge to fight Brooks, i., 100; reports law emancipating slaves in District of Columbia, 147
- Wilson, James H., General (U. S.), in Wilderness, ii., 88; in Opequon, 109-115; in Luray Valley, 120; mentioned, 95; Major-General, Spanish War, 288, 295
- Wilson, W. T., Colonel 123d Ohio, at Union Mills, ii., 8, 9
- Winchester, Va., slaves emancipated at, i., 317; battles at, ii., 6-21; last Confederate army in, 115
- Winthrop, Robert C., Senator, i., 84
- Wirt, Wm., Attorney General, referred to, i., 92
- Wisconsin, slavery excluded by Ordinance of 1787, by Constitution (1848), i., 28
- Wise, Henry A., General (C. S.), mentioned, i., 190; on Kanawha, 205, 210, 226
- Wood, Elmer E., Colonel 2d Louisiana, in Spanish War, ii., 292
- Wood, Fernando, Mayor New York City, declares Union dissolved, favors making New York a *free city*, quoted, ii., 37, 38; correspondence with Lincoln on peace negotiations, 160
- Wood, Thos. J., General (U. S.), at Shiloh, i., 258, 259
- Wool, John E., General (U. S.), in New York draft riots, ii., 39

Wounded, how treated in battle and field hospitals, ii., 85, 86, 118; proportion of killed to, 92, note; effect of being, as to bravery, 115; at Cedar Creek, 153; at Sailor's Creek, 212, 215

Wright, Crafts J., of Ohio, Secretary Peace Conference, i., 142

Wright, Horatio G., General (U. S.), Department of Ohio, i., 286; in Wilderness, ii., 80-89; personal mention, 105, 106; in Opequon, 108-116; at Fisher's Hill, 118-124; at Cedar Creek, 128-157; wounded and conduct, 135; quoted, 140, note; Sixth Corps, 89, 186; at Petersburg, 188-198; quoted on capture of intrenched line, 191, note; at Sailor's Creek, 205-216; incident with band, 206; commands infantry at Sailor's Creek, 206-211; correspondence relating to numbers engaged, 304; in pursuit of Lee, 216-220; incidents with Grant, with Ewell, 217, 218

Wright, Rebecca M., of Winchester, Va., sends information to Sheridan, ii., 109

Wyandotte Constitution, Kansas, excluding slavery, State admitted under (1861), i., 97

Y

"Yankee schoolmarm," John Brown's daughter teaches free negroes in Virginia, i., 153

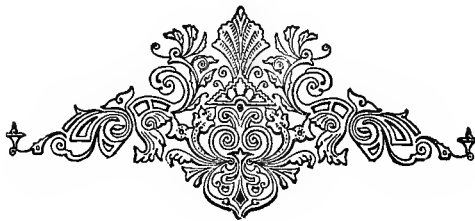
Yellow fever in Cuba, ii., 295

York, Z., General (C. S.), wounded at Opequon, ii., 117

Young Men's Christian Association, South, address of, declaring Secession right, i., 137

Z

Zollicoffer, F. K., General (C. S.), killed at Mill Springs, i., 235



WORKS ON THE CIVIL WAR.

THE STORY OF THE CIVIL WAR. A Concise Account of the

War in the United States of America between 1861 and 1865. By JOHN CODMAN ROPES, Member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, The Military Historical Society of Massachusetts, Fellow of the Royal Historical Society. Author of "The Army Under Pope," "The First Napoleon," "The Campaign of Waterloo," etc. To be complete in four parts, with comprehensive maps and battle plans. Each part will be complete in itself and will be sold separately.

Part I. Narrative of Events to the Opening of the Campaign of 1862. With 5 maps. 8vo \$1 50

Part II. The Campaigns of 1862. With 13 maps. 8vo 2 50

"Among all the accounts of the Civil War, the narrative of Dr. Ropes is unique in that it treats the subject impartially, and from the standpoint of both North and South. . . . As a clear, comprehensive, and complete survey of the first two years of the war his history will certainly rank with the best."—*New York Mail and Express*.

PERSONAL RECOLLECTIONS OF THE WAR OF THE

REBELLION. Addresses delivered before the Commandery of the Military Order of the Loyal Legion of the United States.

First Series, for 1888-91. Edited by JAMES GRANT WILSON and TITUS MUNSON COAN, M.D. With steel portrait of Admiral Farragut. 8vo net \$2 50

Second Series, for 1896. Edited by A. NOEL BLAKEMAN. With portraits. 8vo net \$2 50

"Some of the most interesting, and valuable historical data that has seen light since the war. Besides their present interest, these sketches will furnish the historical writer of the future with data that is beyond question, and, therefore, most valuable in conserving the truth about the history of the great war of 1861-65. As military descriptive writings they have never been excelled in American literature."—*Washington Army and Navy Register*.

ULYSSES S. GRANT, and the Period of National Preservation and Reconstruction. 1822-1885. By WILLIAM CONANT CHURCH,

late Lieut.-Colonel, U.S.A., author of "Life of John Ericsson."

No. 21 in the "Heroes of the Nations Series." Fully illustrated. Large 12mo, cloth, \$1 50; half leather, gilt top \$1 75

"It is a work of high value for its completeness, for its review of the period of national preservation and reconstruction, and for its admirable handling of the great mass of momentous events with which the career of General Grant was associated."—*Rochester Democrat and Chronicle*.

ROBERT E. LEE, and the Southern Confederacy. 1807-1870.

By Prof. HENRY ALEXANDER WHITE, of Washington and Lee University.

No. 22 in the "Heroes of the Nations Series." Fully illustrated. Large 12mo, cloth, \$1 50; half leather, gilt top \$1 75

" . . . He tells the story of the General's life in admirable style. He is intensely earnest, and is interesting from first to last. He has labored long and faithfully to gather all possible information and makes judicious use of the materials accumulated. When the reader ends the volume it is with the wish that it had been much longer."—*New York Mail and Express*.

G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS

NEW YORK

AND

LONDON

WORKS ON THE CIVIL WAR

THE HISTORY OF THE FIFTH ARMY CORPS, 1861-1865.

By WILLIAM H. POWELL, Lieutenant-Colonel 11th Infantry, U. S. A. Comprising a full and complete account of the movements and operations of the Corps from the organization of the first division to the close of the war, together with a description of the battles in which it was engaged. With 38 maps and plans, and 9 portraits. Large 8°, \$7 50
Half russia 10 00

THE HISTORY OF THE NINETEENTH ARMY CORPS.

By RICHARD B. IRWIN, formerly Lieutenant-Colonel of Volunteers and Assistant Adjutant-General of the Corps and of the Department of the Gulf. With portraits and maps, 8vo, . . . \$4 50

"The maps and plans with which the book is illustrated are excellent and serve to render the complex details of military manoeuvres intelligible. The appendix supplements the volume with rosters, lists of losses in battle, and the official register of the 'Forlorn Hope' at Port Hudson. Nothing is lacking to make this volume a permanent and authoritative record of the military achievements of the Nineteenth Army Corps. As such it is a valuable addition to the History of the American civil conflict."—*N. Y. Tribune*.

THE STORY OF A CAVALRY REGIMENT. By WILLIAM

FORSE SCOTT, late Adjutant. The Career of the Fourth Iowa Veteran Volunteers. From Kansas to Georgia, 1861-65. With maps and battle plans, gilt top, 8vo, . . . \$3 50

"The author has given an account not only of the operations of the regiment itself, but also a general and brief account of each campaign and action in which it was engaged, and of the movements of the associated corps, so that the reader may see, not merely what the regiment did, but how and why it was done. Many interesting details are found in this volume which add greatly to its value, and which are not usually found in such histories."—*Richmond Times*.

AMERICAN WAR BALLADS. Edited by GEORGE CARY EGGLESTON.

Comprising a selection of the most noteworthy ballad poetry produced during the Colonial Period, the Indian Wars, the Revolution, the War of 1812-14, the Mexican War, and the Civil War. The latter division includes the productions of poets on both sides of Mason and Dixon's line. Very fully illustrated from original designs.

Two vols. in one. 16mo \$1 50

"He has gone about it in a wisely comprehensive spirit, and in his book will be found most of the actual songs, whether good or bad, that were popular during the war, as well as the poems and ballads that best deserve preservation because of their literary character."—*Philadelphia Times*.

A REBEL'S RECOLLECTIONS. By GEORGE CARY EGGLESTON,

late of the Confederate Army. 16mo \$1 00

"The author deserves the thanks of all true Americans. . . . His sketches are models of characterization."—*Philadelphia Bulletin*.

RECOLLECTIONS OF A PRIVATE SOLDIER In the army of

the Potomac. By FRANK WILKESON. 16mo \$1 00

"Represents the views and feelings of the enlisted men very accurately, and on that account the book has unusual value. The personality of the author gives it a flavor which adds to its interest."—*Boston Evening Transcript*.

THE CIVIL WAR ON THE BORDER. By WILEY BRITTON,

formerly Regimental Commissary 6th Kansas Cavalry. A Narrative of Military Operations in Missouri, Kansas, Arkansas, and the Indian Territory. Vol. I. covering the operations of 1861-1862. With maps and battle plans, and portraits. Second edition, 8vo . . . \$3 00
Vol. II. covering the operations of 1863-65, 8vo.

G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS, NEW YORK AND LONDON.

